

An Almanacke for xxii. yeeres.

The yeere of our Lord.	The golden number.	Sund. Letters.	Leape yeere.	Alwedend- day the first day of Lent.	Each day
1603	7	C		February 17	April 4
1603	8	B		March. 9.	24
1604	9	A	G	February 22	8
1605	10	F		13	March. 31.
1606	11	E		March. 5.	April. 30.
1607	12	D		February. 18	5
1608	13	C	B	10	March. 27.
1609	14	A		March. 1.	April. 16.
1610	15	G		February. 21	8
1611	16	F		6	March. 24.
1612	17	E	D	25	April. 12.
1613	18	C		17	4
1614	19	B		March. 9.	24
1615	1	A		February. 22	9
1616	2	G	F	14	March. 31.
1617	3	E		March. 5.	April. 30.
1618	4	D		February. 18	5
1619	5	C		10	March. 28.
1620	6	B	A	March. 1.	April. 16.
1621	7	G		February. 14	1
1622	8	F		March. 5.	21
1623	9	E		February. 16.	13
1624	10	D	C	11	March. 28.

3/ Testam. Novum

THE ORDER OF THE

Bookes of the New Testament, with the
number of their Chapters.

T He Gospel written by Matthew.	Chapters 28
By Marke	16
By Luke	24
By Iohn	21
The Actes of the Apostles	28

THE EPISTLES.

P aul to the Romanes	16
The first to the Corinthians	16
The second to the Corinthians	13
To the Galatians	6
To the Ephesians	6
To the Philippians	4
To the Colossians	4
The first to the Thessalonians	5
The second to the Thessalonians	3
The first to Timothie	6
The second to Timothie	4
To Titus	3
To Philemon	one
The Epistle to the Hebrewes	13
The Epistle of Iames	5
The first Epistle of Peter	5
The second of Peter	3
The first Epistle of Iohn	5
The second of Iohn	one
The third of Iohn	one
The Epistle of Iude	one
The Reuelation	22



¶ March hath xxxj. dayes.

Morning prayer. Euening prayer.

		1. Lesson	2. Lesson	1. Lesson	2. Lesson
1	d	David.	Deut. 16.	Luke 12.	Deut. 17.
2	e	Abbe.	18	13	19
3	f		19	14	21
4	g		22	15	24
5	A		25	16	26
6	b		27	17	28
7	c	Perpetue.	29	18	30
8	d		31	19	32
9	e		33	20	34
10	f		Iosue. 1.	21	Iosue. 2.
11	g	Equinox	3	22	4
12	A	Gregorie.	5	23	6
13	b	Sol in Arie.	7	24	8
14	c		9	Iohn 1.	10
15	d		12	2	24
16	e	Aprilis.	Iudg. 1.	3	Iudg. 2.
17	f		3	4	4
18	g	Edward.	5	5	6
19	A		7	6	3
20	b		9	7	10
21	c	Benedict.	11	8	12
22	d		13	9	14
23	e		15	10	16
24	f	In reg. J. A. Valt.	17	11	18
25	g	Annun. of M.	Eccle. 2.	12	Eccle. 3.
26	A		Iudg. 19.	13	Iudg. 10.
27	b		11	14	Ruth. 1.
28	c		Ruth. 2.	15	3
29	d		4	16	1. Kin. 7.
30	e		1. Kin. 2.	17	3
31	f		4	18	5

u 3



¶ April hath xxx. dayes.

Morning prayer. Euening prayer.

		1. Lesson. 1. King. 6.	2. Lesson. Iohn. 19.	1. Lesson. 1. King. 7.	2. Lesson. Heb. 3.
1	B	8	20	9	4
2	a	10	21	11	5
3	b	12	AA. 1.	13	6
4	c	14	2	15	7
5	d	16	3	17	8
6	e	18	4	19	9
7	f	20	5	21	10
8	B	22	6	23	11
9	a	24	7	25	12
10	b	26	8	27	13
11	c	28	9	29	Iames. 1.
12	d	30	10	31	2
13	e	2. King. 1	11	1. King. 2.	3
14	f	3	12	4	4
15	B	5	13	6	5
16	a	7	14	8	1. Pet. 1.
17	b	9	15	10	2
18	c	11	16	12	3
19	d	13	17	14	4
20	e	15	18	16	5
21	f	17	19	18	1. Pet. 1.
22	B	19	20	20	2
23	a	21	21	22	3
24	b	23	22	Eccle. 5.	1. Iohn. 1
25	c	2. King. 23	23	1. kin. 24.	2
26	d	3 King. 1.	24	1. king. 2.	3
27	e	3	25	4	4
28	f	5	26	6	5
29	B	7	27	7	2. J. Iohn.
30	A				

¶ May hath xxxj. dayes.

Morning prayer. Euening prayer.

			1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	b	Phil. and Iacob.	Hecla. 7.	Actes. 8.	Eccle. 9.	Iude 1.
2	c		3. king. 9.	18	3. kin. 10.	Rom. 1.
3	d	Invention of	11	Matth. 1.	13	2
4	e	the crosse.	12	2	14	3
5	f		15	3	16	4
6	g	Iohn Port.	17	4	18	5
7	A		19	5	20	6
8	b		21	6	22	7
9	c		4. king. 1.	7	4. king. 2.	8
10	d		3	8	4	9
11	e	Sol in Gen.	5	9	6	10
12	f		7	10	8	11
13	g		9	11	10	12
14	A		11	12	12	13
15	b		13	13	14	14
16	c	Iunij.	15	14	16	15
17	d		17	15	18	16
18	e		19	16	20	17. Cor. 1.
19	f	Dunstons.	21	17	22	2
20	g		23	18	24	3
21	A		25	19	1. Efd. 1.	4
22	b		1. Efd. 3.	20	4	5
23	c		5	21	6	6
24	d		7	22	9	7
25	e		2. Efd 1.	23	2. Efd. 2.	8
26	f	Augustine.	4	24	5	9
27	g		6	25	8	10
28	A		9	26	10	11
29	b		13	27	Hebber. 1.	12
30	c		Heb 2.	28	3	13
31	d		4	Mark. 1.	5	14



¶ Iune hath xxx. dayes.

Morning prayer. Euening prayer.

		1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	e	Hest. 6.	Mark. 2.	Hester 7.	1. Cor. 15
2	f	8	3	9	16
3	g	Nichomede. Iob 1.	4	Iob 2.	2. Cor. 1.
4	A	3	5	4	2
5	b	Boniface. 5	6	6	3
6	c	7	7	8	4
7	d	9	8	10	5
8	e	11	9	12	6
9	f	13	10	14	7
10	g	15	11	16	8
11	A	Barnab. Apo. Eccl. 10.	A&S. 14.	Eccl. 12.	A&S. 15.
12	b	Solm Can. Iob 17. 18	Mark. 12	Iob 19.	2. Cor. 9.
13	c	So. sti. citiuū. 20	13	21	10
14	d	Iuliu. 22	14	23	11
15	e	24. 25.	15	26. 27.	12
16	f	28	16	29	13
17	g	30	Luke 1.	31	Galat. 1.
18	A	32	2	33	2
19	b	Nat K. James. 34	3	35	3
20	c	Edward. 36	4	37	4
21	d	38	5	39	5
22	e	40	6	41	6
23	f	Falt 42	7	Prou. 1.	Ephe. 1.
24	g	John Bapt. Mat. 3.	Mat. 3.	Mat. 4.	Mat. 14.
25	A	Prou. 2.	Luke 8.	Prou. 5.	Ephe. 2.
26	b	4	9	5	3
27	c	5	10	7	4
28	d	Falt 8	11	9	5
29	e	S Pet. 4. 29	Eccl. 15.	Eccl. 19.	A&S. 2.
30	f	2. Tim. 1. 10	Luke 12.	Prou. 11.	Ephe. 6.



July hath xxxj. dayes.

Morning prayer. Evening prayer.

			1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	a	Visits. Marie.	Prou. 12	Luke 13.	Prou. 13.	Phil. 1.
2	A		14	14	15	2
3	b	Martin.	16	15	17	3
4	c		18	16	19	4
5	d		20	17	21	Colos. 1.
6	e	Dog dayes.	22	18	23	2
7	f		24	19	25	3
8	g		26	20	27	4
9	A		28	21	29	1. Thes. 1
10	b		31	22	Eccle. 1.	2
11	c		Eccle. 2.	23	3	3
12	d	Sol in Leo.	4	24	5	4
13	e		6	John 1.	7	5
14	f		8	2	9	2. Thes. 1
15	g	Swithune.	10	3	11	2
16	A	Aug: Ri.	12	4	Iere. 1.	3
17	b		Iere. 2.	5	3	1. Tim. 1
18	c		4	6	5	2. 3.
19	d		5	7	7	4
20	e	Margaret.	8	8	9	5
21	f		10	9	11	6
22	g	Mag: Ialen.	12	10	13	2. Tim. 1
23	A		14	11	15	3
24	b	Walt.	16	12	17	4
25	c	James. Apost.	Eccle. 21.	13	Eccle. 23.	5
26	d	Anne.	Iere. 18.	14	Iere. 19.	Titus 1.
27	e		20	15	21	2. 3.
28	f		22	16	23	Phile. 1.
29	g		24	17	25	Hebr. 1.
30	A		26	18	27	2
31	b		28	19	29	3

¶ August hath xxxj. dayes.

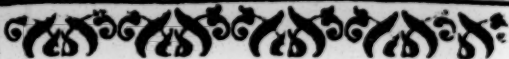
Morning prayer. Euening prayer.

			1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	c	Lammas.	iere. 30.	Iohn 10.	iere. 31.	Heb. 4.
2	d		32	21	33	5
3	e		34	Actes 1.	35	6
4	f		36	2	37	7
5	g		38	3	39	8
6	A	Transfigurat.	40	4	41	9
7	b	Name of .el.	42	5	43	10
8	c		44	6	45. 46.	11
9	d		47	7	48	12
10	e	Laurence.	49	8	50	13
11	f		51	9	52	James. 1.
12	g	Sol in Virgo.	Lamen. 1.	10	Lamen. 2.	2
13	A		3	11	4	3
14	b	Septembris.	5	12	Ezech. 1.	4
15	c		Ezech. 3.	13	6	5
16	d		7	14	12	1. Pet. 1.
17	e		14	15	18	2
18			33	16	34	3
19			Dan. 1.	17	Dan. 2.	4
20	A		3	18	4	5
21	b		5	19	6	2. Pet. 1.
22	c		7	20	8	2
23	d	Falt.	9	21	10	3
24	e	Barthol. . Apo.	Eccl. 5.	22	Eccl. 7. 9	1. Iohn. 1.
25	f		Dan. 11.	23	Dan. 12.	2
26	g		13	24	14	3
27	A		Ofec. 1.	25	Ofec. 2. 3.	4
28	b	Augustine.	4	26	5. 6.	5
29	c	Behea of Ioh.	7	27	8	2. 3. Ioh.
30	d		9	28	10	Iude.
31	e		11	Matth. 1.	12	Rom. 1.

¶ September hath xxx. dayes.

Morning prayer. Evening prayer

			1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	f	Gyles.	Osee. 13.	Matth. 2.	Ose. 14.	Rom. 3.
2	g		Ioel 1.	3	Ioel 2.	3
3	A		3	4	Amos. 1.	4
4	b		Amos. 2.	5	3	5
5	c	Dog daie end.	4	6	5	6
6	d		6	7	7	7
7	e	Ensus bith.	8	8	9	8
8	f	Nati of Mary.	Abdi. 1.	9	Ionas. 1.	9
9	g		Ionas. 2. 3.	10	4	10
10	A		Mich. 1.	11	Mich. 2.	11
11	b		3	12	4	12
12	c	Solin Libra.	5	13	6	13
13	d		7	14	Naum. 1.	14
14	e	Holy crosse.	Naum. 2.	15	3	15
15	f	Equinox.	Abac. 1.	16	Abac. 2.	16
16	g	Autumnale.	3	17	Soph. 1.	1. Cor. 1.
17	A	Lambert.	Soph. 2.	18	3	2
18	b		Agge. 1.	19	Agge. 2.	3
19	c		Zacha. 1.	20	Zac. 2. 3.	4
20	d	Fast.	4. 5.	21	6	5
21	e	S. Matthew.	Ecel. 35.	22	Ecel. 38	6
22	f		Zach. 7.	23	Zach. 8.	7
23	g		9	24	10	8
24	A		11	25	12	9
25	b		13	26	14	10
26	c	Ciprian.	Mala. 1.	27	Mala. 2.	11
27	d		3	28	4	12
28	e		Tobi. 1.	Mark. 1.	Tobi. 2.	13
29	f	S. Michael.	Ecel. 39.	2	Ecel. 44	14
30	g	Hierome.	Tob. 3.	3	Tobi. 4.	15



¶ October hath xxxj. dayes.

Morning prayer. Evening prayer.

			1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	A	Remige.	Tobi. 5.	Mar. 4.	Tobi. 5.	1. Cor. 13.
2	b		7	5	8	2. Cor. 13.
3	c		9	6	10	3
4	d		11	7	12	3
5	e		13	8	14	4
6	f	Faith.	Judit. 1.	9	Judit. 1.	5
7	g		3	10	4	6
8	A		5	11	6	7
9	b	Dennis.	7	12	8	8
10	c		9	13	10	9
11	d		11	14	12	10
12	e	Sol in Scorp.	13	15	14	11
13	f	Edwarde.	15	16	16	12
14	g		Wisd. 1.	Luk. di. 1.	Wisd. 2.	13
15	A		3	di. 1.	4	Galat. 1
16	b	Nonembris	5	2	6	2
17	c	Etheld ede.	7	3	8	3
18	d	Luke Evang.	Eccle. 51.	4	Iob. 1.	4
19	e		Wisd. 9.	5	Wisd. 10.	5
20	f		11	6	12	6
21	g		13	7	14	Ephe. 1.
22	A		15	8	16	2
23	b		17	9	18	3
24	c		19	10	Eccle. 1.	4
25	d	Crispine.	Eccle. 2.	11	3	5
26	e		4	12	5	6
27	f	Faß.	6	13	7	Phil. 1.
28	g	Simon & Jude.	Iob. 24. 25	14	Iob. 42.	2
29	A		Eccle. 8.	15	Eccle. 9.	3
30	b		10	16	11	4
31	c	Faß.	12	17	13	Coloss. 1.

CHAP. XVI.

commeth of God. 18 The rocke. 19 The keyes. 21 Christ sheweth his death. 24 The forsaking of ones selfe, and the crosse, 25 To lose the life.

THen * came the Pharises and Sadduces, and did tempt him, desiring him to shew them a signe from heauen. Chap. 13. 38 Marke

2 But he answered, and said vnto them, When it is evening, ye say, Faire weather: for the skie is red, 8. 12.

3 * And in the morning, ye say, To day shall be a tempest: for the skie is red and lowering. O hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, and can ye not discern the signes of the times? Luk. 12. 54.

4 * The wicked generation and aduicious seeketh a signe, but there shall no signe be giuen it, but that signe of the Prophet * Ionas: to be left the dead, and departed. Chap. 13. 59. Iona. 1. 17

5 ¶ And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had * forgotten to take bread with them. Mat. 8. 14 Luke 12. 10.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heede and beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, It is because we haue brought no bread.

8 But Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, O yee of little faith, why reason ye thus among your selues, because yee haue brought no bread?

9 Doe you not yet perceiue, neither remember the five loaves, when there were * five thousand men, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? Chap. 14. 17 Ioh. 6. 9

10 Neither the seven loaves when there were * foure thousand men, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? Chap. 15. 34.

11 Why perceiue yee not that I said not vnto you concerning bread, that yee should beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces?

12 Then vnderstood they that he had not said that they should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises and Sadduces.

13 ¶ Now when Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, hee asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I, the Sonne of man, am? Mat. 8. 27 Luke 9. 18.

14 And they said, Some say, John Baptist: and some, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He said vnto them, But whome say ye that I am?

16 Then Simon Peter answered, and said, * Thou art that Christ the Sonne of the liuing God. Job. 6. 69.

17 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, Blessed art thou,

S. MATTHEWE.

Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

Joh. 1.43 18 And I say vnto thee, that thou art * Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not overcome it.

John 20 21. 19 And I * will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen, and whatsoever thou shalt bind vpon earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen.

20 Then hee charged his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Iesus that Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth Iesus began to shewe vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders, and of the high Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pittie thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee.

Chap. 10. 38. mar. 8. 34. luke 5. 23. and 14. 27. 23 Then he turned backe, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto me, because thou understandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

24 Iesus then said to his disciples, * If any man will follow me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vpon him his crosse, and follow me.

Chap. 10. 39. mar. 9. 35, 56. luke 9. 24. 25, 26. and 17. 33. 25 For * whosoever will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, shall find it.

26 * For what shall it profite a man though he should winne the whole world, if hee lose his owne soule? or what shall a man give for recompense of his soule?

John 12 25. 27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and * then shall hee giue to euery man according to his deeds.

Psa. 62. 12. roma 2. 6. Mar. 9. 1. luke 9. 27. 28 * Verely I say vnto you, there bee some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome.

CHAP. XVII

2 The transfiguration of Christ. 5 Christ taught to be heard. 11 Elias. 13 John Baptist. 17 The wheele of the Apostles. 20 The power of faith. 21 Prayer and fasting. 22 Christ foretelleth his passion. 24 He payeth tribute.

Mar. 9. 2. luke 9. 28. **A**ND * after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and James, and Iohn his brother, and brought them vp into an high mountaine apart,

3 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the

CHAP. XVII.

the Sonne, and his clothes were as white as the light.

3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and saide to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloude shadowed them: and behold, there came a voice out of the cloude, saying, * This is that my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare him.

Cap. 3. 17
2. pet. 1. 17

6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they saw no man, save Iesus onely.

9 ¶ And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Shew the vision to no man, vntill the Sonne of man rise againe from the dead.

10 * And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that * Elias must first come?

Mat. 9.
11, 12.

11 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Certainly Elias must first come, and restore all things.

Mat. 4. 5.
Luk. 11. 34

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come already, and they knewe him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoever they would: likewise also shall the Sonne of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples perceiued that hee spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certaine man, and fell downe at his feete.

Marke 9.
14. Luk.
9. 38.

15 And said, Master, haue pitie on my sonne: for he is lunatique, and is sore vexed: for oft times hee falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not heale him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said O generation faithlesse, and crooked, how long now shall I be with you? how long now shall I suffer you: bring him hither to me.

18 And Iesus rebuked the deuill: and he went out of him, and the child was healed at that houre.

19 Then came the disciples to Iesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Iesus sayde vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe:

S. MATTHEW.

Zuk. 17. 6. for * verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, *as much as is a graine* of mustard seede, ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Remouoe hence to yonder place, and it shall remouoe: and nothing shall be impossible vnto you.

21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

Chap. 20. 22 ¶ And they * being in Galile, Iesus saide vnto them, The sonne of man shall be deliuered into the hands of men,

37. mar 9 23 And they shall kill him, but the third day shall he rise againe:
31. luke 9 and they were very sorry.

44. and 24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernum, they that received polle money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your Master pay polle money?

7. 24. 25 He said, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Iesus preuented him saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom doe the Kings of the earth take tribute, or polle money? of their children, or of strangers

26 Peter sayd vnto him, Of strangers. Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Neuerthelesse, leaſt wee should offend them, goe to the sea, and cast in an angle, and take the first fish that cometh vp, and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and give it vnto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The greatest in the kingdom of God. 5 To receive a little child.
6 To give offence. 7 Offences. 9 The putting out of the eye. 10 The Angels. 12 The last supper. 15 The king of heauen.
17 Excommunication. 21 Wee must alwayes pardone him that repenteth. 23 The parable of the King that taketh an account of his seruants

Marke 9. **T**He * same time the disciples came vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heauen?

34 luke 2 And Iesus called a little child vnto him, and set him in the middes of them,

34. 1 cor. 3 And sayd, Verely I say vnto you, except yee be * conuerted,
34. 20. and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heauen.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himselfe as this little child, the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heauen

Mar. 9. 42 5 And whosoever shall receive one such little childe in my Name, receiveth me.

luke 17. 2 6 * But whosoever shall offend one of these little ones which beleeue

CHAP. XVIII.

believe in mee, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 Woe be vnto the worlde because of offences: for it must needs bee that offences shall come, but woe be to that man, by whom the offence cometh.

8 * Wherefore, if thine hand or thy foot cause thee to offend, cut them off and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt or maimed, then having two hands, or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. (Mat. 18. 29, 30. Mar. 9. 45.)

9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 Seeke that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their * Angels alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen. (Mat. 18. 34. 8.)

11 For * the Sonne of man is come to save that which was lost. Luke 19.

12 How thinke ye? * If a man haue an hundred sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leaue ninetie and nine, and goe into the mountaines and seeke that which is gone astray? 10
Luke 15. 4.

13 And if so be that he finde it, verely I say vnto you, he reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray:

14 So is it not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ * Moreover, if thy brother trespass against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if hee heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. Leuit. 19.
17 Luk. 17
3 iames

16 But if hee heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the * mouth of two or three witnesses euery word may be confirmed. 5. 19.
Deut. 19.
15 iohn. 8.

17 And if he refuse to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him bee vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane. 17 2. cor.
13 1. iob,
10 28.

18 Verely I say vnto you, * Whatsoeuer ye bind on earth, shall be bound in heauen: and * whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen. 1. Cor. 3. 4.
2. thes. 3.
14.

19 Again, verely I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shall desire, it shall be giuen them of my Father which is in heauen. iob. 20. 23

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the mids of them.

S. MATTHEW.

Luk. 17. 4

21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Master, how oft shall my brother sinne against mee, and I shall forgive him? * vnto seuen times?

22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not to thee, Vnto seuen times, but Vnto seentie times seuen times.

23 Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine king, which would take account of his seruants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him, which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 And because he had nothing to pay, his Lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and his children, and all that he had, and the debt to be paid.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, refraine thine anger toward me and I will pay thee all.

27 Then that seruants Lord had compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But when the seruant was departed he found one of his fellow seruants, which ought him an hundred pence, & he laid hands on him, and thratled him saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 Then his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all.

30 Yet he would not, but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 And when his other fellowe seruants sawe what was done, they were very sorry, and came and declared vnto their Lorde all that was done.

32 Then his Lord called him vnto him, and said to him, O euill seruant. I forgave thee all that debt, because thou prayedst me.

33 Oughtest thou also to haue had pitie on thy fellow seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So likewise shall mine heauenly Father doe vnto you, except yee forgive from your hearts, eche one to his brother their trespasses.

C H A P. XIX.

2 The sicke are healed. 3 and 7. A bill of diuorcement. 12 Euincles. 13 Children brought to Christ. 17 God quick good. The commandments must be kept. 21 A perfect man. 23 A reborn. 24 Salvation cometh of God. 27 To leave a father and a mother (bride).

And

CHAP. XIY.

ANd * it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Iudaea beyond Iordan

Mar. 10. 2

2 And great multitudes followed him, and hee healed them there.

3 ¶ Then came vnto him the Pharisees tempting him, and saying to him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon euery occasion ?

4 And hee answered, and said vnto them, Have yee not read * that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female,

Gen. 1. 27

5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, and they which were two shall be one flesh ?

Gen. 2. 24

1. cor. 6.

16. ephe 5. 31.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. Let not man therefore put asunder that, which God hath coupled together.

7 They said to him, Why did then * Moses command to give a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away ?

Deu. 24.

8 He said vnto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your heart, suffered you to put away your wives : but from the beginning it was not so.

9 I say therefore vnto you, * that whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for whoredome, and marry another, committeth adultery : and whosoever marieth her which is diuorced, doth commit adulterie.

Mat. 5. 32

Mar. 10. 11

Luke 16.

18. 1. cor.

10 Then said his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene man and wife, it is not good to marry.

7. 11.

11 But hee said vnto them, All men cannot receiue this thing, save they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuches, which were so borne of *their* mothers belly : and there be some eunuches, which be gelded by men : and there be some eunuches, which haue gelded themselues for the kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue *this*, let him receiue it.

13 ¶ Then were brought to him little children that he should put *his* hands on them and pray : and the disciples rebuked them.

Mar. 10.

13. Luke

14 But Iesus said, Suffer the little children, and forbid them not to come to me : for of such is the kingdome of heauen.

18. 15

chap. 12.

15 And when hee had put his handes on them, hee departed thence.

Mar. 10.

16 ¶ And behold, one came and said vnto him, Good master, what good thing shall I doe, that I may haue eternall life ?

17. Luke

18. 18.

S. MATTHEWE.

17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandments.

Exod. 20

13. deut.

5. 16. rom.

13. 9.

18 He said to him, Which? And Iesus said, * These Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not commit adultery: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnesse.

19 Honour thy father and mother: and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The young man saide vnto him, I haue obserued all these things from my youth: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt be perfecte, goe sell that thou hast, and giue it to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come and follow me,

22 And when the young man heard that saying, hee went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 Then Iesus said vnto his disciples, Verely I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camel to goe through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 And when his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 And Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them, With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

Mat. 10

28. luke

18. 28.

27 * Then answered Peter, and said to him, Behold, we haue forsaken all, and followed thee: what therefore shall we haue?

28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his Maiestie, ye which followed me in the regeneration, * shall sit also vpon twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel.

Luke 22

39.

29 And whosoever shall forsake houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, he shall receive an hundredfold more, and shall inherite euermlasting life.

Chap. 20.

16. marke

10. 31. luke.

13. 30.

30 * But many that are first shall be last, and the last shall be first.

C H A P. X X.

* Labourers hired into the vineyard. 15 The eastere, 17 Her foretelleth his passion. 20 The ten sayings. 22 The cuppe. 28 Christ is our maner. 30 Two landmen.

For the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine household, which went out at the dawning of the day, to hire labourers into his vineyard.

3 And

CHAP. XX.

2 And he agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, and sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw other standing idle in the market place,

4 And said vnto them, Goe yee also into my vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you: and they went their way.

5 Again, he went out about the sixth and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And he went about the eleventh houre, & found other standing idle, and said vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They said vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He said vnto them, Goe ye also into my vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receive.

8 And when euen was come, the master of the vineyard said vnto his steward, Call the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning at the last, till thou come to the first.

9 And they which were hired about the eleventh houre, came and receiued euery man a peny.

10 Now when the first came, they supposed that they should receiue more, but they like wise receiued euery man a peny.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the master of the house.

12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden and heate of the day.

13 And he answered one of them, saying, Friend, I doe thee no wrong: didst thou not agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that which is thine owne, and go thy way: I will giue vnto this last as much as to thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for mee to doe as I will with mine owne? Is thine eye enuill because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many are called, but few chosen.

17 And Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, and tooke the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them,

18 Behold, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death,

19 And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke, and to scourge, and to crucifie him, but the third day he shall rise againe.

20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedeus children with her sonnes, worshipping him, and desiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And

Chap. 19. 30

Mat. 22. 14

Mat. 22. 10.

31 Luke

13. 30.

Mat. 10.

32. Luke

18. 31.

John 18

52.

Mat. 10

55.

S. MATTHEWE

21 And he said vnto her, What wouldest thou? Shee saide to him, Grant that these my two sonnes may sit, the one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy kingdome.

22 And Iesus answered, and said, Yee know not what ye aske, Are ye able to drinke of the cuppe that I shall drinke of, and to be baptizd with the baptisme that I shall be baptizd with? They said vnto him, We are able.

23 And he said vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of my cup, and shalbe baptizd with the baptisme that I am baptizd with, but to sit at my right hand, and at my left hand, is not mine to giue: but it shall be giuen to them for whome it is prepared of my Father.

24 * And when the other ten heard this, they disdained at the two brethren.

25 Therefore Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Ye knowe that the Lords of the Gentiles haue dominion ouer them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie ouer them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoener will bee great among you, let him be your seruant.

27 And whosoener will be chiefe among you, let him be your seruant.

28 * Euen as the sonne of man came not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue his life for the ranfome of many.

29 * And as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude folloxed him.

30 And behold, two blinde men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

32 Then Iesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I should doe to you?

33 They said to him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 And Iesus moued with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediatly their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

C H A P. XXI.

1 Christ rideth on an asse into Hierusalem. 12 They casteth out the sellers. 13 The house of prayer. 19 The withered figtree. 25 Johns baptisme. 28 Who doe the will of God. 30 Pharisies. 31 Scribes. 33 Gods vineyard The tenues. 38 The sonne killed of the husbandmen. 42 The corner stone.

And

Mar. 10
41. Luke
22.35.

Phil. 2.7
Mark. 10
46 Luke
18.35.

CHAP. XXL

ANd * when they drew neere to Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Oliues, then sent Iesus two disciples,

Mat. 11. 7
Luk. 19. 29

2 Saying to them, Goe into the towne that is ouer against you, and anon ye shall find an asse bound, and a colt with her: loote them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, say ye, that the Lord hath neede of the. n. and straightway he will let them goe.

4 All this was done that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 * Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King commeth vnto thee, mecke, and sittin g vpon an asse, and a colke, the foale of an asse vnto the yoke.

Isa. 62. 11
Zech. 9. 9.
Ioh. 12. 15

6 So the disciples went, & did as Iesus had commanded them,

7 And brought the asse and the colte, and put on them their clothes, and set him thereon.

8 And a great multitude spread the r garments in the way, and other cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 Moreover, the people that went before, and they also that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, blessed be he that commeth in the Name of the Lorde, Hosanna thou shalt be in the highest heauens.

10 * And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this?

Mat. 4. 11.
Luk. 19. 45.
Ioh. 2. 13.

11 And the people saide, This is Iesus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile.

12 * And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them * that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the sears of them that sold doves,

Deut. 14.
25.
Isa. 56. 6.
Ier. 7. 11.
Mat. 11.
17. Luk. 19. 46.

13 And said to them, It is written, * My house shall be called the house of prayer, but * ye haue made it a denne of thieues.

14 Then the blind and the halt came to him in the Temple, and he hea'ed them.

15 But when the chiefe Priestes and Scribes sawe the maruelles that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they did daigne,

16 And said vnto him, Hearst thou what these say? And Iesus said vnto them, Yea, reall ye neuer, * By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast made perfect the prayse.

Psal. 8. 2

17 * So he left them, and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, and lodged there.

S. MATTHEW.

Mar. 11.
12.

18 And * In the morning as he returned into the citie, he was hungry,

19 And seeing a figge tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves onely, and said to it, Never fruit grow on thee henceforwards. And anon the figtree withered.

20 And when his disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soone is the figtree withered!

Chap. 17.
20.

21 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, and doubt not, yee shall not onely doe that, which I haue done to the figtree, but also if yee say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, and call thy selfe into the sea, it shall be done.

Chap. 7. 9.
Job. 15. 7.

22 * And whatsoever ye shall aske in prayer, if ye beleene, ye shall receive it.

1. Iob. 5.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests, and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as hee was teaching, and said, By what authoritie dost thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

14.

Mar. 11.

27, 28.

Luke 20.

1, 2.

24 Then Iesus answered and said vnto them, I also will aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tell me, I likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleue him?

Chap. 14.

5. Mar. 6.

20.

26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, * for all hold Iohn as a Prophet.

27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke ye? A certaine man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and saide, Sonne, goe and worke to day in my vineyard.

29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselie and went.

30 Then came he to the second, and said likewise. And he answered, and said, I will first yet he went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the Father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots goe before you into the kingdome of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousness, and

ye

CHAP. XXI.

ye beleueed him not: but the Publicans and the harlots beleueed him, and ye, though ye saw it, were not mouued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleuee him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable. There was a certaine householder, * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and made a winepresse therein, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. *Esai. 5. 1. Jer. 2. 21. Mat. 12. 1. Luke 20. 9.*

34 And when the time of the fruit drewe neere, he sent his seruants to the husbandmen to receiue the fruits thereof.

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again he sent other seruants, more then the first: and they did the like vnto them.

37 But last of all hee sent vnto them his owne Sonne, saying, They will reuerence my Sonne,

38 But when the husbandmen saw the Sonne, they said among themselves, * This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance. *Chap. 16.*

39 So they tooke him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him. *Mat. 27. 1. Joh. 11. 53.*

40 When therefore the Lord of the vineyard shall come, what will hee doe to those husbandmen?

41 They said vnto him, Hee will cruelly destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall deliuer him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Iesus said vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scriptures, * The stone which the builders refused, the same is made the head of the corner? This was the Lordes doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes. *Psal. 118. 22. Mat. 21. 42. 1. Cor. 12. 12.*

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and shall be giuen to a nation, which shall bring forth the fruites thereof. *9. 33.*

44 * And whosoever shall fall on this stone, he shall be broken: but on whom it shall fall, it will dash him in pieces. *Isa. 8. 14.*

45 And when the chiefe Priestes and Pharises had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 And they seeking to lay hands on him, feared the people, because they tooke him as a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII

1 The parable of the marriage. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 12 The wedding garment, &c. 16 Of the fig tree. 23 They question with Christ touching the resurrection. 32 God is off
sho

S. MATTHEW.

186 *Luc. 36* The greatest commandment. 37 *Is our God.*
39 *To love our neighbour* 42 *Jesus reasoneth with the Pha-*
rises touching the M. ss. 11.

Luk. 14.
16 reuel.
19.9.

Then * Iesus answered, and spake vnto them againe in parables,
saying,

1 The kingdome of heaven is like vnto a certaine King which married his sonne,

3 And sent forth his seruants, to call them that were bid to the wedding, but they would not come.

4 Again he sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bid in, Beholde, I haue prepared my dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are readie: come vnto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his marchandise.

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated them sharply, and slew them.

7 But when the King heard it, he was wroth, and sent forth his warriors, and destroyed those murderers and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then said he to his seruants, Truly the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore out into the hie waies, and as many as ye find, bid them to the marriage.

10 So those seruants went out into the hie wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: so the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 Then the King came in, to see the guests, and saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he said vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, and hast not on a wedding garment? And he was speechlesse.

13 Then said the King to the seruants Bind him hand and foot: take him away, and cast him into vtter darkenesse: * there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 * For many are called, but few chosen.

15 ¶ * Then went the Pharisees and tooke counsell how they might tangle him in talke.

16 And they sent vnto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God truly, neither carest for any man: for thou considerest not the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?

18 But

Chap. 8. 12
and 13. 42
and 23. 30
Chap. 20.
16
Mar. 12.
13. Luk
20. 20.

C H A P. XXII.

18 But Iesus perceived their wickednesse and said, Why tempte ye me, ye hypocrites ?

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought him a peny.

20 And hee said vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription ?

21 They said vnto him, Cæsars. Then said he vnto them, * Give therefore to Cæsar, the things which are Cæsars, and giue vnto God, those things which are Gods.

22 And when they heard it, they marvelled and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ The same day the Sadducees came to him (which say that there is no resurrection) and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marrie his wife by the right of alliance, and raise vp seed vnto his brother.

25 Now there were with vs seven brethren, and the first married a wife, and deceased: and having none issue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise also the second, and the third, vnto the seventh,

27 And last of all the woman, died also :

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven ? for all had her.

29 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Yee are deceived, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry wives, nor wives are bestowed in marriage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 And concerning the resurrection of the dead, haue yee not read what is spoken to you of God, saying,

32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob ? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing.

33 And when the multitude heard it, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ But when the Pharisees had heard, that hee had put the Sadducees to silence, they assembled together.

35 And one of them, which was an expounder of the Lawe, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great commandement in the Law ?

37 Iesus said to him, * Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, with all thy soule, and with all thy minde,

38 This is the first and the great commandement.

39 And the second is like vnto this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

40 On

Mat. 23

17. Luke

20. 25.

1. Tim. 2. 7

Mat. 23

18. Luke

20. 27.

Acts 23. 8

1. Tim. 2. 5

Ex. d. 3. 6

Mat. 12

27.

Mat. 12.

28.

Deut. 6. 5

Mat. 23

31. rom.

13. 9. gal.

3. 14.

1. Tim. 2. 8.

S. MATTHEWE.

40 On these two commandments hangeth the whole Lawe, and the Prophets.

Marke 12 41 ¶ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Iesus asked them,

35 Iuk e
10.41.

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose sonne is he? They said vnto him Dauids.

43 He said vnto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

Psa. 110. 1

44 *The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

45 If then David call him Lord, how is he his Sonne?

46 And none could answer him a word, neither durst any from that day forth aske him any more questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

2 How the Scribes teaching the people the Lawe of Moses, leaue themselves. 5 Their Phylacteries, and Girdles. 7 Greetings. 8 We are brethren. 9 The Father. 10 The servant. 13 To shut the kingdom of heauen. 14 To denounce widnes horses. 15 A Prouerbe. 16 To sweare by the Temple. 23 To tye the mint. To curse the outflowe of the cup. 27 Painted sepulchres. 33 Serpents, vipers. 37 The Henne.

Nabe. 8. 4

Then spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples.

2 Saying, *The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat.

3 All there ore whatsoever they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe: but after their workes doe not: for they lay, and do not.

Luke 11
46. after
15. 10.

4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselves will not moue them with one of their fingers.

Num. 15
38. dent.

5 All their workes they do to be seene of men: for they make their Phylacteries broad and make long the *fringes of their garments.

22. 12.

6 *And loue the chiefe place at feasts and to haue the chiefe seates in the assemblies,

Mar. 12
38.

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

Luke 11
43. and
20. 46.

8 *But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your doctour, so wit, Christ, and all ye are brethren.

Jam 3. 1

9 And *call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one, your Father which is in heauen.

Mal. 1. 6

10 Be not called doctours: for one is your doctour, euen Christ.

Luke 14
31. and

11 But he that is greatest among you, let him be your servant.

31. and

12 *For whosoever will exalt himselfe, shall be brought low:

18. 14.

and

C H A P. XXIII.

and whoſoener will humble himſelfe, ſhall be exalted,

13 ¶ Woe therefore be vnto you Scribes and Pharifeſe, hypocrites, becauſe yee ſhutte vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your ſelues goe not in, neither ſuffer yee them that would enter, to come in.

14 * Woe be vnto you, Scribes and Pharifeſe, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widowes houſes, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye ſhall receive the greater damnation.

15 Woe be vnto you, Scribes and Pharifeſe, hypocrites: for ye compaſſe ſea and land to make one of your profeſſion: and when he is made, yee make him two fold more the childe of hell, then you your ſelues.

16 Woe be vnto you blinde guides, which ſay, Whoſoever ſwareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whoſoever ſwareth by the gold of the Temple, he offendeth.

17 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that ſanctifieth the golde?

18 And whoſoever ſwareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whoſoever ſwareth by the offering that is vpon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the offering or the altar which ſanctifieth the offering?

20 Whoſoever therefore ſwareth by the altar, ſwareth by it, and by all thinges thereon,

21 * And, whoſoever ſwareth by the Temple, ſwareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein,

22 * And, he that ſwareth by heauen, ſwareth by the throne of God, and by him that ſitteth thereon.

23 ¶ Woe be to you, Scribes and Pharifeſe, hypocrites: for ye tithe mint, and anife, and cummin, and leaue the weightier matters of the Law, as iudgement, and mercie, and fidelty. Theſe ought ye to haue done, and not to haue leſt the other.

24 Ye blinde guides, which ſtraime out a gnat, and ſwallow a camell,

25 ¶ Woe be to you, * Scribes and Pharifeſe, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vnder ſide of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are full of bribery and exceſſe.

26 Thou blinde Pharife, cleaſe firſt the inſide of the cuppe, and platter, that the outſide of them may be cleane alſo,

27 Woe be to you, Scribes and Pharifeſe, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones and of all filthineſſe.

28 So are ye alſo: for outward yee appeare righteous vnto men,

Marke 12
40. Luke 20
47

1. King. 8
13. 2. 27
6. 2
Chap. 5. 34

Luke 11
42.

Luke 12
39

S. MATTHEW.

men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Woe be vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had bin in the daies of our fathers, we would not haue bin partners with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 So then ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them that murdered the Prophets.

32 Fulfill ye also the measure of your fathers.

33 O serpents, the generation of vipers, how should ye escape the damnation of hell!

34 Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets, & wise men, and Scribes, and of them ye shall kill & crucifie: and of them shall ye scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from citie to citie,

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood that was shed vpon the earth, * from the blood of Abel the righteous, vnto the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias, * whom ye slew betwene the Temple and the altar.

36 Verely I say vnto you, all these things shall come vpon this generation.

37 * Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent to thee, how often would I haue gathered my children together, as the Lennie gathereth her chickins vnder her wings, and ye would not!

38 Beholde, your habitation shall be left vnto you desolate.

39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not see me henceforth till that ye say, Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

C H A P. XXIIII.

2 The destruction of the Temple. 4 The signes of Christs coming. 12 Iniquitie. 23 False Christs. 29 The signes of the end of the world. 31 The Angels. 32 The figgetree. 37 The daies of Noe. 42 We must watch. 45 The seruants.

And * Iesus went out, & departed from the Temple, & his disciples came to him, to shew him the building of the Temple.

2 And Iesus sayd vnto them, See yee not all these things? Verely I say vnto you, * there shall not bee here left a stone vpon a stone, that shall not be cast downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olives his disciples came vnto him apart, saying, Tell vs when these things shall bee, and what signe shall be of thy coming, and of the end of the world.

4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Take heede that no man deceive you.

Gen. 4.8.
2. Chr. 24
22.

Luke 13.
34

Marke 13
2. Luke 21
5.6.
Luke 19.
44.

Isaie. 5.6.
29. 2. 18.

CHAP. XXIIII.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many.

6 And ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and realme against realme, and there shall be famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are but the beginning of sorrowes.

9 * Then shall they deliuer you vp to bee afflicted, and shall kill you, and yee shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many bee offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shall be increased, the loue of many shall be cold.

13 * But he that endureth to the ende, he shall be saved.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shall be preached through the whole world for a witnesse vnto all nations, and then shall the ende come.

15 * When yee * therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that readeth consider it)

16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house toppe, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house.

18 And he that is in the field, let not him returne back to fetch his clothes.

19 And woe shall be to them that are with child, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the * Sabbath day.

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to this time, nor shall be.

22 And except those dayes should bee shortned, there should no flesh bee saued: but for the elects sake those dayes shall bee shortned.

23 * Then if any shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there, beleeue it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders, so that if it were possible they should deceiue the very elect.

Chap. 10.

17. Luke

21. 12.

John 15.

20. and

16. 2.

2. Thes. 3.

13. 2. Tim.

2. 5.

Marke 13.

14. Luke

21. 30.

Dan. 9. 27.

Mat. 1. 12.

Marke 13.

21. Luke

17. 23.

S. MATTHEW.

25 Behold, I have tolde you before.

26 Wherefore if they shal say vnto you, Behold, he is in the desert, goe not forth: Beholde, he is in the secret places, beleene it not.

27 For as the lightning commeth out of the East, and is seene in- to the West, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

28 * For wherefoeuer a dead carkeis is, thither will the Eagles be gathered together.

29 * And immediatly after the tribulation of those dayes, shall the Sonne be darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the powers of heauen shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the kindreds of the earth mourne: * and they shall see the Sonne of man come in the clouds of heauen with power and great glorie.

31 * And he shal send his Angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, and from the one end of the hea:ens vnto the other.

32 Now learne the parable of the figge tree: when her bough is yet tender, and it putteth forth leaues, yee know that Summer is neere.

33 So likewise yee, when yee see all these things, know that the kingdome of God is neere, turne at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

35 * Heauen and earth. shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so likewise shal the comming of the Sonne of man be.

38 * For as in the dayes before the flood, they did eate and drinke, marrie, and giue in marriage, vnto the day that Noe entred into the Arke,

39 And knew nothing, till the flood came and tooke them all away: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

40 * Then two shalbe in the fields, the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe refused.

41 Two women shalbe grinding at the mill: the one shalbe re- ceined, and the other shalbe refused.

42 * Watch therefore: for ye know not what houre your ma- ster

Luke 17.

37.

Marke 13.

24 Luke

21. 25.

ezek. 32.

7. Joel 2.

31. and 3.

15.

Reu. 1. 7.

dan. 7. 13.

1. Cor. 15.

52. 1. thes.

4. 16.

Marke 13.

31.

Luke 17.

26 gene. 7.

5. 11. 1.

pet. 3. 20.

Luke 17.

36.

Mark. 13.

35.

C H A P. XXV.

her will come.

43 Of* this be sure, that if the good man of the house knew at what watch the thiefe would come, hee would surely watch, and not suffer his house to be digged thorow.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the houre that yee thinke not, will the Sonne of man come.

45 *Who then is a faithfull servant and wise, whom his master hath made ruler over his household, to give them meate in season?

46 Blessed is that servant, whom his master when he cometh shall finde so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, hee shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But if that euill servant shall say in his heart, My master doeth deferre his coming.

49 And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the drunken;

50 That seruants master will come in a day, when hee looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of,

51 And will cut him off, and pane him his portion with hypocrites, * there shall be weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

C H A P. XXV.

1 The virgins looking for the bridegome. 13 I will watch. 14 The saluatiōe is liued vnto the seruants. 24 The euill servant. 30 After what sort the last shall come. 36 Ie. 41 The cursed.

THen the kin-dome of heauen shall be likened vnto tenne virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meeete the bridegrome.

2 And fīue of them were wise, and fīue foolish.

3 The foolish tooke their lampes, but tooke none oyle with them.

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes.

5 Now while the bridegrome taried long, all slumbered & slept.

6 And at midniht there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegrome cometh: hee goe out to meeete him.

7 Then all those virgins awoke, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish said to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there will not be enough for vs, and you: but goe yee rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegrome came: and they that were ready, went in with him to the wedding, and the

Luke 12,
39. 1. the f.
5. 2. 7. 1. 15.

Luke 12.
42.

Chap. 13.
42. and
25-30.

S. MATTHEW.

gate was shut.

11 Afterwards came also the other virgins saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But he answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, I knowe you not.

Chap. 24.

43. Marke

13. 35.

Luke 19.

12, 13.

13 * Watch therefore: for yee know neither the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne of man will come.

14 * For the kinndome of heauen is as a man that going into a strange country, called his seruants, and deliuered to them his goods.

15 And vnto one he gaue five talents, and to another two, and to another one, to euery man after his owne abilitie, and straightway went from home.

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and occupied with them, and gained other five talents.

17 Likewise also, he that received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that received but one, went and digged in the earth and hid his masters money.

19 But after a long season, the master of those seruants came, and reckoned with them.

20 Then came he that had received five talents, and brought other five talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me five talents: behold, I haue gained with them other five talents.

21 Then his master said vnto him, It is well done good seruant and faithfull. Thou hast bene faithfull in little, I will make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

22 Also he that had received two talents came and said, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents more.

23 His Master said vnto him, It is well done good seruant, and faithfull, Thou hast bene faithfull in little, I will make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy Masters ioy.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came, and said, Master, I knew that thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou sowedst not, and gatherest where thou strowedst not.

25 I was therefore afraide, and went, and hid thy talent in the earth: behold, thou hast thine owne.

26 And his master answered, and said vnto him, Thou euill seruant, and slothfull, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I strowed not.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming should I haue received mine

OWDE

CHAP. XXV.

oyme with vantage.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

29 * For vnto every man that hath, it shalbe giuen, and he shall haue abund.nce, and from him that hath not, euen that hee hath shalbe taken away.

30 Cast therefore that vnprofitable seruant into vtter darknesse: there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ And when the Sonne of man commeth in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall hee sit vpon the throne of his glorie.

32 And before him shalbe gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepheard separateth the sheepe from the goates.

33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, and the goates on the leit.

34 Then shall the King say to them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father: take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meat: I thirsted, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in vnto you.

36 I was naked, and yee clothed me: I was * sicke, and yee visited me: I was in prison, and yee came vnto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw wee thee an hungred, and fed thee? or a thirst, and gaue thee drinke?

38 And when saw wee thee a stranger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the King shall answer, and say vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, inasmuch as yee haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, yee haue done it to me.

41 Then shall he say vnto them on the leit hand, * Depart from me yee cursed, into euillasting fire which is prepared for the deuill and his Angels.

42 For I was an hungred, and yee gaue me no meat: I thirsted, and yee gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke me not in vnto you: I was naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, & ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw wee thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

Chap. 13.
23 Marke
4. 25. Luke
8. 18. and
19. 26.
Chap. 8.
12. and
22. 13.

Esa. 58. 7.
Ezek. 18. 7.
Eccl. 7.
35.

Psal. 68.
Chap. 7. 32.
Luke 13. 37.

S. MATTHEW.

45 Then shall he answere them, and say. Verely I say vnto you, in as much as he did it not to one of the least of these, yet did it not to me.

Mat. 12. 2 46 *And these shal go into everlastling paine, and the righteous
John 5. 35 into life eternall.

CHAP. XXVI.

3 The consultation of the Priests against Christ. 6 His fete are axouted. 15 Iudas Iscariot. 26 the institution of the Supper. 34 and 69 Peters deniall. 38 Christ is beate. 47 He is betrayed with a kisse. 56 He is led to Caiaphas. 64 He confesseth himselfe to be Christ. 67 They spit at him.

Mar. 14. 1 **A**Nd *it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings,
Luke 22. 1 he sayd vnto his disciples,

2 Ye know that after two dayes is the Pascheouer, & the Sonne of man shall be deliuered to be crucified.

Job. 11. 47 3 *Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, & the Scribes, and the Elders of the people into the hall of the hie Priest, called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted together, that they might take Iesus by subtile, and kill him.

5 But they sayd, Not on the feast day, lest any vprore bee among the people.

Mar. 14. 3 6 ¶ *And when Iesus was in Bethania, in the house of Simon
John 11. 2 the leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very costly ointment, and powred it on his head, as he sat at the table.

8 And when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, What needed this waste?

9 For this ointment might haue been sold for much, and been giuen to the poore.

10 And Iesus knowing it sayd vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good worke vpon me

Deut. 15 11 *For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me shall ye
21. not haue alwayes

12 For in that she powred this ointment on my body, shee did it to bury me.

13 Verely I say vnto you, Wherefoeuer this Gospel shall bee preached throughout all the world, there shall also this that shee hath done, be spoken for a memoriall of her.

Marke 14 14 ¶ *Then one of the twelue called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto
20. the chiefe Priests,

15 And sayd, What wil ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you?

C H A P. XXVI.

you: and they appointed vnto him thirtie *pieces* of siluer.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

17 ¶ Now on the first *day* of the feast of vnleavened bread the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Pascheouer?

18 And he said, Goe yee into the citie to such a man, and say to him, The Master sayth, My time is at hand: I will keepe the Pascheouer at thine house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Iesus had giuen them charge, and made ready the Pascheouer.

20 * So when the euen was come, he sate downe wth the twelve.

21 And as they did eate, hee sayd, * Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorowfull, and began every one of them to say vnto him, Is it I, Master?

23 And hee answered and sayd, * Hee that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, he shall betray me.

24 Surely he Sonne of man goeth his way as it is written of him: but woe *bee* to that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man, if he had neuer been borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered, and said, Is it I, Master? He sayd vnto him, Thou hast said it.

26 ¶ And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it, & gaue it to the disciples, and sayd, Take, eate: this is my body.

27 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thanks, hee gaue it them, saying, Drinke ye all of it.

28 For this is my blood of the Newe Testament, that is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 I say vnto you, that I will not drinke henceforth of this fruit of the vine, vntill that day, when I shall drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdom.

30 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out into the mount of Olives.

31 ¶ Then Iesus said vnto them, All yee shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, I * wil smite the shepherd, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered.

32 But after I am risen againe, I will goe before you into Galilee.

33 But Peter answered, and said vnto him, Though that all men should be offended by thee, yet will I neuer be offended.

34 * Iesus sayd vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, that this night, before

Mark 14.
12. Luke
22.7

Luke 22
14
Mark 14
18, xxi
13.21
Psal. 41.9

1. Cor. 11
24.

Mark 14
27. 10th
16. 32. and
18.8.
Zech 13.7
Mat. 14.8
and 16.7
Ioh. 13. 38
Mat. 14. 30

S. MATTHEW E.

Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise.

Luke 22
39.

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with thee, I will in no case denie thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

36 ¶ Then went Iesus with them into a place which is called Gethsemane, and said vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go, and pray yonder.

37 And hee tooke vnto him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedeus, and began to waxe sorowfull and grievously troubled.

38 Then said Iesus vnto them. My soule is very heauie, *euery* vnto the death: tary ye here, and watch with me.

39 So hee went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 After, he came vnto the disciples, and found them asleepe, and said to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is ready, but the flesh is weake.

42 Again he went away the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cuppe cannot passe away from me, but that I must drinke it, thy will be done.

43 And hee came and found them asleepe againe, for their eyes were heauie.

44 So hee left them, and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then came he to his disciples and said to them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest: behold, the house is at hand, and the Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs goe: behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

Mat. 24
43. Luke
24-47
20m 18 3-

47 ¶ And while he yet spake, loe, Judas, one of the twelue, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the hie Priests and Elders of the people.

48 Now he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that is he, lay hold on him.

49 And forthwith hee came to Iesus, and said, God swee thee, Master and kissed him.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and layd hands on Iesus, and tooke him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hand and drew his sword, and strooke a seruant of the high Priest, and smote off his eare.

Gen. 9.6
1m. 13. 10

52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sword into his place:

* for all that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

CHAP. XXVI.

53 Either thinkest thou, that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he will give me more then twelve legions of Angels?

54 How then should the * Scriptures bee fulfilled, *which say,* *Jsa. 53. 10* that it must be so?

55 The same houre said Iesus to the multitude Ye haue come out as it were against a theefe, with swordes and staves to take me. I sate dayly teaching in the Temple among you, and yre tooke me not.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. * Then all the disciples forooke him, and fled. *Mathe 27.*

57 ¶ And they tooke Iesus, and led him to Cai. phas the hie Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were assembled. *Mat. 14.*

58 And Peter followed him a farre off, vnto the hie Priests hall, and went in, and sate with the 'seruants to see the ende. *53 Luke 22 54. 10th 18.*

59 Now * the chiefe Priests and the Elders, and all the whole counsell sought false witness against Iesus, to put him to death. *14. 14.*

60 But they found none, and though many false witnesses came, yet found they none: but at the last came two false witnesses, *55.*

61 And said, This man said, * I can destroy the Temple of God, and build it in three dayes. *Joh. 2. 19.*

62 Then the chiefe Priest arose, and said to him. Answerest thou nothing? What is the matter that these men witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. Then the chiefe Priest answered, and said to him, I charge thee sweare vnto vs by the liuing God, to tell vs, if thou be that Christ, the Sonne of God or no.

64 * Iesus said to him, Thou hast said it: neuertheless I say vnto you, Hereafter shall yee see the Sonne of man sitting at the right hand of the power of God, and come in the cloudes of the heauen. *Chap. 16. 27. Rom. 14. 10 1. 11. 4. 14.*

65 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, saying, We haue blasphemed, what haue we any more neede of witnesses. Behold, now yee haue heard his blasphemie.

66 What thinke yee? They answered and said, He is guiltie of death.

67 ¶ Then spet they in his face, and buffeted him, and other smote him with rods. *Jsa. 50. 6.*

68 Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, Who is hee that smote thee? *Mat. 14. 66. Luke*

69 ¶ Peter sate without in the hall: and a maide came to him, saying, Thou art a wast with Iesus of Galilee. *22 55. 10th 18.*

70 But hee denied before them all, saying, I wote not what thou

thou sayest.

71 And when hee went out into the porch, another *maide* saw him, and said vnto them that were there, This man was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe he denied with an oath, saying, I know not the man.

73 So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by, and said vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them: for euen thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began hee to curse *himselfe*, and to sweare, saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crew.

75 Then Peter remembered the words of Iesus, which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise, So he went out, and wept bitterly.

C H A P. XXVII.

1 Hee is deliuered lounde to Pilate. 3 Iudas hangeth himselfe. 19 Pilates wife. 26 Barabbas is a kea. 27 Pilate washeth his hands 29 Christ is crowned with thorne. 34 Hee is crucified, 36 rent. 50 He smiteth vpon the cheek. 57 He is buried. 62 The soldiers watch him.

WHEN * the morning was come, all the chiefe Priests, and the Elders of the people tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death,

2 And led him away bound, and deliuered him vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then when Iudas which betrayed him, saw that hee was condemned, hee repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirtie *pieces* of silver to the chiefe Priests and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned betraying the innocent blood. But they said, What is that to vs? see thou to it.

5 And when hee had cast downe the silver *pieces* in the Temple, he departed, and went, * and hanged himselfe.

6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the silver *pieces*, and said, It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the treasure, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them a potters field, for the buriall of strangers.

8 Wherefore that field is called, * The field of blood vntill this day.

9 ¶ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremias the Prophet, saying, * And they took thirtie silver *pieces*, the price of him that was valued, whom *they* of the children of Israel valued,

30 And

Mat. 15
1. Luke
21. 66.
Ioh. 18.
38.

Act. 1. 18

Act. 1. 19

Zech. 11.
32.

CHAP. XXVII

10 And they gave them for the potters felde, as the Lord appointed me.)

11 ¶ And Iesus stood before the governour, and the governour asked him, saying, Art thou that King of the Iewes? Iesus said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

Mar. 15.2
Luce 23.3.
Ioh. 18.33.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe Priests, and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then sayd Pilate vnto him, Hearcest thou not how many things they lay against thee?

14 But hee answered him not to one word, in so much that the governour marvelled greatly.

15 Now at the feast, the governour was wont to deliuer vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner called Barabbas.

17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate sayd vnto them Whether will yee that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus which is call'd Christ?

18 (For he knew well that for enuie they had deliuered him.)

19 Also when he was set downe vpon the iudgement seate, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame by reason of him.

20 ¶ But the chiefe Priests and the Elders had perswaded the people that they should aske Barabbas and should destroy Iesus.

Mar. 19.
11. luke

21 ¶ Then the governour answered, and said vnto them, Whether of the twaine will ye that I let loose vnto you? And they said, Barabbas.

25. 18.
Ioh. 18.

22 Pilate said to them, What shall I doe then with Iesus, which is called Christ? They all said to him, Let him be crucified.

47. act. 5. 14

23 Then said the governour, But what euill hath he done? Then they cried the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate saw that hee auailed nothing, but that more tumult was made, he tooke water and washed his hands before the multitude saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust man: looke you to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood bee on vs, and on our children.

26 Thus let hee Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliuered him to be crucified.

27 ¶ Then the souldiers of the governour tooke Iesus into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole band,

Mar. 15.
16. Ioh. 19. 2.

28 And they stripped him, and put about him a skarlet robe,

29 And

S. MATTHEW.

29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon his head, and a reede in his right hand, and bowed their knees before him, and mocked him, saying, God saue thee, King of the Iewes,

30 And he spitte vpon him, and tooke a reede, and smote him on the head.

31 Thus when they had mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and put his owne rayment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

Marke 15 32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they compelled to beare his crosse.

21. Luke 33 * And when they came vnto the place called Golgotha, *23. 26.* (that is to say, the place of *dread* mess skulls)

Marke 15 34 They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: and *23. 30. 31.* when he had tasted thereof, he would not drinke.

35 ¶ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments and did cast lots, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, * They diuided my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lots.

Psal. 22. 36 And they sate, and watched him there.

18. Mar. 37 ¶ They set vp also ouer his head his cause written, THIS *35. 24.* IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 ¶ And there were two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand and another on the left.

39 And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

3. Iohn 2. 19 40 And saying, * Thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: if thou bee the Sonne of God, come downe from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the hie Priests mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and Pharises said,

42 He saued others, but he cannot saue himselfe: if he bee the King of Israel, let him now come downe from the crosse, and wee will beleue in him.

Psal. 22. 9 43 * He trusted in God, let him deliuer him now, if he will haue him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God.

44 The selfe same thing also the thieves which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixth houre was there darknesse ouer all the land, vnto the ninth houre.

Psal. 22. 1 46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a lowde voyce, saying, * Eli, Eli lama sabachthani: That is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, said,

CHAP. XXVII.

saide, This man calleth Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and tooke a * spondge, *Psal. 69. 21.*
and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to
drinke.

49 Other said, Let be: let vs see, if Elias will come and saue him.

50 Then Iesus cryed againe with a loude voyce, and yeldded
vp the ghost.

51 And beholde, * the vaille of the Temple was rent in twaine, *2. Cōro. 3. 14.*
from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the
stones were clouen,

52 And the granes did open themselues, and many bodies of
the Saints, which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the granes after his resurrection, and went
into the holy Citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 When the Centurion, and they that were with him wat-
ching Iesus, sawe the earth quake, and the things that were done,
they leared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Sonne of God

55 ¶ And many women were there beholding him a faire off,
which had followed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him.

56 Among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother
of Iames, and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedeus tonnes.

57 ¶ And when the euen was come, there came a rich man of *Mat. 15. 42. Luk. 23. 50. 26. 19. 38.*
Armathea, named Ioseph, who had alio him selfe bin Iesus disciple.

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the bodie of Iesus. Then Pi-
late commanded the bodie to be deliuered.

59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane lin-
nen cloth,

60 And put it in his new tombe, which he had hewen out in a
rocke, and rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and
departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary sitting
ouer against the Sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the Preparation of the
Sablath, the hie Priests and Pharisees assent led to Pilate,

63 And said, Sir, wee remember that that deceiver sayd, while
he was yet aliue, Within three dayes I will rise.

64 Commaund therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure vntil
the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steale him away,
and say vnto the people, Hee is risen from the dead: so shall the
last error be worse then the first.

65 Then Pilate sayd vnto them, Yee haue a watch: goe, and
make it sure as ye know,

66 And

S. MATTHEW.

66 And they went and made the sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the stone.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 The women go to the sepulchre. 2 The Angel. 3 The women see Christ. 18 He sendeth his Apostles to preach.

Mat. 16 5
3. 6. 20. 11

NOW * in the ende of the Sabbath, when the first day of the weeke began to dawne, Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary came to see the sepulchre.

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sat vpon it.

3 And his countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers were astonied, and became as dead men.

5 But the Angel answered, and sayd to the women, Feare yee not: for I know that ye seeke Iesus which was crucified:

6 He is not here, for he is risen, as he layd: come, see the place where the Lord was layd,

7 And goe quickly, and tell his disciples that hee is risen from the dead: and behold, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye shall see him: loe, I haue told you.

8 So they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioy, and did runne to bring his disciples word.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Iesus also met them, saying God iauē you. And they came, and tooke him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid, Goe, and tell my brethren, that they goe into Galile, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were gone, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the hie Priells all the things that were done.

12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, and tooke counsell, and gaue large money vnto the iouldiers,

13 Saying, Say, his disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this matter come before the Gouvernour to be heard, we will perswade him, and so vse the matter, that you shall not neede to care.

15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is noyed among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile, into a mountaine,

CHAP. I.

mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him : but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came and spake vnto them, saying, * All power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth,

19 * Goe therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghost,

20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you : and loe, * I am with you alway, vntill the end of the world, AMEN.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS

Christ according to Marke.

CHAP. I.

4 John baptizeth. 6 His apparel and meat. 9 Iesus is baptized 12 He is tempted. 14 He preacheth the Gospel. 21 & 39 He teacheth in the Synagogues. 23 He healeth one that had a deuill. 29 Peters mother in law. 32 Many diseased persons. 40 The Leper.

IN the beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God:

1 As it is written in the Prophets. * Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

2 * The voice of him that cryeth in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord: make his paths straight.

3 * John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of amendment of life, for remission of finnes.

4 And all the countrey of Iudea, and they of Hierusalem, went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confessing their finnes.

5 * Nowe John was clothed with camels haire, and with a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: and hee did eat * locusts and wilde hony,

6 * And preached saying, A stronger then I, commeth after me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to Hooke downe & vnloose.

7 Truth it is, I haue baptized you with water: but hee will baptize you with the holy Ghost.

8 * And it came to passe in those dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth, a city of Galile, & was baptized of John in Iordan.

9 And as soone as he was come out of the water, John saw the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a dove.

Chap. 11.
27. 10h. 17.
2. heb. 1. 2.
Mark. 16
15.
John 14
16.

Mal. 3. 1.

Isa. 40. 3.
Iuke 3. 4.
John 1. 15.
Mat. 3. 1

Mat. 3. 4
Leuit. 11
22.

Mat. 3. 11
Iuke 3. 16.
John 1. 26.

Acts 1. 5.
and 2. 4.
and 11. 16

and 19. 4.
Mat. 3. 13.
Iuke 3. 21.
John 1. 33.

S. M A R K E.

11 Then there was a voice from heaven, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whome I am well pleased.

Mat. 4. 1.
Luke 4. 1.
Mat. 2. 18

12 * And immediatly the spirit driueth him into the wildernes.
13 And he was there in the wilderneffe fourtie dayes, and was tempted of Satan: he was also with the wilde beaſts, and the Angels miniſtred vnto him.

Mat. 4. 12.
Luke 4. 14.
Mat. 4. 15.

14 ¶ * Nowe after that Iohn was committed to priſon, Ieſus came into Galilee, preaching the Goſpel of the kingdome of God,
15 And ſaying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and beleue the Goſpel.

Mat. 4. 18.
Luke 5. 2.

16 ¶ * And as he walked by the ſea of Galilee, he ſaw Simon and Andrew his brother, calling a nette into the ſea, (for they were fiſhers)

17 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Follow me, and I will make you to be fiſhers of men.

18 And ſtraightway they forooke their nets, & followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence he ſaw Iames the ſonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the ſhip mending their nets.

20 And anon hee called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ſhippe with his hired ſeruants, and went their way after him.

Mat. 4. 13.
Luke 4. 31.
Mat. 7. 28.
Luke 4. 32

21 ¶ So * they entred into Capernaum. and ſtraightway on the Sabbath day, he entred into the Synagogue, and taught.

22 And they were aſtonied at his doctrine, * for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

23 ¶ And there was in the Synagogue a man, in whome was an vncleane ſpirit, and he cryed out,

24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to doe with thee. O Ieſus of Nazareth? Art thou come to deſtroy vs? I knowe thee what thou art, *euen* that Holy one of God.

25 And Ieſus rebuked him, ſaying, Holde thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And the vncleane ſpirit tare him, and cryed with a loude voice, and came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, ſo that they demanded one of another, ſaying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for hee commandeth *euen* the ſoule ſpirits with authoritie, and they obey him.

Mat. 8. 14.
Luke 4. 38

28 And immediatly his fame ſpread abroad throughout all the region bordering on Galilee.

29 ¶ * And alſoone as they were gone out of the Synagogue, they

CHAP. I.

they entred into y^e house of Simon & Andrew, with Iannes & Iohn.
30 And Simons wifes mother lay sicke of a feuer, and anon they told him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lifted her vp, and the feuer forsooke her by and by, & she ministred vnto them.

32 And when euen was come, at what time the sunne setteth, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with deuils.

33 And the whole city was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases, and he cast out many deuils, and suffered not the deuils to say that they knew him.

35 And in the morning very earely before day, Iesus arose and went out into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed carefully after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.

38 Then he said vnto them, Iet vs goe into the next townes, that I may preach there alio: for I came out for that purpose.

39 And he preached in the Synagogues, throughout all Galile, and cast the deuils out.

40 ¶ And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and knelled downe vnto him, and said to him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. Mat 8. 2.
Luk 5. 12.

41 And Iesus had compassion, and put forth his hande, and touched him, and said to him, I will: be thou cleane.

42 And as soone as he had spoken, immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was made cleane.

43 And after he had given him a shurt commandement, he sent him away soothwith.

44 And said vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man, but see thee herce, and shew thy selfe to the * Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things, which Moses commanded, for a testimoniall vnto them. Leu. 14. 4.

45 But when hee was departed, * he began to tell many things, and to put forth the matter: so that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter. Luk 5. 15.

CHAP. II.

3 and 4 One sicke of the palsey, Iannes is named for: inuen him, is healed. 14 Matthew is called. 19 Feasting and afflictions

S. MARKE.

are foretold. 13 The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 26 The shewbread.

Mat. 9.1.
Luke 5 18.

After * a fewe dayes, hee entred into Capernaum againe, and it was noyed that he was in the house.

2 And anon, many gathered together, in so much that the places about the doore could not receiue any more: and he preached the word vnto them.

3 And there came vnto him, that brought one sicke of the pallsie, borne of foure men.

4 And because they could nor come neere vnto him for the multitude, they vncovered the roofof the house where he was: and when they had broken it open, they let downe the bed, where in the sicke of the pallsie lay.

5 Now when Iesus saw their faith, he saide to the sicke of the pallsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiven thee.

6 And there were certaine of the Scribes, sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

Job 14.4.
1/4. 43.25

7 Why doeth this man speake such blasphemies? * who can forgive sinnes, but God onely?

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceived in his Spirit, that thus they reasoned with themselves, he said vnto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the pallsie, Thy sinnes are forgiven thee? or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke?

10 But that ye may know, that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgive sinnes (he said to the sicke of the pallsie)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and get thee hence into thine owne house.

12 And by and by he arose, and tooke vp his bed, and went forth before them all. in so much that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We neuer saw such a thing.

13 ¶ Then hee went forth againe toward the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

Mat. 9 9.
Luke 5.27

14 * And as Iesus passed by, he sawe Leui the sonne of Alphaeus sit at the receite of custome, and said vnto him, Follow mee. And he arose, and followed him.

15 ¶ And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for there were many that followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees sawe him eate with the Publicanes and sinners, they saide vnto his disciples, Howe is it, that

C H A P. III.

that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 Now when Iesus heard it, he saide vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the Physicion, but the sicke. * I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.

1.Tim.1.
13.

18 * And the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises did fast, and came and said vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharises fast, and thy disciples fast not?

Mat.9.14
Iuke 5.33

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber fast, whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the daies will come, when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 Alto no man seweth a piece of new cloth in an olde garment. for els the new piece that filled it vp, taketh away somewhat from the olde, and the breach is worse.

22 Likewise no man putteth new wine into old vessels: for els the new wine breake h the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are lost: but new wine must be put into new vessels.

23 * And it came to passe, as he went through the corne on the Sabbath day, that his disciples, as they went on their way, began to plucke the eares of corne

Mat.12.1
Iuke 6.1.

24 And the Pharises said vnto him Behold, why do they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said to them, Haue ye neuer read what * David d'd, when he had neede, and was an hungred, *eat* hee, and they that were with him?

1.Sam.
21.6.

26 How he went into the house of God in the dayes of Abiathar the hie Priest, and did eate the shewbread, which were not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priestes, and gaue also to them which were with him?

Exod.29.
33 Iud.8.

27 And he said to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.

31. and
24 9.

28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lord, cuen of the Sabbath.

C H A P. III.

1 The withered hand is healed. 6 The Pharises consult with the Herodians. 10 Many are healed by touching his robe. 11 As his sight the devils fall downe before him. 14 The twelve Apostles. 24 The kingdome divided against it selfe. 29 Blasphemy against the holy Ghost. 33 Christs parents.

ANd * hee entred againe into the Synagoge, and there was a man which had a withered hand.

Mat.12.9
Iuke 6.6.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the

S. MARKE.

the Sabbath day, that they might accule him.

3 Then he said vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise: *stand forth* in the mids.

4 And he said to them, Is it lawfull to do a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to do euill: to saue the life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

5 Then he looked round about on them angrily, mourning also for the hardnesse of their hearts, and said to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored, as whole as the other.

6 ¶ And the Pharises departed, & straightway gathered a councill with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus auoyded with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude followed him from Galile, and from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, & beyond Iordan: and they that dwelled about Tyrus and Sidon, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him in great number.

9 And he commanded his disciples, that a little ship should wait for him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, in so much that they pressed vpon him, to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And when the vnclane spirits saw him, they fell downe before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And he sharply rebuked them, to the ende they should not vtter him.

13 *Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom he would, and they came vnto him.

14 And he appointed twelue that they should be with him, and that he might send them to preach.

15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuils.

16 And the first was Simon, and he named Simon, Peter.

17 Then Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn, Iames brother (and surnamed them Boanerges: which is, the sonnes of thunder)

18 And Andrew and Philip, and Bartlemew, and Matthew and Thomas, and Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, and they came home.

20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to lay hold

Chap. 6.7
mat. 10.1
luke 9.1.

CHAP. IIII

hold on him: for they said that he was beside himselfe.

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the devils hee casteth out devils.

Mat. 9. 34
and 12. 24
Luk. 11. 15

23 But hee called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, How can Satan drive out Satan?

24 For if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 Or, if a house bee diuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue:

26 So if Satan make insurrection against himselfe, and be diuided, he cannot endure, but is at an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goods, except hee first binde that strong man, and then spoile his house.

28 ¶ Verily I say vnto you, all sinnes shalbe forgiven vnto the children of men and blasphemies, wherewith they blaspheme:

Mat. 18
31. Luke

29 But he that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall neuer haue forgiveness, but is culpable of eternall damnation,

12. 10. 1.
Iohn 5. 16.

30 Because they said, He had an vncleane spirit.

Mat. 12

31 ¶ Then came his brethren and mother, and stood without, and sent vnto him, and called him.

46. Luke
8. 19.

32 And the people sate about him, and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren seeke for thee without.

33 But hee answered them, saying, Who is my mother, and my brethren?

34 And hee looked round about on them, which sate in compasse about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoever doeth the will of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and my mother.

CHAP. IIIII

¶ The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof. 18 The key.

21 The canonic. 26 Of him that sowed, and then slept. 31 The ground of the hard heart. 38 Christ sleepeth in the ship

And he began againe to teach by the sea side, & there gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate in the sea, and all the people was by the sea side on the land.

Mat. 13. 1
Luk. 8. 4.

2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken: Behold, there went out a sower to sow.

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, that some fell by the way side, and the fowles of the heauen came, and deuoured it vp.

S. MARKE.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and by and by sprang vp, because it had not depth of earth.

6 But as soone as the sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had not roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes grew vp, and choked it, so that it gane no fruit.

8 Some againe fell in good ground, and did yeeld fruite that sprung vp, and grewe, and it brought forth, some thirtie folde, some sixtie fold, and some an hundred fold.

9 Then he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of the parable.

11 And hee said vnto them, To you it is given to knowe the myserie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things be done in parables,

Esa 6.9.

mat. 13. 14

luke 8. 10.

ioh. 11. 40.

act. 28. 26

rom. 11. 8.

12 *That they seeing, may see, and not discerne: and they hearing, may heare, and not vnderstand, lest at any time they should turne, and their sinnes should be forgiven them.

13 Againe he said vnto them, Perceiue ye not this parable? how then should ye vnderstand all other parables?

14 The sower soweth the word.

15 And there are they that receive the seed by the waves side, in whome the word is sown: but when they haue heard it, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And likewise they that receive the seed in stony ground are they, which when they haue heard the word, straightwayes receive it with gladnesse.

17 Yet haue they no root in themselves, and endure but a time: for when trouble and persecution ariseth for the word, immediately they be offended.

18 Also they that receive the seed among the thornes, are such as heare the word:

1. Tim. 6.

37.

19 But the cares of this worlde, and the * deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lustes of other things enter in, and choke the worde, and it is vnfruitfull.

20 But they that haue receiued seed in good ground, are they that heare the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruite, one thirtie, and another sixtie, and some an hundred.

Mat. 5. 15.

luke 8. 16.

and 11. 33

21 ¶ Also he said vnto them, * Commeth the candle in, to be put vnder a bushel, or vnder the bed, & not to be put on a candlestick?

C H A P. I I I I.

22 *For there is nothing hid, that shall not be opened: neither is there a secret, but that it shall come to light.

23 If any man haue eares to heare let him heare.

24 And he said vnto them, Take heede what ye heare. * With what measure ye mete it shall be measured vnto you: and vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen.

25 *For vnto him that hath, shall it be giuen, and from him that hath not, shall be taken away, euen that he hath.

26 ¶ Also he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed in the ground,

27 And should sleepe, and rise vp night and day, and the seede should spring and grow vp, he not knowing how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of it selfe, first the blade, then the eare, after that full cometh in the eares.

29 And as soon as the time sheweth it selfe, anon he putteth in the sickle because the harvest is come.

30 ¶ He saith moreover, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard seed, which when it is sown in the earth, is the least of all seedes that be in the earth:

32 But after that it is sown, it groweth vp, & is greatest of all herbes, and beareth great branches, so that the fowles of heauen may build vnder the shadow of it.

33 And * with many such parables he preached the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 And without parables spake he nothing vnto them: but he expounded all things to his disciples apart.

35 ¶ Now the same day when euen was come, hee said vnto them, Let vs go ouer vnto the other side.

36 And they left the multitude, and tooke him as he was in the shippe, and there were also with him other little shippes.

37 And there arose a great storme of winde, and the waves dashed into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And hee was in the sterne asleepe on a pillow: and they awoke him, & said to him, Master carest thou not that we perish?

39 And hee arose, and rebulged the winde, and said vnto the sea, Peace, and be still. So the winde ceased, and it was a great calme.

40 Then he said vnto them, Why are ye so fearefull? how is it that ye haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who is this, that both the winde and sea obey him?

C H A P.

Mat. 13.

26. Luke

8. 17. and

12. 2.

Mat. 7. 2.

Luke 6. 38.

Mat. 13.

12. and

25. 29.

Luke 8. 18.

and 19. 26

Mat 15

31. Luke

13. 19.

Mat 13

34.

Mar. 8. 23

Luke 8. 22.

S. MARKE

CHAP. V.

2 One possessed is healed. 7 The deuil acknowledgeth Christ. 9 A legion of devils 13 entreats misfortune. 22 Iairus daughter. 25 A woman is healed of a bloody issue. 26 Phisicians. 34 Faith. 39 Sleeps.

Mat. 8. 28
Luke 8. 26.

AND they came over to the other side of the sea into the countrey of the Gadarens.

2 And when hee was come out of the ship, there met him incontinently out of the graues, a man which had an vncleane spirit :

3 Who had his abiding among the graues, and no man could binde him, no not with chaines,

4 Because that when hee was often bound with setters and chaines, hee plucked the chaines asunder, and brake the setters in pieces, neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes both night and day he cried in the mountaines, and in the graues, and strooke himselfe with stones.

6 And when he saw Iesus at a distance, he ranne, and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of the most high God? I will that thou sweate to me by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane spirit)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and hee answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he prayed him instantly, that he would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there in the mountaines a great herde of swine feeding:

12 And all the deuils besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And incontinently Iesus gaue them leave. Then the vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herde ran headlong from the high bank into the sea (and there were about two thousand swine) and they were choaked vp in the sea.

14 And the swineherds fled, and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey, and they came out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they came to Iesus, and saw him that had bene possessed with the deuill, and had the Legion, sit both clothed, and in his right mynd: and they were afeard.

16 And they that saw it, tolde them what was done to him that was possessed with the deuill, and concerning the swine.

17 Then

C H A P. V.

17 Then they began to pray him, that hee would depart from their coastes.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had bene possessed with the deuill, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him, but saide vnto him, Goe thy way home to thy friendes, and shewe them what great things the Lord hath done vnto thee, and how he hath had compassion on thee.

20 So he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, what great things Iesus had done vnto him: and all men did marueile.

21 ¶ And when Iesus was come over againe by ship vnto the other side, a great multitude gathered together to him, and he was nere vnto the sea.

22 * And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the Synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he sawe him, hee fell downe at his feete, Mat. 9 18
Luke 8 41.

23 And besought him instantly, saying, My little daughter lieth at point of death: *if pray thee* that thou wouldest come and lay thine hands on her, that she may be healed, and liue.

24 Then he went with him, and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him.

25 (And there was a certaine woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres.

26 And had suffered many things of many Physicians, and had spent all that she had, and it auailed her nothing, but she became much worse.

27 When she had heard of Iesus, she came in the preasse behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may but touch his clothes, I shal be whole.

29 And straightway the courie of her blood was dried vp, and she felt in her body, that she was healed of that plague.

30 And immediatly when Iesus did know in himselfe the vertue that went out of him, hee turned him round about in the preasse, and said, Who hath touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude throng thee, and sayest thou, Who did touch me?

32 And he looked round about, to see her that had done that.

33 And the woman feared and trembled: for she knew what was done in her, and she came and fell downe before him, and told him the whole trueth.

34 And hee saide to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole: goe in peace, and be whole of thy plague.)

35 While

S. MARKE.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the *same* ruler of the Synagogues house *certaine* which said, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the master any further?

36 As soon as Iesus heard that word spoken, hee sayd vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid, onely beleeue.

37 And he suffered no man to followe him, saue Peter and James, and Iohn the brother of James

38 So he came vnto the house of the ruler of the Synagogue, and saw the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And he went in, and said vnto them. Why make yee this trouble, and weepe? the child is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorne: but hee put them all out, and tooke the father, and the mother of the childe, and them that were with him, and entred in where the child lay,

41 And tooke the child by the hand, & said vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpretation, Maiden I say vnto thee, Arise.

42 And straightway the maiden arose, & walked: for she was of the age of twelue yeeeres, and they were astonied out of measure.

43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know of it, and commanded to give her meate.

CHAP. VI.

2 *Christ preaching in his countrey, his owne contemne him. 6 The unbeliefe of the Nazarenes. 7 The Apostles are sent. 13 They cast out devils: then cometh the sicke and vile. 14 Herods reputation of Christ. 18 The cause of Iohns imprisonment. 22 Dauides. 27 Iohns beheading, 29 Curied. 30 The Apostles returne from preaching. 34 Christ teacheth in the desert. 37 He feedeth the people with five loaves. 48 The Apostles are troubled on the sea. 55 The sicke that touch Christs corment are healed.*

AND he departed thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples followed him.

2 And when the Sabbath was come, he began to teach in the Synagogue, and many that heard him were astonished and said, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this that is given vnto him, that euen such great workes are done by his hands?

3 Is not this that Carpenter, Marijs sonne, the brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended in him.

4 Then Iesus said vnto them, A Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kindred, and in his owne house.

5 And

Mat. 13.
34. Luke
4. 16.

Mat. 13.
37.
Luk. 4. 24.
Ioh. 4. 44.

CHAP. VI.

7 And he could there doe no great workes, saue that he laide his hands vpon a few sicke folke, and healed *them*.

8 And he marvelled at their vnbeliefe, * and went about by the townes on euery side, teaching.

9 * And he called vnto him the twelue, & began to send them forth two and two, and gaue them power ouer vnclane spirits,

10 And commanded them, that they should take nothing for their iourney, saue a staffe onely: neither scrip, neither bread, neither money in their girdles:

11 But that they should bee shodde with * sandales, and that they should not put on two coates.

12 And he said vnto them, Wherefoeuer ye shall enter into an house, there abide till ye depart thence.

13 * And whosoever shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when ye depart thence, * shake off the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnesse vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, it shall be easier for Sodome or Gomorrah at the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

14 * And they went out, and preached, that men should amend their liues.

15 And they cast out many devils: and they * anointed many that were sicke. with oyle, and healed *them*.

16 * Then King Herod heard of him (for his name was made manifest) and said, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by him.

17 Other said, It is Elias: and some saide, It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets.

18 * So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

19 For Herod himselfe had sent forth, and had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philips wife, because he had married her.

20 For Iohn said to Herod, * It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

21 Therefore Herodias laid waite against him, and would haue killed him, but he could not:

22 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he was a iust man and an holy, and reuerenced him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

23 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on his birth day made a banquet to his princes and captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile:

Mat. 4. 23

Luk. 13. 22

Chap. 3. 14

Mat. 10. 1.

Luke 9. 1.

Mat. 12. 8

Mat. 10.

14

Luke 9. 5.

Acts 13.

31. and

18. 6.

Mat. 3. 14.

Mat. 14. 1

Luke 9. 7.

Luk. 3. 19

Leui. 18.

16. and

20. 21.

22. And

S. MARKE

22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat at table together, the King said vnto the maid, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

Mat. 14. 8.

23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, *euin* vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

24 *So she went forth, and said to her mother, What shall I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head.

25 Then she came in straightway with haste vnto the King, and asked, saying, I would that thou shouldest giue me euin now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 Then the King was very sorry: yet for his othes sake, & for their sakes which sat at table with him, he would not refuse her.

27 And immediately the King sent the hangman, and gave charge that his head should bee brought in. So he went and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the maid, and the maide gaue it to her mother.

Luke 9.
10.

29 And when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke vp his body, and put it in a tombe.

30 * And the Apostles gathered themselves together to Iesus, and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said vnto them, Come ye apart into the wilderness, and rest a while: for there were many comers and goers, that they had not leasure to eat.

Mat. 14.
13. Luke
9. 10.

32 *So they went by ship out of the way into a desert place.

33 But the people sawe them when they departed, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, & came thither before them, and assembled vnto him.

Mat. 9. 36
and 14. 13.
Luke 9.
11.
Mat. 14.
15.

34 *Then Iesus went out, and sawe a great multitude, and had compassion on them, because they were like sheepe which had no shepheard: *and he began to teach them many things.

35 * And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came vnto him, saying, This is a desert place, and now the day is farre passed.

36 Let them depart that they may goe into the countrey and townes about, and buy them bread: for they haue nothing to eat.

Mat. 14.
17. Luke
9. 13.
Iohn 6. 9.

37 But he answered, and said vnto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said vnto him, Shall we goe and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and giue them to eat?

38 *Then he said vnto them, How many loanes haue yee? goe and

CHAP. VI.

and looke. And when they knew it, they said, Fine, and two filhes.

39 So hee commaunded them to make them all sit downe by companies vpon the greene grasse.

40 Then they late downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And he tooke the five loanes, and the two filhes, and looked vp to heauen, and gaue thanks, and brake the loanes, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them, and the two filhes he diuided among them all.

42 So they did all eate, and were satisfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments, and of the filhes,

44 And they that had eaten, were about five thousand men.

45 ¶ And straightway hee caused his disciples to get into the shippe, and to goe before vnto the other side vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 Then as soone as he had sent them away, hee departed into a mountaine to pray.

47 * And when euen was come, the ship was in the mids of the sea, and he alone on the land. Mat. 14
23. 106m

48 And he sawe them troubled in rowing, (for the winde was contray vnto them) & about the fourth watch of night, he came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue passed by them. 23. 106m

49 And when they saw him walking vpon the sea, they supposed it had bene a spirit, and cried out;

50 For they all saw him, and were sore afraid: but anon he talked with them, and said vnto them, Be of good comfort, It is I, Be not afraid.

51 Then he went vp vnto them into the ship and the wind ceased, and they were much more amazed in themselves, & maruelled.

52 For they had not considered the matter of the loanes, because their hearts were hardened.

53 ¶ * And they came ouer, and went into the land of Genesaret, and ashiued. Mat. 14
34

54 So when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran about throughout all that region round about, and began to cary luther and thither in couches all that were sicke, where they heard that he was.

56 And whithersoener he entred into towres, or cities, or villages, they laid their sicke in the streetes, and prayed him that they might touch at the least the edge of his garment. And as many as touched him, were made whole,

S. MARKE.

CHAP. VII.

2 The Apostles are found fault with, for eating with unwashen hands. 4 The Pharise's traditions about washings. 6 Hypocrites. 8 Mens traditions more set by then Gods. 10 Parents must be honoured. 14 The things that doe indeed defile a man. 25 The woman of Chanaane. 32 The deafe dumbe man is healed.

Mat. 15. 2

Then * gathered vnto him the Pharisees, and certaine of the Scribes which came from Hierusalem.

2 And when they sawe some of his disciples eate meate with common hands, (that is to say, vawashen) they complained.

3 (For the Pharisees, and all the Iewes, except they wash their hands oit, eate not, holding the tradition of the Elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eate not: and many other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obserue, as the washing of cuppes, and pots, and of brasen vessels, and of beds)

5 Then asked him the Pharisees and Scribes, Why walke not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eat meat with vawashen hands?

Isa. 29. 14

6 Then he answered, and said vnto them, Surely * Esay hath prophceded well of you hypocrites, as it is wtitten, This people honoureth me with lips, but their heart is farr away from me.

7 But they worship mee in vaine, teaching for doctrines the commandements of men.

8 For ye lay the commandement of God apart, and obserue the traditions of men, as the washing of pots and of cups, and many other such things ye doe.

9 And he said vnto them, Well, ye reiect the commandement of God that ye may obserue your owne tradition.

Exod. 20

12. deus.

5. 16.

ephes. 6. 2.

Exod. 11.

17. leuit.

20. 9. pro.

20. 20.

10 For Moses said, * Honour thy father and thy mother: and, * Whosoever shall speake euill of father or mother, let him die the death:

11 But ye say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, *that is*, By the gift that is offered by me, thou mayest haue profit, *he shall be free.*

12 So ye suffer him no more to doe any thing for his father, or his mother,

13 Making the word of God of none authoritie, by your tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye do many such like things.

Mat. 15.

10.

14 * Then hee called the whole multitude vnto him, and said vnto them, Harken you all vnto me, and vnderstand.

15 There is nothing without a man, that can defile him, when

CHAP. VII.

it entreth into him: but the things which proceede out of him, are they which defile the man.

16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when he came into an house, away from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he said vnto them, What? are yee without vnderstanding also? Doe ye not know that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into a man, cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, which is the purging of all meates?

20 Then he sayd, That which cometh out of a man, that defileth a man,

21 * For from within, *euil* out of the heart of men, proceede euill thoughts adulteries, fornications, murders, Gen. 6. 5
and 2. 21

22 Tins is couetousnes, wickedn^s sle, deceit, vncleannesse, a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnesse,

23 All these euill things come from within, and defile a man.

24 ¶ And from thence he rose, and went into the borders of Tyris, and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would that no man should haue knowen: but he could not be hid. Matth. 15
21

25 For a certaine woman, whose little daughter had an vnclean spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feet,

26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophoenician by nation) and she besought him that he would cast out the deuill out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first be fed: for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and cast it vnto w^l elpes.

28 Then she answered and sayd vnto him, Trueth, Lord: yet in deed the whelpes eate vnder the table of the childrens crummes.

29 Then he sayd vnto her, For this saying go thy way, the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, shee found the deuill departed, and her daughter lying on the bed.

31 ¶ And hee departed againe from the coastes of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of Galile, through the mids of the coastes of Decapolis.

32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe, and stumbled in his speech, and prayed him to put his hand vpon him.

33 Then he tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and sayd vnto him, Ephphat, that is, Be opened.

MARK.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the sirring of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And hee commaunded them that they should tell no man: but how much soeuer he forbade them, the more a great deale they published it,

Gene. 1. 31
eccles. 39
31.

37 And were beyond measure astonied, saying, * He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The miracle of the seuen loaves. 11 The Iewes seeke signes. 15 To beware of the leaen of the Pharises. 23 A blind man healed. 27 The people say by omni-v's o' Christ. 29 The Apostles acknowledge Christ. 31 He foretelleth his death. 33 Peter, Satan. 35 To save and lose the life. 38 To be ashamed of Christ.

Matth. 13
32.

IN * those dayes, when there was a very great multitude, and had nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples to him, and sayd vnto them,

1 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now continued with me three dayes, and haue nothing to eate.

2 And if I send them away fasting to their o'ne houses, they would faint by the way: for some of them came from farre.

3 Then his disciples answered him, Whence can a man satisfie these with bread here in the wilderness?

4 And hee asked them, How many loaves haue ye? And they sayd, Seuen.

5 Then hee commaunded the multitude to sit downe on the ground: and he tooke the seuen loaves, and gaue thanks, brake them, and gaue to his disciples to set before them, and they did set them before the people.

6 They had also a fewe small fishes: and when hee had giuen thanks, he commaunded them also to be set before them.

7 So they did eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets full.

8 (And they that had eaten, were about foure thousand) so he sent them away.

Matth. 13
39
Mat. 16.

9 * And anon he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

10 * And the Pharises came soorth, and began to dispute with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, and tempting him.

11 Then hee sighed deeply in his spirit, and sayd, Why doeth this generation seeke a signe? Verely I say vnto you, a signe shall not be giuen vnto this generation.

CHAP. VIII.

13 ¶ So he left them, and went into the shippe againe, and departed to the other side.

14 ¶ And they had forgotten to take bread, neither had they *Mat. 16. 5.* in the ship with them, but one lease.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed and beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *7c* because we haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew it, hee said vnto them, Why reason you *thus*, because yee haue no bread? perceiue yee not yet, neither vnderstand? haue yee your hearts yet hardened?

18 Haue ye eyes, and see not? and haue yee eares and heare not? and doe yee not remember?

19 ¶ When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of broken meate tooke yee vp? They said vnto him, Twelue. *Joh. 6. 11.*

20 And when *7c* brake seuen among foure thousand, how many baskets of the leauings of broken meate tooke yee vp? And they said, Seuen.

21 Then he said vnto them, How *is it* that yee vnderstand not?

22 And he came to Bethsaida, and they brought a blinde man vnto him, and desired him to touch him.

23 Then hee tooke the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and spit in his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, and asked him, if he saw ought.

24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men: for I see them walking like trees.

25 After that, hee put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke againe. And he was restored to his sight, and saw euery man a farre off clearly.

26 And he sent him home to his house, saying, Neither goe into the towne nor tell it to any in the towne.

27 ¶ And Iesus went out, and his disciples into the townes of Cesarea Philippi. And by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men say that I am? *Mat. 16. 13. Luke 9. 18.*

28 And they answered, Some say, Iohn Baptist; and some, Elias; and some one of the Prophets.

29 And hee said vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? **Thou** Peter answered, and said vnto him, Thou art that Christ.

30 And hee sharply charged them, that concerning him they should tell no man.

31 Then hee beganne to teach them that the Sonne of man

S. MARKE.

must suffer many things, and should be reprov'd of the Elders, and of the hie Priells, and of the Scribes, and be slaine, and within three dayes rise againe.

32 And he spake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aside and began to rebuke him.

33 Then hee turned backe, and looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde mee, Satan: for thou understandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

34 ¶ And he called the people vnto him with his disciples, and said vnto them, * Whosoever will follow mee, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

35 For whosoever will * save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, he shal save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man though hee should winne the whole world, if he lose his soule?

37 For what exchange shall a man give for his soule?

38 * For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words among this adulterous and sinful generation, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed also, when he commeth in the glorie of his Father with the holy Angels.

CHAP. IX.

2 Christes transfiguration. 7 Christ must bee heard. 11 Of Elias and Iohn Baptist. 14 The possessed is healed. 23 Faith can doe all things. 31 Christ foretelleth his death. 33 Who is greatest among the Apostles. 36 Christ taketh a child in his armes. 42 To offend. 50 Saith Peace.

And * he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that there bee some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seene the kingdome of God come with power.

3 * And sixe dayes after, Iesus tooketh vnto him Peter, and Iames and Iohn and carieth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and his shape was changed before them.

3 And his rayment did shine, and was very white, as snow, so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias, with Moses, and they were talking with Iesus.

5 Then Peter answered and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 Yet he knew not what he said: for they were afraid.

7 And there was a cloude that shadowed them, and a voyce came

Mat. 10.

38. and

16. 24.

luke 9. 23.

ca. 14. 27.

Mat. 10.

39. and

16. 25.

luke 9. 24.

ca. 17. 33.

Mat. 10.

33. luke 9.

25. and

11. 9.

Mat. 16.

28. luke

9. 27.

Mat. 17. 1.

luke 9. 28.

CHAP. IX.

came out of the cloude, saying, * This is my beloved Sonne: heare him.

Mat. 3. 17
anl 17. 5.
chap. 1. 11

8 And suddenly they looked round about, and saw no more any man save Iesus onely with them.

9 * And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them that they should tell no man what they had seene, save when the Sonne of man were risen from the dead againe.

Mat. 17. 9.

10 So they kept that matter to themselves, and demanded one of another, what the rising from the dead againe should meane.

11 Also they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes, that * Elias must first come?

Mal. 4. 5.

12 And he answered, and sayd vnto them. Elias verely shall first come, and restore all things: and * as it is written of the Sonne of man he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

Psal. 55. 4.

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come (and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would) as it is written of him.

14 * And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes disputing with them.

Mat. 17.
14. luke
24. 38.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were amazed, and ranne to him, and saluted him.

16 Then he asked the Scribes, What dispute you among yourselves?

17 And one of the companie answered, and said, Master, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which hath a dumbe spirit,

18 And wheresoeuer he taketh him, he teareth him and berea-
meth, and gnaweth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should call him out, and they could not.

19 Then he answered him, and said, O faithlesse generation, how long now shall I bee with you? how long now shall I suffer you? bring him vnto me.

20 So they brought him vnto him: and as soone as the spirite saw him, he tare him, and he fell downe on the ground, wallowing and foaming.

21 Then he asked his father, How long time is it since he hath bene thus? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft times hee casteth him into the fire, and into the water to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, helpe vs, and haue compassion vpon vs.

23 And Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleue it, all things are possible to him that beleueth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe, crying with teares, said, Lord, I beleue: helpe mine vnbeliefe.

S. MARKE.

25 When Iesus sawe that the people came running together, he rebuked the vncleane spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumbe and deafe spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 Then the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out, and he was as one dead, in so much that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke his hand, and lift him vp, and he arose.

28 And when hee was come into the house, his disciples asked him secretly, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said vnto them, This kinde can by no other meanes come forth, but by prayer and fasting.

Mat 17.
22 Luke
9.22.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and went together through Galile, and he would not that any should haue knowen it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, but after that he is killed, hee shall rise againe the third day.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

Mat. 18.
Luke 9.46.

33 ¶ After hee came to Capernaum: and when hee was in the house, hee asked them, What was it that yee disputed among you by the way?

34 And they held their peace: for by the way they reasoned among themselves, who should be the chiefe.

35 And he saue downe, and called the twelue, and said to them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant vnto all.

36 And hee tooke a little childe, and set him in the middles of them, and tooke him in his armes and said vnto them,

37 Whosoever shall receiue one of such little children in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth mee, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

Zak 9.49.

38 ¶ Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, wee sawe one casting out devils by this Name, which followeth not vs, and wee forbid him, because he followeth vs not.

1. Cor. 12.3

39 ¶ But Iesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man that can doe a miracle by my Name, that can lightly speake euill of me.

40 For whosoever is not against vs is on our part.

Mat. 10.
41.

41 ¶ And whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drinke for my Names sake, because yee belong to Christ, verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward.

Mat. 11.6.
Luke 17.18

42 ¶ And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones, that beleue in mee, it were better for him rather, that a millstone were hanged

C H A P. X.

hanged about his necke, and that he were call into the sea.

43 * Wherefore if thine hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: *Mat. 5.39*
it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, then having two *and 188*
hands, to goe into hell, into the fire, that neuer shall be quenched,

44 * Where their worrne dieth not, & the fire neuer goeth out. *Jsa. 66.24*

45 Likewise if thy foote cause thee to offend cut it off: it is better for thee to go halt into life, then having two feet to be cast into hell into the fire that neuer shall be quenched.

46 Where their worrne dieth not & the fire neuer goeth out.

47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend plucke it out: it is better for thee to goe into the kingdome of God with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

48 Where their worrne dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

49 For every man shalbe salted with fire: and * every sacrifice *Leui. 2.13*
shalbe salted with salt.

50 * Salt is good: but if the salt be vnſauorie, wherewith shall *Mat. 5.13*
it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with *luke 14.34*
another.

C H A P. X.

9 The wife cutt for fornication: to be put away. 12 Lill' children are lyne to Christ. 17 A rich man asketh Iesus, how he may possesse eternall life. 28 The Apostles forsake all thins for Christs sake. 33 Christ foreteweth his death. 35 Zebedeus his sonnes request. 46 Blind Bartimeus healed.

AND * he arose from thence, and went into the coastes of Iudea *Mat. 19.2*
by the same side of Iordan, and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as he was went, he taught them againe.

2 Then the Pharisees came and asked him, if it were lawfull for a man to put away his wife, and tempted him.

3 And hee answered and said vnto them, What did * Moses *Deut. 24.1*
command you?

4 And they sayd, Moses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them. For the hardnesse of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you.

6 But at the beginning of the creation, * God made them male *Gen. 1.27*
and female: *mat. 19.4*

7 * For this cause shall man leaue his father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, *Gen. 2.24*
1. cor. 6.16

8 And they twaine shall be one flesh: so that they are no more *1. pet. 3.31*
twaine, but one flesh.

9 * Therefore, what God hath coupled together, let not man *1. cor. 7.10*
separate.

separate.

10 And in that house his disciples asked him againe of that matter.

*Matth. 5 32
and 19. 2* 11 And hee sayd vnto them, * Whosoener shall put away his wife, and marrie another, committeth adultery against her.

luke 16. 8 12 And if a woman put away her husband, and bee married to another, she committeth adultery.

*Matth. 19
13. luke 18* 13 ¶ Then they brought little children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Iesus saw it, he was displeased, & sayd vnto them, Suffer the little children to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I say vnto you, whosoener shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little childe he shal not enter therein.

16 And he tooke them vp in his armes, and put his hands vpon them, and blessed them.

*Matth. 19
16 luke 18* 17 ¶ And when hee was gone out on the way, there came one * running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I doe, that I may possesse eternall life?

18 Iesus sayd vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, *euē* God.

Exod 20 19 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witness. Thou shalt hurt no man. Honour thy father and mother.

20 Then he answered, and sayd to him, Master, all these things I haue obserued from my youth.

21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued him, and sayd vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee, Goe, and sell all that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come follow me, and take vp the crosse.

22 But he was sad at that saying, and went away sorowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 And Iesus looked round about, and sayd vnto his discipls, How hardly doe they that haue riches enter into the kingdome of God!

24 And his disciples were afraid at his words. But Iesus answered againe, and sayd vnto them, Children, howe hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were much more astonied, saying with themselves, Who

CHAP. X.

Who then can be saved?

27 But Iesus looked vpon them, and sayd, With men it is impossible, but not with God.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, wee haue forsaken all, and haue followed thee.

Matth. 19
27. Luke 18

29 Iesus answered, and sayd, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath forsaken houle, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the Gospels,

28.

30 But he shall receiue an hundredfold, now at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands with persecutions and in the world to come eternall life.

31 ¶ But many that are first, shall be last, and the last, first.

Matth. 19
30. Luke 13

32 ¶ And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem, and Iesus went before them, and they were troubled, and as they followed they were afraide, and Iesus tooke the twelue againe, and began to tell them what things should come vnto him,

30.
Matth. 20
17. Luke 18

33 Saye, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem: and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered vnto the hie Priests, and to the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles.

31.

34 And they shall wocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him and kill him: but the third day he shall rise againe.

35 ¶ Then James and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest doe for vs that that we desire.

Matth. 20
20.

36 And he sayd vnto them, What would ye I should doe for you?

37 And they sayd to him, Grant vnto vs, that we may sit, one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye know not what ye aske. Can ye drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and bee baptized with the baptisme that I shall be baptixed with?

39 And they said vnto him, We can. But Iesus said vnto them, Yee shall drinke in deede of the cup that I shall drinke of, and bee baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shall be baptized:

40 But to sit at my right hand, and at my left, is not mine to giue, but it shall be giuen to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard that, they began to disdayne at James and Iohn.

42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayde to them, ¶ Yee knowe that they which are princes among the Gentiles, haue domination ouer them, and they that bee great among them,

Luke 22
25.

exercise

S. MARKE.

exercise authoritie ouer them.

43 But it shall not bee so among you: but whosoever will bee great among you, shall be your servant.

44 And whosoever wil be chiefe of you, shall be the servant of al.

45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to bee serued, but to serue, and to give his life for the ranfome of many.

Matth. 10.
29. Luke 18.
35.

46 ¶ Then they came to Iericho: and as hee went out of Iericho with his disciples, and a great multitude, Bartimeus the sonne of Timens, a blinde man, sat by the way side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began to crie, and to say, Iesus the Sonne of David, haue mercie on me.

48 And many rebuked him, because he should hold his peace: but he cryed much more. O Sonne of David haue mercie on me.

49 Then Iesus stood still, and commaunded him to bee called: and they called the blinde, saying vnto him, Bee of good comfort arise, he calleth thee.

50 So he threw away his cloke and arose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And the blinde sayd vnto him, Lord, that I may receiue sight.

52 Then Iesus saide vnto him, Go thy way: thy faith hath saued thee. And by and by he receiued his sight, and followed Iesus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ entresth into Iherusalem riding on an asse. 13 The fig-tree lesse fig-tree is cur'd. 15 Sellers and ouers are cast out of the Temple. 23 The figge of liath. 24 Faith in praer. 25 The brothers offences must bee pardoned. 27 The Priests obiey what authority he wrought those things that he did. 30 Whome Iohns Baptisme was.

Matth. 21. 1.
Luk. 18. 29.

And when they came neere to Iherusalem, to Bethphage and Bethanias vnto the mount of Oliues, hee sent forth two of his disciples,

2 And sayd vnto them, Go your wayes into that towne, but is over against you, and alloone as ye shall enter into it, ye shall finde a colt tied whereon neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why do ye this? Say that the Lord hath neede of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, & found a colt tied by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met, and they loosed him.

5 Then certaine of them that stood there, sayd vnto them, What doe you loosing the colt?

6 And

C H A P. XL

6 And they said vnto them, as Iesus had commaunded them: So they let them goe.

7 ¶ And they brought the colts to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him. *Ioh. 12. 14*

8 And many spread their garments in the way: other cut downe branches off the trees and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna: blessed be hee that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome that cometh in the Name of the Lord of our father Dauid: Hosanna, *Gloria tibi, o ari* in the highest *heavens.*

11 * So Iesus entered into Hierusalem, and into the Temple: and when he had looked about on all things, and now it was evening, he went forth vnto Bethania with the twelve. *Mat. 21. 10, Iude 19. 45.*

12 * And on the morrow when they were come out from Bethania, he was hungry. *Mat. 21. 19.*

13 And seeing a fig tree a farme off that had leaues, he went to see if he might find any thing thereon: but when he came vnto it, hee found nothing but leaues: for the time of figs was not yet.

14 Then Iesus answered and said to it, Neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while the worlde standeth: and his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that sold dones.

16 Neither would he suffer that any man should carie a vessell through the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, * Mine house shall be called the house of prayer vnto all nations? * but you haue made it a den of thieues. *Isa. 56. 7. Jere. 7. 11*

18 And the Scribes and his Priests heard it, and sought how to destroy him: for they feared him, because the whole multitude was astonished at his doctrine.

19 But when euen was come, Iesus went out of the citie.

20 ¶ And in the morning as they journeyed together, they saw the figge tree dried vp from the rootes. *Mat. 20. 19.*

21 Then Peter remembered, and said vnto him, Master, behold, the figge tree which thou cursedst, is withered.

22 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Haue the faith of God.

S. MARKE.

23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoever shall say vnto this mountaine, be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shal not waver in his heart, but shall beleue that those things which hee sayth, shall come to passe, whatsoever he sayth, shall be done to him.

Mat. 7. 7.

24 * Therefore I say vnto you whatsoever yee desire when yee pray, beleue that yee shall haue it, and it shall be done vnto you.

luke 11. 9.

25 * But when yee shall stand, and pray, forgine if yee haue any thing against any man, that your Father alio which is in heauen, may forgine you your trespasses.

Mat. 6. 14.

26 For if you will not forgiue, your Father which is in heauen, will not pardon you your trespasses.

Mat. 21.

27 * Then they came againe to Hierusalem: and as he walked in the Temple, there came to him the hie Priestes, and the Scribes, and the Elders.

23. luke

21. 1.

28 And said vnto him By what authoritie dost thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie, that thou shouldst doe these things?

29 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske of you a certaine thing: and answere yee mee, and I will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? answer me.

31 And they thought with themselves, saying, If wee shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did yee not beleue him?

32 But if wee say, Of men, wee feare the people: for all men counted Iohn in that he was a Prophet indeede.

33 Then they answered, and said vnto Iesus, Wee cannot tell. And Iesus answered and said vnto them, Neither will I tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 Of the vineyard. 10 Christ the Jewe refused of the Jewes. 13 Of tribute to bee giuen to Cesar. 18 The scribes denie the resurrection. 28 The first commment. 31 To love God as the neighbour is better then sacrifices. 36 Christ Dauid's sonne. 38 To beware of the Scribes and Pharises. 42 The poore willow.

Jai. 5. 1.

iero. 2. 2.

mat. 21.

33. luke

20. 9.

ANd hee began to speake vnto them in parables. * A certaine man planted a vineyard, and compassed it with a hedge, and digged a pit for the winepresse, and built a towre in it, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey.

2 And at the time hee sent to the husbandman a seruaunt, that

CHAP. XII.

that hee might receiue of the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyard.

3 But they tooke him, and beat him, and sent him away emptye.

4 And againe hee sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe he sent another, and him they slew, and many other, beating some, and killing some.

6 Yet had hee one sonne, his deare beloued: him also hee sent the last vnto them, saying. They will reuerence my sonne.

7 But the husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shalbe ours.

8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shal then the Lord of the vineyard doe? He wil come and destroy these husbandmen, and give the vineyard to others.

10 Haue wee not read so much as this Scripture? * The stone which the builders did re use, is made the head of the corner.

11 This was done of the Lord, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared the people: for they perceiued that hee spake that parable against them: therefore they left him and went their way.

13 ¶ And they sent vnto him certaine of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, that they might take him in his talke.

14 And when they came, they said vnto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no mans face: thou considerest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God truely. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Should we giue it, or should we not giue it? But hee knew their hypocrisie and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penie, that I may see it.

16 So they brought it, and hee said vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said vnto him, Cessars.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Giue to Cesar the things that are Cessars, and to God, those that are Gods: and they marueiled at him.

18 ¶ Then came the Sadduces vnto him, (which say there is no resurrection) and they asked him saying,

19 Master, * Moyses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, and leaue his wife, and leaue no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

20 There were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and

Psal. 118.

22. 2. 4. 28.

16. Mat.

21. 42.

Mat. 4. 17.

Mat. 9. 35.

1. Pet. 2. 8.

Mat. 23.

17.

Luke 20.

20.

Mat. 23. 7

Mat. 22.

23.

Luke 20.

27.

Deut. 25. 5

Mat. 22.

24.

S. MARKE.

and when he died, left no issue.

21 Then the second tooke her, and he died, neither did hee yet leave issue, and the third likewise.

22 So those seuen had her, and left no issue: last of all the wife died also.

23 In the resurrection then, when they shall rise againe, whose wife shall these be of them? for seuen had her to wife.

24 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Are ye not therefore deceiued, because yee knowe not the Scriptures, neith^r the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise againe from the dead, neither men marrie, nor wiuers are married, but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they shall rise againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moyses, how in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob?

27 God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing. Yee are therefore greatly deceiued.

28 ¶ Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them disputing together, and perceiuing that hee had answered them well, he asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 Iesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, * Heare, Israel The Lord our God is the onely Lord.

30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

31 And the second is like, that is, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other commandment greater then these.

32 Then that Scribe said vnto him, Well Master, thou hast said the truth, that there is one God, and that there is none but he,

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 Then when Iesus saw that he had answered discretely, hee said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

35 ¶ And Iesus answered and said teaching in the Temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?

36 For Dauid himselfe sayde by the holy Ghost, * The Lord sayd

Exod 3.6.
mat. 22. 32

Mat. 22.
35.

Deut. 6.4.

Leuit. 19.
18 mat.
22. 39

rom. 13. 9.
gal 5. 14.
mat. 28.

Mat 22.
41. luke
20. 41.

Psa. 110. 3

C H A P. XIII.

sayd to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

37 Then Dauid himselfe calleth him Lord: by what meanes is he then his soune? And much people heard him gladly.

38 *Moreouer he said vnto them in his doctrine. Beware of the Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, and *take* salutations in the markets, Mat. 23. 6
Luk. 11. 43
and 20. 43

39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and the first rounes at feastes,

40 Which * deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers. These shall receiue the greater damnation. Matth. 23
14 Luk. 20
47.

41 * And as Iesus sate ouer against the treasure, hee beheld how the people cast money into the treasure, and many rich men cast in much. Luk. 21. 1

42 And there came a certaine poore widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a quadrin.

43 Then he called vnto him his disciples, and said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore widowe hath cast more in then all they which have cast into the treasure.

44 For they all did cast in of their superfluitie: but shee of her pouertie did cast in all that she had, *euen* all her living.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Of the destruction of Hierusalem. 2 Persecutions for the Gospel. 10 The Gospel must be preached to all nations. 26 Of Christs coming to iudgement. 33 We must watch and pray.

AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples sayd vnto him, Master, see what manner stones, and what manner buildings *these are*. Mat. 24. 1
Luk. 21. 5

2 * Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not be thrown downe. Luk. 19
43.

3 And as he sate on the mount of Oliues, euer against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him secretly,

4 Tell vs, when shall these things bee? and what *shall be* the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answered them, and began to say, * Take heede lest any man deceiue you. Ephes. 5. 6
2. thes. 2. 3

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and shall deceiue many.

7 Further more, when ye shall heare of warres, and rumors of warres be ye not troubled: for *such things* must needs be: but the ende *shall not be yet*.

S. MARKE.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall be earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shall bee famine and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorowes.

9 But take ye heede to your selues: for they shall deliver you vp to the Council, and to the Synagogues: ye shall be beaten, and brought before Rulers and Kings for my sake, for a testimoniall vnto them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 * But when they leade you, and deliver you vp, be not carefull before hand, neither studie what ye shall say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that speake: for it is not yee that speake, but the holy Ghost.

Matth 10
19 luke 12
21. and 22
14

12 Yea, and the brother shall deliuer the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against their parents, and shall cause them to die.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: but whosoener shall endure vnto the end, he shall be saved.

14 * Moreover when yee shall see the abomination of desolation (spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet) set where it ought not, (let him that readeth consider it) then let them that bee in Iudea, flee into the mountaines,

Matth. 24
15 luke 21
20
Dan. 9 27

15 And let him that is vpon the house, not come downe into the house, neither enter therein, to fetch any thing out of his house,

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe to take his garment.

17 Then woe shall be to them that are with childe, and to them that give sucke in those dayes.

18 Pray therefore that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For those dayes shall be such tribulation, as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created vnto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lorde had shortned those dayes, no flesh should be saved: but for the elects sake, which he had chosen, he hath shortened those dayes.

21 Then * if any man say to you, Loe, here is Christ, or, Loe, hee is there, beleene it not.

Matth. 24
23 luke 17
23. and
21. 8
Ia 12. 10
ezek 32. 7
1 pet 2. 10
and 3. 15

22 For false Christs shall rise, and false prophets, and shall shewe signes and wonders, to deceiue, if it were possible, the very elect.

23 But take yee heede: behold, I haue shewed you all things before.

24 * Moreover in those dayes, after that tribulation, * the sunne

C H A P. XIII.

sunne shall waxe darke, and the moone shall not giue her light,

25 And the starres of heauen shall fall: and the powers which are in heauen shall shake.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in the clouds, with great power and glory.

27 *And hee shall then send his Angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, and from the vtmost part of the earth to the vtmost part of heauen. Mat. 24. 31.

28 Now learne a parable of the figtree. When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth forth leaues, yee knowe that summer is neere.

29 So in like manner, when ye see these things come to passe, know that *the kingdom of God* is neere, *even* at the doores.

30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generacion shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, ne, not the Angels which are in heauen: neither the Sonne himselfe, but *my Father*.

33 *Take heed: watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. Mat. 24. 13.

34 For the Sonne of man is as a man going into a strange countrey, and leaueth his house, and giueth authoritie to his seruants, and to every man his worke, and commandeth the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore (for yee know not when the master of the house will come, at euen, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning)

36 Lest if he come suddenly, he should find you sleeping.

37 And those things that I say vnto you, I say vnto all men, Watch.

C H A P. XIII.

1 The Priests conspire against Christ. 2 The woman pouring oyle on Christs head. 12 The preparation of the Pasche. 23 The institution of the Supper. 41 Christ delivered into the hands of men. 43 Judas betrays him with a kisse. 53 Christ is before Caiaphas. 66 Peters deniaill.

And *two dayes after followed the *feast* of the Pasche, and of vnleauened bread: and the high Priests, and Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. Mat. 26. 2 Luke 22. 1.

2 But they said, Not on the *feast day*, lest there be any tumult among the people.

S. MARKE.

Mat. 26, 6
John 12, 2.

3 *And when hee was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at Table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of oyntment of spikenard, very costely, and shee brake the boxe, and powred it on his head.

4 Therefore some diddained among themselues, and said, To what end is this wast of oyntment?

5 For it might haue beene sold for more then three hundred pence, and bene giuen vnto the poore. And they murmured against her.

6 But Iesus said, Let her alone: why trouble ye her? shee hath wrought a good worke on me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, and when ye will, ye may doe them good, but me ye shall not haue alwayes.

8 She hath done that she could: she came aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that shee hath done, shall be spoken of in remembrance of her.

Mat. 26.
14. Luke
22. 4.

10 ¶ Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto the high Priests, to betray him vnto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised that they would giue him money: therefore hee sought how he might conveniently betray him.

Mat. 26.
17. Luke
22. 8.

12 ¶ Now the first day of vnleavened bread, when they sacrificed the Pascheouer, his disciples said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we goe and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Pascheouer?

13 Then he sent forth two of his disciples, and said vnto them, Go ye into the citie, and there shall a man meete you bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And whithersoever he goeth in, say ye to the good man of the house, The master sayth, Where is the lodging, where I shall eate the Pascheouer with my disciples?

15 And hee will shewe you an upper chamber which is large, trimmed and prepared: there make it ready for vs.

16 So his disciples went forth, and came to the citie, and found as he had said vnto them, and made ready the Pascheouer.

Psal. 41.
10. Mat.
26. 20, 23.
Luke 22.
24. John 13.
18, 21.

17 ¶ And at euen he came with the twelue.

18 *And as they sate at table and did eate, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me, which eateth with me.

19 Then they began to be sorrowfull, and to say to him one by one, Is it I? And another, Is it I?

20 And hee answered, and said vnto them, It is one of the twelue

CHAP. XIII.

twelve that dippeth with me in the platter.

21 Truly the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: * but woe be to that man, by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if he had neuer bene borne.

Mat. 1. 16

22 * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had given thanks, he brake it, and gaue it to them, and said, Take, eate, this is my body.

Mat. 26.

26.

1. Cor. 11.

24.

23 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had given thanks, gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of that new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verely I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruit of the vine vntill that day, that I drinke it newe in the kingdome of God.

26 And when they had sung a Psalm, they went out to the mount of Olives.

27 * Then Iesus said vnto them, All ye shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, * I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shall be scattered.

Joh. 16. 32

Zech. 13. 7

Comp. 16. 7

28 But after that I am risen, I will go into * Galilee before you.

29 And Peter said vnto him, Although all men should be offended at thee, yet would not I.

30 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, this day, euen in this night, before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrise.

31 But he said more earnestly, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee: likewise also said they all.

32 * After they came into a place named Gethsemane: then he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, till I have prayed.

Mat. 26.

56. Luke

22. 39.

33 And he tooke with him Peter, and James, and Iohn, and hee began to be troubled, and in great heauirnesse.

34 And said vnto them, My soule is very heauy, euen vnto the death: tarrye here, and watch.

35 So he went forward a little, & felldowre on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, that houre might passe from him.

36 And he said Ah! a, Father, all things are possible vnto thee: take away this cup from me, neuertheless not that I will, but that thou wilt, *be done*.

37 Then he came, and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one houre?

38 * Watch ye and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit in deede is ready, but the flesh is weake.

S. M A R K E.

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And hee returned, and found them asleepe againe: for their eyes were heauie: neither knew they what they should answer him.

41 And he came the third time, & said vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest: it is ynough: the houre is come: Behold, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise vp: let vs goe: loe he that betrayeth me, is at hand.

Mat. 26. 47. Luk. 22. 47. Iohn 12. 3. 43 * And immediatly while he yet spake, came Iudas that was one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swordes and staves from the hie Priests, and Scribes, and Elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, he it is: take him and leade him away safely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he went straightway to him, and said, Haile Master, and kissed him.

46 Then they laid their hands on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew out a sword, and smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, Ye be come out as against a thiefe with swordes and staves to take me.

49 I was dayly with you teaching in the Temple, and ye took me not: but *this is done* that the Scriptures should be fulfilled.

50 Then they all forsooke him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, clothed in linnen vpon his bare body, and the yong men caught him.

52 But he left his linnen cloth, and fled from them naked.

Mat. 26. 57. Luk. 22. 57. Iohn 18. 24. 53 * So they led Iesus away to the hie Priest, and to him came together all the hie Priests, and the Elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him a faire off, euen into the hall of the hie Priest, and sat with the seruants, & warmed himselfe at the fire.

Mat. 26. 59. 55 And the * hie Priestes, and all the Councill sought for witness against Iesus, to put him to death, but found none.

56 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.

57 Then there arose certaine, and bare false witness against him, saying,

Ioh. 8. 19. 58 We heard him say, * I will destroy this Temple made with handes, and within three dayes I will builde another made without hands,

59 But their witness yet agreed not together,

C H A P. XV.

60 Then the hie Priest stood vp amongst them, and asked Ie us, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is the matter that thei beare witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace and answered nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked him, and said vnto him, Art thou that Christ the sonne of the Blessed?

62 And Iesus said, I am he, * and ye shall see the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God, and come in the cloudes of heauen. Mat. 24. 39.

63 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, and said, What haue we any more neede of witnesses?

64 Ye haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke ye? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

65 And some began to spit at him, and to coner his face and to beat him with fistes, and to say vnto him, Prophecie. And the ker-
gants smote him with their rods.

66 * And as Peter was beneath in the hall, there came one of the maides of the hie Priest. Mat. 26. 69.

67 And when she sawe Peter warming himselfe, she looked on him, and said, Thou wast also with Iesus of Nazareth. Ioh. 22. 35
Ioh. 18. 25

68 But he denied it, saying, I know him not, neither wot I what thou sayest. Then he went out into the porch, and the cocke crew.

69 * Then a maid saw him againe, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them. Mat. 26. 71.

70 But he denied it againe: and anon after, they that stood by, said againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art of Galile, and thy speech is like. Ioh. 22. 38

71 And he began to curse, and swear, saying, I knowe not this man of whom ye speake.

72 * Then the second time the cocke crew, and Peter remembered the word that Iesus had saide vnto him, Before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrise, and weying that with him-
selfe, he wept. Mat. 26. 75.
Ioh. 13. 38

C H A P. XV.

1 Of the things that Christ suffered vnder Pilate. 11 Iacobus preferred before Christ. 15 Pilate deliuereth Christ to be crucified. 17 Herod comes with him. 19 They scourge him, and mocke him. 21 Simon of Cyrene carrieth Christs crosse. 27 Christ is crucified betwene two thieves. 28 He saith vnto the ch. 37 Ioh. 8. 12. I am the light of the world.

And *anon in the dawning, the hie Priestes helde a Councill with the Elders, and the Scribes and the whole Councill, and Mat. 27. 1
Ioh. 22. 66.
Ioh. 18. 19

S. MARKE.

bound Iesus, and led him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

2 Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he answered, and said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the Iie Priests accused him of many things.

Mat. 27. 4 * Wherefore Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou
12. Luke nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee.

23. 3. 5 But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marvelled.

26. 18. 35 6 Now at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whom euer they would desire.

7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bound with his fellows, that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murder.

8 And the people cried aloud, and began to desire that hee would doe as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Then Pilate answered them, and said Will ye that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 For he knew that the Iie Priests had deliuered him of enuy.

11 But the Iie Priests had incited the people to desire that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them What will ye then that I doe with him, whom ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said vnto them, But what euill hath he done? And they cried the more fiercely, Crucifie him.

15 So Pilate willing to content the people, loosed them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that hee might be crucified.

16 Then the soldiers led him away into the hall, which is the common hall, and called together the whole band.

17 And cladde him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about his head.

18 And began to smite him, saying Hail King of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and spet vpon him, and bowed the knees, and did him reverence.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

Mat. 27. 21 * And they compelled one that passed by, called Simon of
22. Luke Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, and was rather of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse.

23. 33. 22 * And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which
26. 19. 17 is by interpretation, the place of dead mens skulles.

CHAP. XV.

23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe, but he receiued it not.

24 *And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots for them, what euery man should haue. *Luke 23 34*

25 And it was the third houre, when they crucified him.

26 And the title of his cause was written about, **THAT KING OF THE IEWES.**

27 They crucified also with him two theeues, the one on the right hand, and the other on his left.

28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, *And hee was counted among the wicked. *Isa 53.12.*

29 And they that went by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, *Hey, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, *Job. 2. 19.*

30 Save thy selfe, and come downe from the crosse.

31 Likewise also euen his Priests mocking said among themselves with the Scribes, He saued other men, himselfe he cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel now come downe from the crosse, that we may see and beleue. They also that were crucified with him reviled him.

33 ¶ Now when the sixth houre was come, darkenesse arose ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voice, saying, *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? *Psal. 22. 1. mat. 27. 46.*

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, sayd, Behold he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a * sponge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let him alone: Let vs see if Elias will come and take him downe. *Psal 69. 22.*

37 And Iesus cryed with a loud voice, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And the vail of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the toppe to the bottome.

39 Now when the Centurion, which stood ouer against him, saw that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Sonne of God.

40 ¶ There were also women, which beheld a farre off, among whome was Mary Magdalene, and Mary (the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Ioses) and Salome,

41 Which also when he was in Galile, * followed him, and ministered vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem. *Luke 8. 2.*

S. MARKE.

Mat. 27.

53.

Luke 23

50. John

19. 58.

42 * And nowe when the night was come (because it was the day of the preparation that is before the Sabbath)

43 * Ioseph of Arimathea an honourable counsellor, which also looked for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled, if hee were already dead, and called vnto him the Centurion, and asked of him whether hee had bene any while dead.

45 And when he knew the truth of the Centurion, he gave the body to Ioseph:

46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and tooke him down, & wrapped him in the linnen cloth, & laid him in a tombe that was hewn out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre:

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary Ioes mother, beheld where he should be laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Of Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Mary Magdalene & others. 15 He sendeth his Apostles to preach. 19 His ascension.

Luke 24 1.

John 20. 1.

ANd * when the Sabbath day was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames, and Salome, bought sweete ointments that they might come, and anoint him.

2 Therefore early in the morning, the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was now risen.

3 And they said one to another, Who shall roll vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they sawe that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one)

Mat. 28. 1.

John 20. 12.

5 * So they went into the sepulchre, and saw a young man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: and they were sore troubled.

6 But he said vnto them, Be not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath bene crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they put him.

Cl. op. 14.

28 Mar.

26 32.

7 But goe your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that hee will goe before you into Galile: there shall ye see him, * as he said vnto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fledde from the sepulchre: for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

John 20 16

Luke 8. 2.

9 * And when Iesus was risen againe, early the first day of the weeke, hee appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out of whome hee had cast seven devils.

C H A P. I.

10 And hee went and tolde them that had beene with him, which mourned and wept.

11 And when they heard that hee was alive, and had appeared to her, they beleueed it not.

12 ¶ After that, hee appeared vnto two of them in another forme, as they walked and went into the countrey. Luke 24. 13.

13 And they went, and told it to the remnant, neither beleueed they them.

14 ¶ Finally, he appeared vnto the eleven as they sat together, and reproched them for their vnbeliefe and hardnesse of heart, because they beleueed not them which had seene him, being risen vp againe. Luke 24. 36. Iohn 20. 19.

15 And he said vnto them, * Goe yee into all the world, and preach the Gospell to every creature. Mat. 28. 19.

16 He that shall beleuee and be baptized, shall be saved: * but he that wil not beleue, shall be damned. Iohn. 12. 48. Acts 16.

17 And these tokens shall follow them that beleue, * In my Name they shall cast out deuils, & * shall speake with new tongues, Acts 2. 4. 10. 16.

18 * And shall take away serpents, and if they shall drinke any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them: * they shall lay their hands on the sicke, and they shall recover. Acts 28. 5. 28. 8.

19 * So after the Lord had spoken vnto them, hee was receiued into heauen, and sat at the right hand of God. Luke 24. 51.

20 And they went forth, and preached euery where. And the Lord wrought with them, and confirmed the word with signes that followed, AMEN. Heb. 2. 4.

¶ THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS Christ according to Luke.

C H A P. I.

1 Lukes Preface. 5 Zacharias and Elisabeth. 15 That as one Iohn should be. 25 Zacharias stricken dumb for his incredulitie. 26 The Angel salueth Mary, & foretelleth Christs natiuitie. 39 Mary visiteth Elisabeth. 46 Mariess song. 68 The song of Zacharias, shewing that the promised Christ is come. 76 The office of Iohn.



Or as much as many haue taken in hand to set forth the storie of those things, whereof we are fully perswaded,

2 As they haue deliuered them vnto vs which from the beginning saw them their felues, and were ministers of the word,

S. L V K E.

3 It seemed good also to me (most noble Theophilus) as soon as I had searched out perfectly all things from the beginning, to write vnto thee thereof from point to point,

4 That thou mightest acknowledge the certaintie of those things, whereof thou hast bene instructed.

1. Chr. 24.
2.

5 **I**N the time of Herode King of Iudea, there was a certaine Priest named Zacharias, of the *coure of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabet.

6 Both were iust before God, and walked in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, without reproofe.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabet was barren: and both were well stricken in age.

Exo. 30.7

8 And it came to passe, as he executed the Priests office before God, as his coure came in order,

9 *According to the custome of the Priests office his lot was to burne incense, when he went into the Temple of the Lord.

Leuit. 16.
17.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were without in prayer, * while the incense was burning.

11 Then appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing at the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, hee was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the Angel said vnto him Feare not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elisabet shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall neither drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his mothers wombe.

Mal. 4.5.

16 *And many of the children of Israel shall be turned to their Lord God.

Mat. 11.
24.

17 *For he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the iust men, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 Then Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife is of a great age.

19 And the Angel answered, and said vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God: and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shew thee these good tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, & not be able to speake, vntill

CHAP. I.

untill the day that these things be done, because thou beleuedst not my words, which shalbe fulfilled in their season.

21 Now the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he taried so long in the Temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speake vnto them: then they perceined that he had seene a vision in the Temple: for hee made signes vnto them, and remained dumbe.

23 And it came to passe, when the dayes of his office were fulfilled, that he departed to his owne house.

24 And after these dayes his wife Elisabet conceived, and hid her selfe sixe moneths, sayi g.

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take from me my rebuke among men.

26 ¶ And in the sixth moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth,

27 * To a virgine affianced to a man whose name was Ioseph, *Mat. 1.18* of the house of David, and the virgins name was Mary.

28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and said, Haile thou *that art* freely beloved, the Lord is wth thee: blessed *art* thou among women.

29 And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and thought what maner of salutation that should be.

30 Then the Angell said vnto her, Feare not, Marie: for thou hast found fauour with God.

31 * For loe thou shalt conceive in thy wombe, and beare a *sonne*, * and shalt call his Name I E S V S. *Isa. 7.14. Chap. 2.22*

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the sonne of the most High, and the Lord shall giue vnto him the throne of his father David. *Mat. 1.21*

33 * And he shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for ever, and of his kingdome shalbe none end. *Dan. 7.14, 27. micah*

34 Then said Mary vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not man? *47.*

35 And the Angel answered, and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the most High shall ouershadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be borne of thee, shall be called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabet, she hath also conceived a sonne in her old age: and this is her sixt moneth, which was called barren.

37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible.

38 Then Mary said, Behold the seruant of the Lord: be it vnto me, according to thy word, So the Angel departed from her.

39 And

S. L V K E.

39 ¶ And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill country with haste to a citie of Iuda.

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, & saluted Elisabet.

41 And it came to passe as Elisabet heard the salutation of Mary, the babe sprang in her belly, and Elisabet was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she cryed with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, because the fruit of thy wombe is blessed.

43 And whence cometh this to mee, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For loe, as soone as the voyce of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my belly for ioy.

45 And blessed is she that belueued: for those things shall be performed, which were told her from the Lord.

46 Then Mary said, My soule magnifieth the Lord.

47 And my spirit reioyceth in God my Sautour.

48 For he hath looked on the poore degree of his seruant, for behold, from henceforth shall all ages call me blessed.

49 Because he that is mightie, hath done for me great things, and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercie is from generation to generation on them that feare him.

Isa. 51. 9. 51 *He hath shewed strength with his arme: * he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

Isa. 53. 10. 52 * He hath put downe the mighty from their seates, and exalted them of low degree.

I. Sa. 2. 6. 53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and sent away the rich empty.

Psal. 34. 10. 54 * He hath upholden Israel his seruant to be mindfull of his mercie,

I. Sa. 30. 18. 55 (*As he hath spoken to our fathers, so was, to Abraham, and *and 41. 8.* his seede) for ever.

and 34. 5. 56 ¶ And Mary abode with her about three moneths: after, she *reue. 31. 5.* returned to her owne house.

Gen. 17. 39. 57 ¶ Now Elisabets time was fulfilled that she should be deliuered, and she brought forth a sonne.

and 22. 17. 58 And her neighbours, & cousins heard tell, how the Lord had shewed his great mercy vpon her, and they * reioyced with her.

I. Sa. 132. 11. 59 And it was so that on the eight day, they came to circumcise the babe, and called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

2. Cor. 14. 60 But his mother answered, and said, Not so, but he shall be called Iohn.

C H A P. I.

61 And they laid vnto her, There is none of thy kindred, that is named with this name.

62 Then they made signes to his father, how hee would haue him called.

63 So he asked for writing tables, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn, and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue, and he spake and prayed God.

65 Then feare came on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and all these wordes were noised abroade throughout all the hill countries of Iudea.

66 And all they that heard them, layd them vp in their hearts, saying, What maner child shall this be! and the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, because hee hath visited and * redeemed his people,

69 * And hath raised vp the horn of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid,

70 * As hee spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which were since the world began, saying,

71 That he would send vs deliuerance from our enemies, and from the hands of all that hate vs,

72 That he might shew mercy towards our fathers, and remember his holy covenant,

73 * And the othe which he swore to our father Abraham,

74 Which was, that he would graunt vnto vs, that wee being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, should serue him without feare,

75 All the dayes of our life, in * holinesse and righteousness before him.

76 And thou babe, shalt bee called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes,

77 And to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their finnes,

78 Through the tender mercie of our God, whereby * the day spring from an high, hath visited vs,

79 To giue light to them that sit in darknesse, and in the shadow of death, and to guide our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and

was

I was restored to it former state, as read in some copies.

Chap 2 30
mar. 1. 2.
Psal. 132.
11.
Jer. 23 6.
Ez. 30. 10.

Gene. 22.
16. 17.
33. 17.
1. Pet. 1.
15.

Zeck. 3. 8.
E. 6. 12.
mala 4. 2

was in the wilderness, till the day came that he should shew himselfe vnto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus Cesar taxeth all the world. 7 Christ is borne. 13 The Angels joy. 21 Christ is circumcised. 22 Mary purified. 28 Simeon taketh Christ in his armes. 29 His name. 36 Anna the Prophetesse. 40 The child Christ. 46 Jesus disputeth with the doctors.

AND it came to passe in those daies, that there came a decree from Augustus Cesar that all the world should be taxed.

2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenus was gouernour of Syria)

3 Therefore went all to be taxed, euery man to his owne city.

John 7.
42.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile, out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the citie of * David, which is called Beth lehem (because he was of the house and lineage of David)

5 To be taxed with Mary that was giuen him to wife, which was with child.

6 ¶ And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be deliuered.

7 And she brought forth her first begotten Sonne, and wrapped him in swathing clothes, and laide him in a cratch, because there was no room for them in the Inne.

8 ¶ And there were in the same countrey shepheards, abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night over their focke.

9 And loe, the Angell of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 Then the Angel said vnto them, Be not afraid: for behold, I bring you glad tidings of great ioy, that shalbe to all the people:

11 Forasmuch, that vnto you is borne this day in the citie of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe to you, Ye shal find the babe swaddled, and laide in a cratch.

13 And straightway there was with the Angel a multitude of heavenly souldiers, praying God, and saying,

14 Glory be to God in the hie heauens, and peace in earth, and towards men good will.

15 And it came to passe when the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, that the shepheards saide one to another, Let vs goe then vnto Beth lehem, and see this thing that is come to passe, which the Lord hath shewed vnto vs.

16 So they came with haste, and found both Mary and Ioseph, and

CHAP. II.

and the babe laid in the cratch.

17 And when they had seene it, they published abroad the thing, which was told them of that childe.

18 And all that heard it, wondered at the things which were told them of the shepheards.

19 But Mary kept all those sayings, and pondered *them* in her heart.

20 And the shepheards returned glorifying and praising God, for all that they had heard, and seene, as it was spoken vnto them.

21 ¶ And when the eight dayes were accomplished, that they should circumsise the childe, his name was then called * I E S V S, which was named of the Angel, before hee was concciued in the wombe.

22 ¶ And when the dayes of her purification after the Lawe of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord,

23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, * Every man child that *first* openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to the Lord)

24 And to giue an oblation, * as it is commanded in the Lawe of the Lord, a paire of turtle doves, or two yong pigeons.

25 And beholde, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon; this man was iust, and feared God, and waited for the consolation of Israel, and the holy Ghost was vpon him.

26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before hee had seene that Anointed of the Lord.

27 And hee came by the *motion* of the Spirit into the Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to doe for him after the custome of the Law,

28 Then he tooke him in his armes, and praised God, and said,

29 Lorde, now letteth thou thy seruant depart in peace, according to thy word,

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation,

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people.

32 A light to be reueiled to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marvelled at those things, which were spoken touching him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Mary his mother, Behold, this *childe* is appointed for the *fall* and rising againe of many in Israel, and for a signe which shalbe spoken against:

35 (Yea and a sword shall pearce through thy soule) that the thoughts

Gen. 17.

12. leuit.

12. 3. ioh.

7. 22.

Cap. 1. 31

mat. 1. 21.

Leu. 12. 6.

Exo. 13. 2

num. 8. 16.

Leu. 12. 6.

2. 18. 14.

rom. 9. 32

1. 11. 2. 8.

thoughts of many hearts may be opened.

36 And there was a Prophetesse, one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, after shee had liued with an husband tenen yeeres from her virginitie:

37 And she was a widow about fourescore and sonre yeeres, and went not out of the Temple, but serued God with fasting and prayers, night and day.

38 Shee then comming at the same instant vpon them confessed likewise the Lord, and spake of him to all that looked for redemption in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne city Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong in Spirit, and was filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was with him.

Deu. 16.1

41 ¶ Now his parents went to Hierusalem euery yeere, * at the feast of the Passouer.

42 And when he was twelue yeere old, and they were come vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast,

43 And had finished the daies thereof, as they returned, the childe Iesus remained in Hierusalem, and Ioseph knewe not, nor his mother,

44 But they supposing that he had beene in the company, went a dayes iourney, and sought him among their kinsfolke, and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned backe to Hierusalem, and sought him.

46 And it came to passe three daies after, that they found him in the Temple, sitting in the middes of the doctours, both hearing them, and asking them questions:

47 And all that heard him, were astonied at his vnderstanding, and answers.

48 So when they saw him, they were amazed, and his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? beholde, thy father and I haue sought thee with very heauie hearts.

49 Then said he vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? knew ye not that I must goe about my Fathers businesse?

50 But they vnderstood not the word that he spake to them.

51 Then he went downe with them, & came to Nazareth, and was subiect to the, & his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisdom, and stature, and in fauour with God and men.

C H A P. III.

4 *Iohn exhorteth to repentance.* 15 *His testimonie of Christ.* 20 *Herode putteth him in prison.* 21 *Christ is baptized.* 23 *His pedigree.*

NOW in the fifteenth yere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, & his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 (*When Annas & Caiaphas were the h'e Priests, the word of God came vnto Iohn the ionne of Zacharias in the wilderness.

3 *And he came into all the coasts about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of sinnes,

4 As it is written in the booke of the sayings of Esaias the Prophet, which saith, * The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his pathis straight.

5 Euerie valley shall be filled, and euerie mountain and hill shall be brought lowe, and crooked things shalbe made straight, and the rough wayes *sha'be made smooth.*

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God,

7 Then said he to the people that were come out to be baptized of him, * O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy amendment of life, and begin not to say with your selues, We haue Abraham to our father: for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children to Abraham.

9 Now also is the axe layd vnto the roote of the trees, therefore euerie tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, shalbe hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 ¶ Then the people asked him, saying, What shall wee doe then?

11 And he answered and said vnto them, * Hee that hath two coates, let him par with him that hath none: and hee that hath meate, let him doe likewise.

12 Then came there Publicanes also to bee baptized, and sayd vnto him, Master, What shall we doe?

13 And he said vnto them, Require no more then that which is appointed vnto you.

14 The souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we doe? And he sayd vnto them, Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 As the people waited, and all men mused in their hearts of Iohn, if he were not that Christ,

Acts 4.6

*Matth. 3. 2
marke 1. 4*

*Isa 40. 3
Iohn 1. 23*

Matth 3. 7

*Iam 2. 15
1. Iohn 3
17.*

S. I V K E.

Mat. 3.11 16 Iohn answered, and said to them all, *In deepe I baptize you
marke 1.8 with water, but one stronger then I, cometh, whose shooes latchet
Iohn 1.26 I am not worthy to vnloose: hee will baptize you with the holy
act. 1.5 Ghost, and with fire.

and 8.4 17 Whose fanne is in his hand, and hee will make cleane his
and 11.16 floor, and will gather the wheate into his garner, but the chaffe will
and 19.4 be burie vp with fire that neuer shall be quenched.

18 Thus then exhorting with many other things, he preached
vnto the people.

Mat. 14.3 19 * But when Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for
marke 6 Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the evils which He-
27 rod had done,

20 He added yet this aboue all, that hee slant vp Iohn in prison.

Mat. 3.13 21 * Now it came to passe as all the people were baptized,
marke 1.9 and that Iesus was baptized and did pray, that the heaven was
Iohn 1.32 opened:

22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape like a
dove vpon him. and there was a voice from heauen, saying, Thou
art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleased.

23 ¶ And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirtie yeere of age,
being as men suppoled the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne
of Eli,

24 The sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Leui, the sonne of Melchi,
the sonne of Ianna, the sonne of Ioseph,

25 The sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Amos, the sonne of Na-
um, the sonne of Eli, the sonne of Nage,

26 The sonne of Maath, the sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Se-
mei, the sonne of Ioseph, the sonne of Iuda,

27 The sonne of Ioanna, the sonne of Rhesa, the sonne of Zoro-
babel, the sonne of Salathiel, the sonne of Neui,

28 The sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Addi, the sonne of Cosam,
the sonne of Elnodan, the sonne of Er,

29 ¶ The sonne of Iose, the sonne of Eliczer, the sonne of Iorim,
the sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Leui,

30 The sonne of Simon, the sonne of Iuda, the sonne of Ioseph,
the sonne of Iohan, the sonne of Elacim,

31 The sonne of Melea, the sonne of Mainan, the sonne of Matta-
tha, the sonne of Nathan, the sonne of David,

32 The sonne of Iesse, the sonne of Obed, the sonne of Booz, the
sonne of Salomon, the sonne of Nafion,

33 The sonne of Aminadab, the sonne of Aram, the sonne of El-
acim, the sonne of Phares, the sonne of Iuda,

C H A P. IIII.

34 *The sonne of Iakob, the sonne of Isaac, the sonne of Abraham, the sonne of Thara, the sonne of Nachor,*

35 *The sonne of Saruch, the sonne of Ragau, the sonne of Phalec, the sonne of Eber, the sonne of Sala,*

36 *The sonne of Caman, the sonne of Arphaxad, the sonne of Sem, the sonne of Noe, the sonne of Lamech,*

37 *The sonne of Mathusala, the sonne of Enoch, the sonne of Jared, the sonne of Maleel, the sonne of Canan,*

38 *The sonne of Enos, the sonne of Seth, the sonne of Adam, the sonne of God.*

C H A P. IIII.

1 *Christes temptation and fasting. 16 Hee teacheth in Nazareth to the great admiration of all. 24 A prophet that teacheth in his owne country is contemned. 33 One possessed of the deuill is cured. 38 Peters mother in lawe healed, 40 and diuers sick persons are restored to health. 41 The deuils acknowledge Christ.*

ANd Iesus full of the holy Ghost returned from Iordan, and was led by that Spirit into the wildein fle,

2 * And was there fourtie dayes tempted of the deuill, and in those dayes he did eate nothing: but when they were ended, he afterwards was hungrye.

3 Then the deuill said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 But Iesus answered him, sayinge, It is written, * That man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery word of God.

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into an high mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, in the twinkling of an eye.

6 And the deuill sayd vnto him All this power wil I giue thee, and the glory of those king domes: for that is deliuered to me: and to whom soeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shall be all thine.

8 But Iesus answered him and said, Hence from me Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him alone thou shalt serue.

9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the Temple: and said vnto him, If thou bee the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence.

10 For it is written, * That he will giue his Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee.

11 And with their handes they shall lift thee vp, least at any

Mat. 4. 1.
mar. 1. 12.

Deu. 8. 3.
mat. 4. 4.

Deut. 6.
13. & 10.
20.

Psal. 91.
12.

S. L V K E.

Mat. 6. 16

time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone.

12 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, It is said, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the deuill had ended all the tentation, he departed from him for a little season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned by the power of the spirit into Galilee: and there went a fame of him throughout all the region round about.

15 For hee taught in their Synagogues, and was honoured of all men.

Mat. 13.

54 mar.

6. 1. ioh 4.

43.

16 * And he came to Nazareth where he had bene brought vp, and (as his custome was) went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day and stood vp to read.

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias: and when hee had opened the booke, hee found the place, where it was written,

3. 6. 1. i.

18 * The Spirit of the Lord is vpon me, because he hath anoynted me, that I should preach the Gospel to the poore: he hath sent mee that I should heale the broken hearted, that I should preach deliuerance to the captiues, and recovering of sight to the blinde, that I should set at libertie them that are bound,

19 And that I should preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord.

20 And he closed the booke and gaut it againe to the minifter, and satte downe, and the eyes of all that were in the Synagogue, were fastned on him.

21 Then hee beganne to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondered at the gracions words, which proceeded out of his mouth, and said, Is not this Iosephs sonne?

23 Then hee said vnto them, Yee will surely say vnto mee this prouerbe, Physition, heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer wee haue heard done in Capernaum, doe it here likewise in thine owne country.

3. ioh 4. 44

24 And he said, Verely I say vnto you, * No Prophet is accepted in his owne country.

1. Kings

17. 9. 1. m.

5. 17.

25 But I tell you of a trueth, many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of * Elias, when heauen was shut three yeeres and sixe monethes, when great famine was throughout all the land,

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, save into Sarepta a citie of Sidon, vnto a certaine widow.

2. Kings

5. 14.

27 Also many lepers were in Israel, in the time of * Elisens the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane, sauing Naaman the

C H A P. I I I I.

the Syrian.

18 Then all *that were* in the Synagogue, when they heard it, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, and led him vnto the edge of the hill, whereon their citie was built, to cast him downe headlong.

30 But he passed through the mids of them, and went his way,

31 ¶ And came downe into Capernaum a citie of Galile, and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

32 ¶ And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his word was with authoritie.

33 ¶ And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, which cried with a lowde voyce,

34 Saying, Oh, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know who thou art, *euen* the Holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. Then the deuill throwing him in the middes of *them*, came out of him and hurt him nothing at all.

36 So feare came on them al, and they spake among themselues, saying, What thing is this? for with authoritie and power he commandeth the foule spirits, and they come out.

37 And the same of him spred abroad throughout all the places of the country round about.

38 ¶ And hee rose vp, and came out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house. And Simons wifes mother was taken with a great feuer, and they requiied him for her.

39 Then hee stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her, and immediatly shee arose and ministred vnto them.

40 Now at the sunne setting, all they that had sicke *so* / *les* of diuers diseases, brought them vnto him, and he layde his hands on eery one of them, and healed them.

41 ¶ And deuils also came out of many, crying, and saying: Thou art that Christ the sonne of God: but hee rebuked them, and suffered them not to say that they knewe him to bee that Christ.

42 And when it was day, hee departed and went soorth into a desert place, and the people sought him, and came to him, and kept him that he should not depart from them.

43 But hee said vnto them, Surely I must also preach the kingdom of God to other citiest for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

Mat. 4. 13.

Mat. 1. 21.

Mat. 7. 29.

Mat. 1. 22.

Mat. 1. 23.

Mat. 8. 14.

Mat. 1. 30.

Mat. 1. 35.

1 Christ teacheth out of the shippe. 6 Of the draught of fishes. 13 The Lepre. 17 Christ prayeth in the desert. 18 One sicke of the palseie. 27 Lent the Publicane. 34 The fistines and afflictions of the Apostles after Christes ascension. 36. 37. 38 Faint hearted and weake disciples are likened to olde bussels and worne garments.

Mat. 4. 23.
Mar. 1. 16.

Then * it came to passe, as the people pressed vpon him to heare the word of God, that hee stood by the lake of Gennezaret,

2 And saw two shippes stand by the lakes side, but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the shippes, which was Simons, and required him that hee would thrust off a little from the land: and he late downe, and taught the people out of the shippe.

4 Now when hee had left speaking, hee said vnto Simon, Launch out into the deepe, and let downe your nettes to make a draught.

5 Then Simon answered, and said vnto him, Master, we haue trauailed sore all night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheless if thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had so done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, so that their net brake.

7 And they beckned to their partners which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them, who came then, and filled both the shippes that they did finke.

8 Now when Simon Peter saw it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Lord, goe from me; for I am a sinfull man.

9 For hee was viterly astonished, and all that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke.

10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus said vnto Simon, Feare not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought the shippes to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

Mat. 8. 2.

Mar. 1. 40.

12 * Now it came to passe, as hee was in a certaine citie, behold, there was a man full of leprosie, and when he saw Iesus, hee fell on his face, and besought him saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 So hee stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him,

C H A P. V.

14 And he commanded him that he should tell it no man but
 gre, *sath* he, and shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy clea-
 ning, as * Moises hath comanded, for a witnesse vnto them.

Leui, 14. 3

15 Not so much more went there a fame abroade of him, and
 great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed of him
 of their infirmities.

16 But he kept himselfe apart in the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 ¶ And it came passe, on a certaine day, as he was teaching,
 that the Pharises, and doctors of the Law sate by, which were come
 out of every towne of Galile, and Iudea, and Hierusalem, and the
 power of the Lord was *in him* to heale them.

18 * Then behold, men brought a man lying in a bed, which
 was taken with a palsey, and they sought meanes to bring him in,
 and lay him before him.

Matth. 9. 2
Mark. 2. 3

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might
 bring him in, because of the presse, they went vp on the house and
 let him downe through theILING, bed and all, in the mids before
 Iesus.

20 And when hee saw their faith, hee said vnto him, Man, thy
 finnes are forgiven thee.

21 Then the Scribes and the Pharises began to reason, saying,
 Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can forgive finnes,
 but God onely?

22 But when Iesus perceined their reasoning, he answered, and
 sayd vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy finnes are forgiven thee, or
 to say, Rise and walke?

24 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath autho-
 rity to forgive finnes on earth, (he sayd vnto the sicke of the pal-
 sey) I say to thee Arise; take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house.

25 And immediately hee rose vp before them, and tooke vp
 his bed whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, praying
 God,

26 And they were all amased, & praised God, & were filled with
 feare, saying, Doubtlesse we haue seene strange things to day.

27 ¶ * And after that he went forth, and saw a Publicane na-
 med Leui, sitting at the receite or custome, and sayd vnto him,
 Follow me.

Matth. 9. 9
Mark. 2. 14

28 And he left all, rose vp, and followed him.

29 Then Leui made him a great feast in his owne house, where
 there was a great company of Publicanes, and of other that ate at
 table with them.

S. L V K E.

30 But they that were Scribes and Pharises among them, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eat ye and drinke ye with Publicans and sinners?

31 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, They that are whole neede not the Phisitian, but they that are sicke.

32 * I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ Then they sayd vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn fast often, and pray, and the disciples of the Pharises also, but thine eate and drinke?

34 And hee sayd vnto them, Can yee make the children of the wedding chamber to fast, as long as the bridegrome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, euen when the bridegrome shall be taken away from them: then shall they fast in thole dayes.

36 Againe he spake also vnto them a parable. No man putteth a piece of a new garment into an old vestute: for then the new renteth it, and the piece taken out of the newe, agreeth not with the olde.

37 Alio no man powreth newe wine into olde vessels: for then the new wine will breake the vessels, and it will runne out, and the vessels will perill.

38 But new wine must be powred into new vessels: so both are preriued.

39 Also no man that drinketh olde wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is more profitable.

C H A P. V I.

1 The disciples pull the eares of corne on the Sabbath. 6 Of him that had a withered hand. 13 The election of the Apostles. 20 The blessings and cursings. 27 We must loue our enemies. 46 With what fruit: the word of God is to be heard.

And * it came to passe on a second Iolenne Sabbath, that hee went through the corne fieldes, and his disciples plucked the eares of corne and did eate, and rubbe them in their hands.

2 And certaine of the Pharises sayd vnto them, Why doe yee that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 Then Iesus answered them, and sayd, * Hane yee not read this, that Dauid did when hee himielfe was an hungred, and they which were with him,

4 How he went into the house of God, and tooke, and ate the shewbread, and gaue alio to them which were with him, which was not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priests onely?

5 And he sayd vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath day.

1. Tim. i

15.

Mat. 9. 14

Mat. 2. 18

Mat. 12. 1

Mat. 2. 23

1. Sam.

21. 6.

Exod 29

33. leuit.

8 31. Mat. 1

24. 9.

CHAP. VI.

6 ¶ It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that hee entered into the Synagoue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hand was dried vp. *Math. 12 19. Marke 3. 2*

7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether hee would heale on the Sabbath day, that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But hee knewe their thoughts, and sayd to the man which had the withered hand, Arise and stand vp in the mids. And hee arose, and stood vp.

9 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to do good, or to doe euill? to laue life, or to destroy it?

10 And he beheld them all in compasse, and said vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored againe as whole as the other.

11 Then they were filled full of madnesse, and communed one with another, what they might doe to Iesus.

12 ¶ And it came to passe in thole dayes, that hee went into a mountaine to pray, and spent the night in prayer to God.

13 And when it was day, he called his disciples, and of them chose twelue, which also he called Apostles. *(chap. 9. 2 Math. 10 1 Mar 3. 13 and 6. 7)*

14 (Simon whom he named also Peter, and Andrew his brother, Iames and Iohn, Philip, and Bartlemew:

15 Matthew and Thomas: Iames the sonne of Alphæus, and Simon called Zealous.

16 Iudas Iames brother, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitour)

17 Then he came downe with them, and stood in a plaine place, with the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Ierusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyrus and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ And he lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and sayd, *Matth. 5. 3* Blessed be ye poure: for yours is the kingdome of God.

21 * Blessed are ye that hunger now: for yee shall be satisfied. *(Isai 56. 13)*

* Blessed are ye that weepe now: for yee shall laugh. *(Isai 61. 3)*

22 * Blessed are yee when men hate you, and when they separate you, and reuile you, and put out your name as euill, for the

Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and bee glad: for behold, your reward is great in heauen: for after this maner their fathers did to the Prophets.

Anot. 6.1 24 * But woe be to you *that are rich*: for ye haue receiued your consolation.

Jsa. 65.13 25 * Woe be to you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe be to you that now laugh: for ye shall waile and weepe.

26 Woe be to you when all men speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

Mat. 5.44 27 * But I say vnto you which heare, Love your enemies: doe well to them which hate you.

28 Blesse them that curse you, & pray for them which hurt you.

Mat. 5. 9 29 * And vnto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheeke, offer
2. Cor. 6.7 also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take the coat also.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee: and of him that taketh away the *things that be* thine, aske them not againe.

Mat. 7.12 31 * And as ye would that men should doe to you, so doe ye to them likewise.

Mat. 5.46 32 * For if ye loue them which loue you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners loue those that loue them.

33 And if ye do good for them which doe good for you, what thanke shall ye haue: for euen the sinners doe the same.

Mat. 5.42 34 * And if ye lend to *them* of whom ye hope to receiue, what
Leu. 15.8 thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners lend to sinners, to receiue the like.

35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies, and doe good, and lend, looking for nothing againe: and your reward shall be great, and

Mat. 5.45 ye shall be the children * of the most High: for he is kinde vnto the vniuersall, and to the euill.

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.

Mat. 7.1 37 * Iudge not: and ye shall not be iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven.

Mat. 7.2 38 Giue, and it shall bee giuen vnto you: * a good measure
mar. 4.23 pressed downe, shalke together, and running ouer shall men giue

Mat. 15 into your bolome: for with what measure ye mete, with the same shall me mete to you againe.

Mat. 10 39 And he make a parable vnto them, * Can the blinde leade
24.10.11 the blinde: shall they not both fall into the ditch?

13.16 and 40 * The discipple is not above his master: but whosoever will
15.20 be a perfect discipple, shall be as his master.

Mat. 7.3 41 * And why seekest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, and
considerest

C H A P. VII.

considerest not the beame, that is in thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let mee pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou seest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrites, cast out the beame out of thine owne eye first, and then shalt thou see perfectly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 ¶ For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euill fruite: Mat. 7. 17
neither an euill tree, that bringeth forth good fruite.

44 ¶ For every tree is knowen by his owne fruite: ¶ for neither Mat. 12.
of thornes gather men figs, nor of bushes gather they grapes, 53.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good, and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart bringeth forth euill: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. Mat. 7. 16.

46 ¶ But why call yee me Lord, Lord, and doe not the things that I speake? Mat. 7. 21

47 Who soeuer commeth to mee, and heareth my words, and doeth the same, I will shew you to whom he is like: Rom. 2. 13.
James 1.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and layd the foundation on a rocke: and when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, and could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke. 21.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth, without foundation, against which the flood did beat, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that house was great.

C H A P. VII.

1 Of the Centurions seruant. 9 The Centurions faith. 11 The miracles some raised from death at Naim. 19 Iohn blesseth his disciples to glory. 33 His peculiar kinde of liuing. 37 The sinfull woman wasteth Iesus feete.

When ¶ he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. Mat. 8. 5.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruant was sicke and readie to die, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes beseeching him that he would come, & heale his seruant.

4 So they came to Iesus, and he ought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy, that he should doe this for him:

5 For he loveth our nation, and hee hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them: but when hee was now not farr from the house, the Centurion sent friendes to him, saying
vnto

S. I. V. K. E.

vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofer

7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say the word, and my seruant shalbe whole:

8 For I likewise am a man set vnder authoritie, and haue vnder me souldiers, and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he commeth, and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, hee marvelled at him, and turned him, and said to the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house, they found the seruant that was sicke, whole.

11 And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude.

12 Now when hee came neere to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man caried out, who was the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widow, and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And hee went and touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stood still) and he said, Young man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sat vp, and began to speake, and hee deliuered him to his mother.

16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumor of him went soorth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things.

19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another?

20 And when the men were come vnto him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or shall we waite for another?

21 And at that time he cured many of their sickneses, & plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many blind men he gaue sight freely.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Goe your wayes and shew Iohn what things yee haue seene and heard: that the blinde

CHAP. VII.

blinde see, the halt goe, the Lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, and the poore receiue the Gospel.

23 And blessed is he, that shall not be offended in me.

24 And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, hee began to speake vnto the people, of Iohn, What went yee out into the wildernesse to see? A reede shaken with the wind?

25 But what went yee out to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? behold, they which are gorgeously appaelled, and liue delicately, are in Kings courts.

26 But what went yee swooth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say to you, and greater then a Prophet.

27 This is hee of whom it is written, * Behold, I sent my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

Mat. 3. 1.

28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheless, he that is the least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Lawe despised the counsell of God against themselves, and were not baptized of him.

31 * And the Lord said, Whereunto shall I liken the men of this generation? and what thing are they like vnto?

Mat. 11. 16,

32 They are like vnto little children sitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and saying, Wee haue piped vnto you, and yee haue not danced. wee haue mourned to you, and yee haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and yee say, He hath the deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth and drinketh: and yee say, Behold a man which is a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friend of Publicanes and sinners:

35 But wisdom is iustified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharises desired him that hee would eate with him: and he went into the Pharises house, and sate downe to table.

37 And behold a woman in the citie which was a sinner, when she knew that Iesus sate at table in the Pharises house, shee brought a hore of oyntment,

38 * And the flood at his feete behind him weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares and did wipe them with the haire of her head, and kissed his feete, & anoynted them with the oyntment.

Mar. 15. 42. Iohn 20. 11.

59 Now

S. I V K E.

39 Now when the Pharise which had him, sawe it, hee spake within himselfe, saying, If this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue knowne who, and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him: for shee is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee, And he said, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine lender which had two debtors: the one ought fise hundred pence, and the other fittie:

42 When they had nothing to pay, hee forgane them both: Which of them therefore, tell me, will loue him most?

43 Simon answered, and said, I suppose that hee to whom hee forgane most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast truely iudged.

44 Then he turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, and thou gauest mee no water to my feete, but shee hath washed my feete with teares, and wiped them with the haire of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but shee, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feete.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddest not anoynt: but shee hath anoynted my feete with oylment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, Many finnes are forgiven here: for shee loued much. To whom a litle is forgiven, he doth loue a litle.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy finnes are forgiven thee.

49 And they that sat at table with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that enen forgiveth finnes?

50 And hee said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee: goe in peace.

C H A P V I I I.

2 *Woman that anoynted vnto Christ of a precious ointment. 4 The parable of the farmer. 16 The miracle. 19 Christ's mother and brethren. 22 Hee rebuketh the scribes. 26 Of Lazarus. 27 The Galileans receive Christ. 41 Lazarus daughter healed. 43 The woman deliuered from the issue of blood. 52 Weeping for the dead.*

AND it came to passe afterward, that he himselfe went through Ierusalem and towne, preaching and publishing the kingdom of God, and the twelve were with him.

2 And certaine women which were healed of euill spirits and infirmities: as * Marie which was called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils.

3 And Iohna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance.

C H A P. VIII.

4 * Nowe when much people were gathered together and were come vnto him out of all cities, he spake by a parable. *Math. 13.3*
marke 4.1

5 A sower went out to sowe his seede, and as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and it was troden vnder fete, and the fowles of heauen deuoured it vp.

6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked moistnesse.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp and bare fruit, an hundred fold. And as he said these things, he cried, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 Then his disciples asked him, demanding what parable that was.

10 And he sayd, Vnto you it is given to know the secrets of the kingdome of God, but to other in parables, that when * they see, *Isai 6.9*
they should not see, & when they heare they should not vnderstand. *Mat. 13.14*

11 * The parable is this, The seede is the word of God. *mar. 4.13*

12 And they that are beside the way, are they that heare: afterward cometh the deuill, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should beleue, and be saved. *Mat. 13.18*

13 But they that are on the stones, are they which when they haue heard, receiue the word with ioy: but they haue no rootes: which for a while beleue, but in the time of temptation goe away. *Math. 13.18*
marke 4.15

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares and with riches, and voluptuous living, and bring forth no fruit.

15 But that which fell in good ground, are they which with an honest and good heart heare the word, and keepe it, and bring forth fruit with patience. *Cha. 11.33*

16 * No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it vnder a vessel, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but setteth it on a candlesticke that they that enter in may see the light. *Mat. 5.13*
mar. 4.11
Cha. 12.2

17 * For nothing is hid, that shall not be euident: neither anything hid, that shall not be known, and come to light. *Mat. 10.26*
mar. 4.22

18 Take heede therefore how ye heare: for * whosoever hath, to him shall be given: and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth that he hath. *Cha. 19.26*
Mat. 13.12
mar. 4.25

19 * Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come nere to him for the preasse. *mar. 4.25*
Math. 12

20 And it was tolde him by certaine, which sayd, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, and would see thee. *46. marke*
3.32

S. L Y K E.

Mat. 8. 23
mar. 4. 36

21 But he answered, and sayd vnto them, My mother, and my brethren are these which heare the word of God, and doe it.

22 ¶ And it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into a shp with his disciples, and he sayd vnto them, Let vs goe out vnto the other side of the lake. And they lancht forth.

23 And as they sailed, he fell asleepe, and there came dowie a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in icopardie.

24 Then they went to him and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the waves of water: and they ceased, and it was calme.

25 Then he said vnto them, Where is your faith? and they feared and wondred among themselues, saying. Who is this that commandeth both the winds and water, and they obey him!

Mat 8. 28
marke 5. 1

26 ¶ So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile.

27 And as hee went out to land, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and hee ware no garment, neither abode in house, but in the graues.

28 And when he saw Iesus, he cryed out, and fell downe before him, and with a loud voice sayd. What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not:

29 For hee commanded the foule spirit to come out of the man: (for oft times he had caught him: therefore he was bound with chaines, and kept in fetters, but he brake the bands, and was caried of the deuill into wildeineses.)

30 Then Iesus asked him, saying. What is thy name? and hee said, Legion, becaule many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that hee would not command them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was there by, an herde of many swine, feeding on an hill: and the deuils: belought him, that he would suffer them to enter into them. So he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herde was caried with violence from a sleepe downe place into the lake, and was choked.

34 When the herdmen saw what was done, they fled: & when they were departed, they told it in the citie, and in the country.

35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde:

and

CHAP. VIII.

and they were aſaide.

36 They alſo which ſaw it, told them by what meanes hee that was poſſeſſed with the deſuill, was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenes, beſought him that he would depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ſhip, and returned.

38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, beſought him that hee might be with him, but Ieſus ſent him away, ſaying,

39 Returne into thine owne houſe, and ſhew what great things God hath done to thee. So hee went his way, & preached throughout all the citie, what great things Ieſus had done vnto him.

40 ¶ And it came to paſſe, when Ieſus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all waited for him.

41 ¶ And behold, there came a man named Iairus, and he was the ruler of the Synagoge, who fell downe at Ieſus ſeete, and beſought him that he would come into his houſe. Mat. 9. 18
Mat. 5. 23.

42 For he had but a daughter onely, about twelue yeeres of age, and ſhe lay a dying, (and as he went, the people thronged him.

43 And a woman hauing an iſſue of blood, twelue yeeres long, which had ſpent all her ſubſtance vpon Phyſicians, and could not be healed of any:

44 When ſhe came behind him, ſhe touched the hemme of his garment, and immediatly her iſſue of blood ſtanchd.

45 Then Ieſus ſaid, Who is it that hath touched mee? When euery man denied, Peter ſaid, and they that were with him, Maſter, the multitude thruſt thee, and tread on thee, and ſayelt thou, Who hath touched me?

46 And Ieſus ſaid, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman ſawe that ſhee was not hid, ſhee came trembling, and fell downe before him, and told him before all the people, for what cauſe ſhe had touched him, and how ſhee was healed immediatly.

48 And hee ſaid vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath ſaued thee, goe in peace.)

49 While hee yet ſpake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues houſe, which ſaid to him, Thy daughter is dead: diſt thou not the Maſter.

50 When Ieſus heard it, he answered him, ſaying, Feare not: beleeue onely, and ſhe ſhal be ſaued.

51 And when hee went into the houſe, hee ſuſcited no man to

S. L Y K E.

goe in with him (sane Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and mother of the maide,

51 And all wept and sorrowed for her: but he said, Weepe not: for she is not dead, but sleepeth.

52 And they laught him to scorne, knowing that she was dead.

53 So hee thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and cryed, saying Maide, arise.

54 And her spirit came againe, and shee arose straightway: and he commanded to giue her meate

55 Then her parents were astonied: but hee commanded them that they should tell no man what was done.

C H A P. I X.

1 The Apostles are sent to preach. 7 and 19 The common peoples opinion of Christ. 12 Of the five loaves and two fishes. 20 The Apostles confession. 24 To lose the life. 35 We must hear Christ. 37 The possessed of a spirit. 45 Strive a new the Apostles for the Primacy. 49 One casting out devils in Christs Name. 52 The Samaritanes will not receive Christ. 55 Reuenge forbidden. 57. 59. 61 Of three that would follow Christ, but on diuers conditions.

Mat. 10. 1 **T**HEN *called hee his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuils, and to heale diuers.

Mat. 5. 13. and 6. 7. 2 * And hee sent them forth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the sicke.

Mat. 10. 7 3 And he said to them, * Take nothing to your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coates apiece.

Mat. 10. 9 4 And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

Mat. 10. 11 5 And how many sorner will not receiue you, when ye get out of that city, * shake off the very dust of your feet for a testimonye against them.

Mat. 10. 12. 6 And they went out, and went through euery towne preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where.

Mat. 13. 51 7 ¶ * Now Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he doubted, seeing that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the dead.

Mat. 14. 1 8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the old Prophets was risen againe.

Mat. 6. 14. 9 Then Herod said, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is this of whom I heare such things? and he desired to see him.

Mat. 6. 14. 10 ¶ * And when the Apostles returned, they tolde him what

C H A P. IX.

great things they had done. * Then hee tooke them to him, and went aside into a solitary place, *neere* to the citie called Bethsaida.

11 But when the people knew it, they followed him: and he receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede to be healed.

12 * And when the day began to wear away, the twelue came, and said vnto him, Send the people away that they may goe into the townes and villages round about, and lodge, and get meat: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said, We haue no more but five loaves and two fishes, except we should goe and buy meate for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. Then he said to his disciples, Causethem to sit downe by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and caused all to sit downe.

16 Then he tooke the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and ble sed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples, to set before the people.

17 So they did eate, and were satisfied: and there was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue baskets full of broken meate.

18 * And it came to passe as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answered and said, Iohn Baptist: and others say Elias: and some say, that one of the old Prophets is risen againe.

20 And he said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answered and said, That Christ of God.

21 And hee warned and commanded them, that they should tell that to no man.

22 Saying, * The Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be reprobued of the Elders, and of the hie Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine, and the third day rise againe.

23 * And hee saide to them all, If any man will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse dayly, and follow me.

24 * For whosoener will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoener shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it.

25 * For what advantaget it a man, if hee winne the whole world, and destroy himselfe, or lose himselfe?

26 * For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his glory, and in the glory of the Father and of the holy

Mat. 14.
13 mar.
6.32.

Mat. 14.
15 mar. 6.
35. 26. 6. 3

Mat. 16.
13 mar.
8. 7.

Mat. 17.
22 mar.
8. 31.

Chap. 14.
27. mat.
10. 38.

Mat. 16. 24
mar. 8. 34
Chap. 17.

35. mat.
10. 30. and
16. 25.

Mat. 16.
26. mar.
8. 36.

Chap. 12. 9.
mat. 10. 33
mar. 8. 38.

2. 11. 2.
12.

S. L V K E.

Mat. 16. 27 * And I tell you of a suretie, there be some standing here,
28. mar. which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome
9. 1. of God.

Mat. 17. 2 28 * And it came to passe about an eight dayes after those
mar. 9. 2. words, that he tooke Peter and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into
 a mountaine to pray.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was chan-
 ged, and his garment was white and glistered.

30 And behold, two men talked with him, which were Moses
 and Elias:

31 Which appeared in glory, and told of his departing, which
 he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heauy with
 sleepe, and when they awoke, they saw his glory, and the two men
 standing with him.

33 And it came to passe as they departed from him, Peter said
 vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to bee here: let vs therefore
 make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one
 for Elias. and wist not what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, & overshadowed
 them, and they feared when they were entring into the cloud.

2. Pet. 1. 35 * And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is
17. that my beloued Sonne, heare him.

36 And when the voice was past, Iesus was found alone, and
 they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes any of those
 things which they had seene.

37 ¶ And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe
 from the mountaine, much people met him.

Mat. 17. 38 * And behold a man of the company cryed out, saying, Ma-
24. mar. ster, I beseech thee, behold my sonne: for he is all that I haue.

9. 17. 39 And loe a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and he
 teareth him, that he someth, and hardly departeth from him, when
 he hath bruised him.

40 Now I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they
 could not.

41 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse and
 crooked, how long now shall I be with you and suffer you? bring
 thy sonne hither.

42 And whiles he was yet comming, the deuill sent him, and
 tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, and healed the
 child, and deliuered him to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God:
 and

CHAP. IX.

and while they all wondered at all things, which Iesus did, he said vnto his disciples,

44 Marke these words diligently: * for it shall come to passe, *Mat. 17. 22. mar. 9. 31.*

45 But they vnderstode not that word: for it was hid from them, so that they could not perceine it: and they feared to aske him of that word.

46 ¶ Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest. *Mat. 18. 2. mar. 9. 35.*

47 When Iesus saw the thoughts of their hearts, hee tooke a little child, and set him by him,

48 And said vnto them, Whosoever receiveth this little childe in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me: for hee that is least among you all, he shall be great.

49 ¶ And Iohn answered and said Master, we saw one calling out devils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because he followeth thee not with vs. *Mat. 9. 38.*

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Forbid ye him not: for he that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the dayes were accomplished, that he should be received vp, he tested himselfe fully to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before him: and they went and entred into a towne of the Samaritans, to prepare him *lodging.*

53 But they would not receive him, because his behaviour was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and Iohn sawe it, they said, Lord, wilt thou that wee command, that fire come downe from heaven and consume them, even as * I has did? *2. King. 1. 10. 12. 17.*

55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not of what spirit ye are.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. Then they went to another towne.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way, * a certaine man said vnto him, I will follow thee, Lord, whithersoever thou goest. *Mat. 8. 19.*

58 And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes have holes, and the birdes of the heaven nests, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head.

59 But he said vnto another, Follow me. And the same saide, Lord, suffer me first to goe and burie my father.

S. L V K E.

60 And Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but goe thou, and preach the kingdome of God.

61 Then another said, I will follow thee, Lord: but let me first goe bid them farewell, which are at mine house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh backe, is apt to the kingdome of God.

C H A P. X.

1 The seuerie disciples. 10 The thankfull cities charged with sinners. 17 The disciples returning home, are warned to be humble. 20 Who is exalted lowest. 38 Of Martha and her sister Marie.

Mat 10. 1 **A**fter * these things the Lord appointed other tenenty also, and sent them two and two before him into euery citie and place, whither he himselfe should come.

Mat. 9 57 2 And he saide vnto them, * The harvest is great, but the labourers are few: pray therefore the Lord of the harvest to send forth labourers into his harvest.

Mat. 10. 16 3 * Goe you waies: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

2 Km. 4 29. 4 Bearer no bagge, neither scrippe, nor shooes, and * salute no man by the way.

Mat 10. 12. 5 * And into whatsoeuer house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

Mat. 6. 10 6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon him: if not, it shall returne vpon you againe.

Dent. 24. 14. Mat. 10. 10. 7 And in that house eery thing eating and drinking such things as by then *shall be necessary*, * for the labourer is worthy of his wages: Goe not from house to house.

Mat. 5. 18. 8 * But into whatsoeuer citie ye shall enter if they receive you, cate such things as are set before you.

Mat. 10. 11. 9 And heale the sicke that are there, and say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come nere vnto you.

10 But into whatsoeuer citie ye shall enter, if they will not receive you go your wayes out into the streetes of the same, and say,

Chap. 9 5. 11 Euen the very * dust, which cleaueth on vs of your citie, we wipe off against you: notwithstanding know this, that the kingdome of God was come nere vnto you.

12 For I say vnto you, that it shall be easier in that day for them of Sodom then for that citie.

Mat. 11. 21. 13 * Woe be to thee, Chorazin: woe be to thee, Bethsaida: for if the miracles had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue bene done in you, they had a great while agoone repented,

sitting

CHAP. X.

sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Therefore it shall bee easie for Tyrus and Sidon, at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

16 *He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, *Mat. 10.*
despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me. *40. ioh. 1*

17 ¶ And the leuentie turned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen *15. 20.*
the devils are subdred to vs through thy Name.

18 And he said vnto them, I saw Satan, like lightning, fall downe from heauen.

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to tread on Serpents, and Scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall hurt you.

20 Neuerthelesse, in this reioyce not, that the spirits are subdred vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirit, and saide, I confesse vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast *Mat. 13.*
did these things from the wise and vnderstanding, and hast reueiled *10.*
them to babes: euen so, Father, because it so pleased thee. ¶

22 All things are giuen me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father, neither who the Father is, *Mat. 13.*
saue the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile him. *10.*

23 ¶ And hee turned to his disciples, and said secretly, * Blessed *Mat. 22.*
are the eyes, which see that ye see. *55. mat. 12. 28.*

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets and Kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them. *Deut. 6. 5.*

25 ¶ * Then beheld, a certaine Lawyer stood vp. and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I doe, to inherite eternall life? *Leuit. 19.*

26 And he said vnto him, What is written in the Lawe? how readest thou? *18.*

27 And he answered, and said, * Thou shalt loue thy Lord God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, & with all thy strength, and with all thy thought, * and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 Then he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this doe, and then shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answered, and said, A certaine man went downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, & fell among threunes, and they robbed him.

[Then he turned to his disciples, and said, as read in some copies. *Mat. 13. 10. Mat. 22. 55. mat. 12. 28. Deut. 6. 5. Leuit. 19. 18.*]

S. L V K E.

him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him halfe dead.

31 Now so it fell out, that there came downe a certaine Priest that same way, & when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise also a Leuite, when he was come neere to the place, went and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 Then a certaine Samaritane, as hee ionrneved, came neere vnto him, and when he saw him, he had compafion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle, and wine, and put him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him.

35 And on the morow when hee departed, hee tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and said vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I will recompense thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe as they went, that he entred into a certaine towne, and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Iesus feet, and heard his preaching.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing, and came to him, and said, Master, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore, that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou carest, and art troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needfull, Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken a way from her.

C H A P. XI.

1 He teacheth his Apostles to pray. 14 The dumbe deuill driveth out. 27 A woman of the common listeth vp her voice. 29 The Iewes require signes 37 He being feasted of the Pharise, reproveth the outward shew of holinesse.

AND so it was, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray: as Iohn also taught his disciples.

2 *And hee said vnto them, When yee pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy kingdome come: Let thy will be done, even in earth, as it is in heauen,

Mat. 69

CHAP. XI.

3 Our daily bread giue vs for the day :

4 And forgive vs our sinnes : for euen wee forgive every man that is indebted to vs : and lead vs not into temptation : but deliver vs from euill.

5 ¶ Moreover hee said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall goe to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loanes :

6 For a friend of mine is come out of the way to mee, and I haue nothing to set before him :

7 And he within should answere, and say, Trouble me not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed : I cannot rise and giue them to thee.

8 I say vnto you, though he would not arise and giue him, because he is his friend, yet doubtlesse because of his importunitie, he would rise, and giue him as many as he needed.

9 * And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall be giuen you : seeke, and ye shall finde : knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you.

10 * For every one that aske h, receiueth : and he that seeketh, findeth : and to him that knocketh it shall be opened

11 * If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he giue him a stone ? or if he aske a fish, will hee for a fish giue him a serpent ?

12 Or if he aske an egge, will he giue him a scorpion ?

13 If yee then which are euill can giue good giutes vnto your children, how much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost, to them that desue him ?

14 ¶ Then hee cast out a deuill which was dumbe : and when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake, and the people wondred.

15 But some of them said, * He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the devils.

16 And others tempted him, seeking of him a signe frō heauen.

17 But hee knewe their thoughts, and said vnto them, * Every kingdome diuided against it selfe, shall be desolate, and an house diuided against an house, falleth.

18 So if Satan also bee diuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdome stand, because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub ?

19 If I through Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom doe your children cast them out ? Therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But if I by the finger of God cast out devils, doubtlesse the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

21 When a strong man armed, keepeth his place, the things that

Mat. 7. 7.
and 21. 22

marke 11.
24. 10. 11.

14. 13.
and 16. 13

james 1. 5
Mat. 7. 8

Mat. 7. 9
Mat. 9. 32

and 12. 22
Mat. 9. 34

and 12. 24
mar. 3. 22.

Mat. 12.
25. mar. 3.

24.

that he possesseth are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then he cometh vpon him, and ouercommeth him, hee taketh from him all his armour wherein hee trotted, and diuiderh his spoiles.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

Mat. 12. 43. 24 *When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and when he findeth none, hee sayth, I will returne vnto mine house whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth that swept and garnished.

Heb. 6. 4. 2. pet. 2. 20. 26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him euery other spirit worse than himselfe: and they enter in and dwell there: * for the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe as he said these things, a certaine woman of the company lifted vp her voice, and said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather, blessed are they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

Mat. 12. 28. 59. Iona. 1. 12. 29 ¶ *And when the people were gathered thicke together, hee began to say, This is a wicked generation, they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe bee giuen them, but the signe of * Ionas the Prophet.

30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Ninuites: so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

1. King. 10. 1. 2. chio. 9. 1. 31 * The Queen of the South shall rise in iudgement, with the men of this generation, and shall condemne them: for she came from the vtmost parts of the earth to heare the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

Jona. 3. 5. 32 The men of Ninue shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for they repented * at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas is here.

Chap 8. 16. Mat. 5. 15. 23. 24. 25. 26. 33 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priue place, neither vnder a bushell: but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.

Mat. 5. 22. 34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye bee euill, then thy body is darke.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkened.

36 If therefore thy whole body be light, having no part darke, then shall all be light, euen as when a candle doth light thee with the brightnesse.

C H A P. XI.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and late downe at table.

38 And when the Pharise saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 ¶ And the Lord said to him, In deed ye Pharisee make cleane *Mat. 23.* the outside of the cup, and of the platter: but the inward part is *25.* full of rauening and wickednesse.

40 Ye fooles, did not hee that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 Therefore, give almes of those things which you haue, and behold all things shall be cleane to you.

42 But woe be to you, Pharises: for ye riue the mint, & the rowe, and all manner herbes, and passe ouer iudgement & the loue of God: these ought ye to haue done, & not to haue left the other vndone.

43 ¶ Woe be to you, Pharises: for ye loue the vppermost seats *Chap. 23.* in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets. *46.*

44 Woe be to you, Scribes and Pharisees hypocrites: * for ye *Mat. 23. 6.* are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer *Mat. 23.* them, perceiue not *38 39.*

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and saide vnto him: *Mat. 23.* Master, thus saying thou putttest vs to rebuke also. *27.*

46 And he said, Woe be to you also, ye Lawyers: * for ye lade *Mat. 23. 4.* men with burdens grieuous to be borne, and ye your selues touch *Mat. 23. 10.* not the burdens with one of your fingers

47 Woe be to you: * for ye build the sepulchres of the Pro- *Mat. 23.* phets, and your fathers killed them. *29.*

48 Truly yee beare witnesse, and allow the deedes of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore said the wise dome of God, I will send them Pro- phets & Apostles, and of them they shall slay and persecute away,

50 That the blood of all the Prophets, shed from the founda- tion of the world, may be required of this generation.

51 From the blood of * Abel vnto the blood of * Zacharias, *Gen. 4. 8.* which was slaine betweene the Altar and the Temple: verely I *2 Chr. 24.* say vnto you, it shall be required of this generation. *21.*

52 Woe be to you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: yee entred not in your ioues, and them that came in, ye forbide.

53 And as he said these things vnto them, the Scribes & Pharises began to urge him sore, & to prouoke him to speak of many things,

54 Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch some thing of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

S. L V K E.
C H A P. XII.

1 The leauen of the Pharises. 5 Who is to be feared. 8 To confesse Christ. 17 The parable of the rich man whose lande was veri fruitful. 22 Not to care for earthly things. 31 but to seeke the kingdome of God. 39 The sheefe in the night. 51 Debate for the Gospells sake.

Mat. 16 5
mar. 8. 14 **I**N * the meane time, there gathered together an innnumerable multitude of people, so that they trode one another: and he began to say vnto his disciples first, Take heed to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie.

Matth. 10
26. mar.
4 22. **2** * For there is nothing couered, that shall not be reueiled: neither hid that shall not be knownen.

3 Wherefore whatsoeuer yee haue spoken in darkenesse, it shall be heard in the light: and that which yee haue spoken in the eare, in secret places, shalbe preached on the houises.

Matth. 10.
28. **4** * And I say vnto you, my friends, be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that are not able to doe any more.

5 But I will forewarne you, whom yee shall feare: feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say vnto you, him feare.

6 Are not fise sparowes bought for two farthings, and yet not one of them is forgotten before God?

1. Sam. 14
45. m. tes
27 34.
Chap. 9.
26. mar.
10. 32.
mar. 8 38.
2 lms 1.
12.
Matth. 12.
31. marke
3. 28. 1.
1ohn 5.
15.
Mat. 10.
19. mark.
13. 11. **7** * Yea, and all the haues of your head are numbred: feare not therefore, ye are more of value then many sparowes.

8 * Also I say vnto you, Who(euer shall confesse me before men, him shall the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God.

9 But he that shall deny me before men, shalbe denied before the Angels of God.

10 * And whosoener shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shalbe forgiven him: but vnto him that shall blaipheme the holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven.

11 * And when they shall bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and princes, take no thought how, or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall speake

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 And one of the company saide vnto him, Master, bid my brother diuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he sayd vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a diuider ouer you?

15 Wherefore he saide vnto them, Take heede, and beware of

courtous-

C H A P. XII.

countonelle: for though a man haue abundance, yet his life standeth not in his riches.

16 And he put forth a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought forth fruits plentifully.

17 Therefore he thought with himselfe, saying, What shall I doe, because I haue not *room*, where I may lay vp my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do, I will pull downe my barnes and build greater, & therein will I gather all my fruits, and my goods,

19 And I will say to my selfe, Soule, thou hast much goods layde vp for many yeeres: liewe at ease, eate, drinke, and take thy pastime.

20 But God said vnto him, O foole, this night will they fetch away thy soule from thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

21 So is hee that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not rich in God.

22 And he spake vnto his disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, * Take no thought for your life, what yee shall eate: neither for

23 The life is more then meate: and the body more then the raiment.

24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reape: which neither haue storehouse nor barne, and yet God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then fowles:

25 And which of you with taking thought, can adde to his stature one cubite?

26 If ye then be not able to doe the least thing, why take yee thought for the remnant?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they labour not, neither spinne they: yet I say vnto you, that Salomon himselfe in all his royaltie was not clothed like one of these.

28 If then God so cloth the grasse which is to day in the field, and to morow is cast into the ouen, how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 Therefore aske not what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drinke, neither hang you in suspence.

30 For all such things the people of the world seeke for: and your Father knoweth that ye haue neede of these things.

31 But rather seeke ye after the kingdome of God, and all these things shall be cast vpon you.

32 Feare not little flocke: for it is your Fathers pleasure, to give you the kingdome,

S. I V K E.

Mal. 6.
20.

33 ¶ Sell that ye haue, and giue almes : make you bags which waxe not olde, a treasure that can neuer faile in heauen, where no thiefe commeth, neither moth corrupteth.

1 Pet. 1.
13.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your hearts be also.

35 ¶ Let your loynes bee girt about, and your lightes burning,

36 And ye your selues like vnto men that waite for their master, when he will returne from the wedding, then when he cometh and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those seruants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall finde waking: Verely I say vnto you, hee will girde him selfe about, and make them to sit downe at table, and will come forth, and serue them.

Matt. 24.
43. reuel.
16. 15.
and 3. 3.

38 And if he come in the second watch, or come in the thirde watch, and shall finde them so, blessed are those seruants.

39 ¶ Now vnderstand this, that if the good man of the house had knowen at what houre the thiefe would haue come, he would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be digged through.

40 Be ye also prepared therefore : for the Sonne of man will come at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who is a faithfull steward, and wise, whom the master shall make ruler ouer his household, to giue them their portion of meate in season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his master when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

44 Or a trouth I say vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But if that seruant say in his heart, My master doeth defer his coming, and shall begin to inuite the seruants, and maidens, and to eate, and drinke, and to be drunken :

46 The master of that seruant will come in a day when he thinketh not, and at an houre when he is not ware of, and will cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbelieuers.

47 ¶ And that seruant that knewe his masters will, and prepared not himselfe, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But he that knew it not, and yet did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes : for vnto whom soeuer much is giuen, of him shall much bee required, and to whom

CHAP. XIII.

Men much commit, the more w^{ill} I am will they aske.

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth, and what is my desire, if it be already kindled?

50 Notwithstanding I must be baptizd with a baptisme, and how am I grieved till it be ended?

51 *Thinke yee that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but rather debate. Mat. 10. 34.

52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be divided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ *Then said hee to the people, When yee see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway ye say, A thowre commeth: and so it is. Mat. 16. 2

55 And when ye see the South wind blow, ye say, that it will be hote: and it commeth to passe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why discern ye not this time?

57 Yea, and why iudge ye not of your selues what is right?

58 ¶ *While thou goest with thine adversary to the ruler, as thou art in the way, give diligence in the way, that thou mayest be delivered from him, lest he draw thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliver thee to the payler, and the payler cast thee into prison. Mat. 5. 25

59 I tell thee thou shalt not depart thence, till thou halt payed the vtmost mite.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Of the Galileans, 4 and those that were slaine under Sion. 6 The sinner that bare no fruit. 11 The woman vnto with the spirit of sinistritie, that is, with a case brought on her by Satan, is healed. 19 The parable of the graine of mustard seed. 21 Of leaven. 23 How few shall be saved. 32 How shall hee save.

THere were certaine men present at the same tyme, that shewed him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Suppose yee, that these Galileans were greater sinners then all the other Galileans, because they haue suffered such things?

3 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall all likewise perishe,

4 Or thinke you that those eighteen, vpon whome the towne

in Siloam fell, and slewe them, were sinners aboue all men that dwell in Hierusalem?

5 I tell you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, yee shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a figtree planted in his vineyard: and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he to the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, this three yeeres haue I come and sought fruit of this figtree, and finde none: cut it downe: why keepeth it also the ground barren?

8 And he answered, and said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yeere also, till I digge round about it, and dung it.

9 And if it beare fruit, well: if not, then after thou shalt cut it downe.

10 ¶ And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath day.

11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eightene yeeres, and was bowed together, and could not liue vp her selfe in any wise.

12 When Iesus saw her, hee called her to him, and said to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly she was made straight againe, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and said vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come & be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then answered him the Lord, and sayd, Hypocrite, doeth not each one of you on the Sabbath day looke his oxe or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, loe, eightene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: but all the people reioyced at all the excellent things, that were done by him.

Mat. 13. 18 ¶ * Then said hee, What is the kingdome of God like? or
31. Marke whereto shall I compare it?

438. 19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree, and the fowles of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof.

Mat. 13. 20. ¶ * And againe hee saide, Wherunto shall I liken the
330. kingdome

kingdome of God?

21 Is it like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hidde in three peckes of flowre, till all was leauened.

22 ¶ And he went through all cities and townes, teaching and journeying towards Hierusalem. *Mat. 9*

23 Then sayd one vnto him, Lord, are there few that shall bee *35. mat. 6.*

saued? And he sayd vnto them,

24 ¶ Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say vnto *Mat. 7.*

you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able. *13.*

25 When the goodman of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and yee begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shall answer and say vnto you, I know you not whence ye are,

26 Then shall ye begin to say. Wee haue eaten and drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

27 ¶ But he shal say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of iniquitie. *Mat. 7. 23 & 25. 31. psal. 6.*

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth, when yee shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores.

29 Then shall come many from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit at table in the kingdome of God.

30 ¶ And behold, there are last, which shall be first, and these are first, which shall be last. *Mat. 19. 30 & 30. 16 mar. 10. 31.*

31 The same day there came certaine Pharises, and sayd vnto him, Depart, and goe hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 Then sayd he vnto them, Goe ye and tell that foxe, Beholde, I cast out devils, and will heale still to day, and to morowe, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Neuertheless I must walke to day, and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusalem.

34 ¶ O Hierusalem Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent to thee how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her broode vnder her wings, and ye would not. *Mat. 23. 37.*

35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tell you, ye shall not see it vntill the tyme come that yee shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord,

C H A P. XIII.

1 The droppe brealed on the Sabbath. 8 The chiefe places at banquets.

less. 12 The poore must bee called to our feasts. 16 Of those that were bid to the great Supper. 23 Some compelled to come in. 28 One about to build a towre.

AND it came to passe that when he was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharisees on the Sabbath day, to eat bread, they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharisees, saying is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. Then he tooke him and healed him, and let him goe.

5 And answered them, saying. Which of you shall haue an asse or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to the things.

7 ¶ Hee spake also a parable to the pharisees, when hee marked how they chose out the chiefe rooms, and layd vnto them.

8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, let not thou sit downe in the chiefe place, lest a more honourable man then thou, be bidden of him,

9 And he that hath bidde both him and thee come, and say to thee, Give this man room, and thou then begin with thame to take the loweste room.

Pro. 25 7. 10 * But when thou art bidden, go and sit downe in the loweste room, that when he that hath bidde thee cometh, he may say vnto thee, Friend sit vp here: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee.

Cap. 18 11 * For whoso exalteth himselfe, shall be brought lowe, and
14 mat. 23 he that humbleth himselfe shall be exalted.

23 12. 12 ¶ Then sayd he also to him that had bidden him, * When
Pro. 5. 27 thou makest a dinner or supper, call not thy friends nor thy bre-
Job 4 7 thren, neither thy brethren, nor the rich neer abouts, lest they also bid thee againe, and recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maymed, the lame, and the blinde.

14 And thou shalt be blessed, because they cannot recompence thee: for thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ Now when one of them that sat at table, heard these things he sayd vnto him, Blessed is he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God,

C H A P. XLIII.

16 Then said he to him, * A certaine man made a great supper, *Mat. 22. 1*
and bad many, *Luc. 19.*

17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were
bidden, Come: for all things are now ready.

18 But they all with one *munde* began to make excuse: The first
said unto him, I have bought a farme, and I must needs goe out
and see it: I will pay thee thine hire excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I goe
to plow: but I will pay thee thine hire excused.

20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I can
not come.

21 So that servant returned, and shewed his master these things.
Then was the good man of the house angrie, & said to his servant,
Goe out quickly into the streets and lanes of the citie, and bring
in hither the poore, and the maymed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commaun-
ded and yet there is room.

23 Then the Master said to the servant, Goe out into the hie
wayes, and the by-ways, and compeyle them to come in, that mine house
may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bid-
den shall taste of my supper.

25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and he turned
and said unto them.

26 * If any man come to mee, and hate not his father, and mo-
ther and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters yea, and his
owne liues, he cannot be my disciple. *Mat. 10. 37.*

27 * And whosoever beareth not his crosse, and commeth after *Chap. 9.*
mee, cannot be my disciple. *19. Mat.*

28 For which of you minding to build a tower, stretcheth not
downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to
performe it. *16. 22. Mat. 8. 24.*

29 For what after he hath layde the foundation and is not able
to performe it, all that behold it, begin to mocke him.

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make
it.

31 Or what king going to make warre against a nother king sit-
teth not downe first, and taketh counsell, whether he be able with
ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twen-
tie thousand.

32 Or else while he is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambaf-
sage, and desireth peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

Mat. 5. 13; Mar. 9. 50. 34 * Salt is good: but if salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted?

35 It is neither meet for the land, and yet for the dounghill, but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

C H A P. XV.

6 *The parable of the lost sheepe.* 8 *Of the groate,* 11 *And of the prodigall sonne.*

For, drew neere. **T**HEN resorted vnto him all the Publicanes, and sinners to heare him.

2 Therefore the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying, Hee receiveth sinners and eateth with them.

3 Then spake he this parable to them, saying,

Mat. 18. 12. 4 * What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if hee lose one of them, doeth not leave ninetie and nine in the wilderness, and goe after that which is lost, vntill he finde it?

5 And when hee hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders with ioy.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with mee: for I haue found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shalbe in heaven for one sinner that conuerteth, more then for ninetie and nine iust men, which neede none amendment of life.

8 Either what woman hauing ten groates; if shee lose one groat, doeth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seeke diligently till shee finde it?

9 And when shee hath found it, shee calleth her friends, and neighbours, saying, Reioyce with me: for I haue found the groat which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, for one sinner that conuerteth.

11 ¶ He said moreover, A certaine man had two sonnes.

12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, giue mee the portion of the goods that falleth to me. So hee diuided vnto them his substance.

13 So not many dayes after, when the younger sonne had gathered all together, hee tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there he wasted his goods with ryotous liuing.

14 Now when hee had spent all, there arose a great dearth throughout that land, and he began to be in necessitie.

15 Then

C H A P. XV.

15 Then hee went and claue to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him to his farme, to seede swine,

16 And hee would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes that the swine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.

17 Then hee came to himselfe, and said, How many hired seruants at my fathers haue bread enough, and I die for hunger?

18 I will rise and goe to my Father, and say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired seruants.

20 So he arose and came to his father, and when hee was yet a great way off, his father sawe him, and had compassion, and ranne and fell on his necke and kissed him.

21 And *h*is sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, & before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 Then the father said to his seruants, Bring forth the best robe and put it on him, & put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feete.

23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, and let vs eate, and be merrier

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aline againe; and he was lost, but he is found. And they began to be merrie.

25 Now the elder brother was in the field, and when hee came and drew neere to the house, he heard melodie and dauncing,

26 And called one of his seruants, and asked what those things meant.

27 And hee said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatte calfe, because hee hath receiued him safe and sound.

28 Then he was angrie, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out and entreated him.

29 But hee answered, and said to his father, Loe, these many yeres haue I done thee seruice, neither brake I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest me a kid, that I might make merrie with my friends.

30 But when this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou hast for his sake killed the fat calfe.

31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue, is thine. It was meeete that we should make merrie and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aline againe: and he was lost, but he is found.

C H A P. XVI.

1 The parable of the Stewards accused to his master. 13 To serue

S. L V K E.

two masters. 16 The Law and the Prophets. 19 Of Dives and Lazarus.

AND he said also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine rich man, which had a steward, and he was accused vnto him, that he wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said vnto him. How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an accounts of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himselfe; What shall I doe? For my master taketh away from me the stewardship. I cannot dig, and to begge I am ashamed.

4 I know what I will doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 Then called hee vnto him every one of his masters debtors, and said to the first, How much owest thou vnto my master?

6 And he said. An hundred measures of oyle. And he said to him, Take thy writing, and set downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then said hee to another, How much owest thou? And hee said, An hundred measures of wheate. Then he said to him, Take thy writing, and write fourscore.

8 And the Lord commended the uniuert steward, because hee had done wisely. Wherefore the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquitie, that when yee shall want, they may receiue you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in the least, he is also faithfull in much: and he that is uniuert in the least, is uniuert also in much.

11 If then ye haue not bene faithfull in the wicked riches, who will trust you in the true treasure?

12 And if ye haue not bene faithfull in another mans goods, who shall giue you that which is yours?

Mat. 6 24. 13 * No seruant can serue two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and loue the other: or else hee shall leaue to the one, and despise the other. Yee cannot serue God and riches.

14 All these things heard the Pharisees also, which were couetous, and they scoffed at him.

15 Then hee said vnto them, Yee are they, which iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

Mat. 11. 16 * The Lawe and the Prophets, *enforced* vntill Iohn: and since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man preacht

C H A P. XVI.

preache into it.

17 * Now it is more easie that heauen and earth should passe away, then that one title of the Law should fall. Matt. 5. 18

18 ¶ Whoſoener putteth away his wife, and marieth another, committeth adultery : and whoſoever marieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adulterie. Matt. 5. 32
and 19. 9
1. cor. 7. 11

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man which was clothed in purple, and fine linnen, and fared well and delicately euery day.

20 Also there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was lidd at his gate full of sores,

21 And desired to bee refreshed with the crums that fell from the rich mans table : yea, and the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it was so that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also dyed, and was buried.

23 And being in hell in torments, he lift vp his eyes, and saw Abraham a faine off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 Then he cryed, and sayd, Father Abraham. haue mercie on me, & send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue : for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said. Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuest all thy pleasures, and likewise Lazarus paines : nowe there one is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulf set, so that they which would goe from hence to you cannot : neither can they come from thence to vs.

27 Then he said I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house.

28 (For I have five brethren) that hee may testifie vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham said vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophetes: let them heare them.

30 And he said Nay, father Abraham : but if one come vnto them from the dead they will amend their liues.

31 Then he said vnto him If they heare not Moses and the Prophetes, neither will they be perswaded, though one arise from the dead againe.

C H A P. XVII.

1 Offences. 3 We must forgive him that trust offend against vs. 10 We are vnpr stable creatures. 11 Of the ten leprovs. 20 Of the comming of the kingdom of heauen. 23 False Christs. 26 After what manner Christs com ming shall be.

S. L V K E,

Mat. 18.
mar. 9. 42

Then sayde hee to the disciples. * It cannot bee auoyded, but that offences will come, but woe *bee* to him by whom they come.

1 It is better for him that a great millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heede to your selues: if thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgive him.

Mat. 18.
21.

4 * And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repenteth mee, thou shalt forgive him.

5 ¶ And the Apostles sayd vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

Mat. 17.
26.

6 And the Lord sayd, * If yee had faith *as much* as is a graine of mustard seede, and should say vnto this mulberry tree, Plucke thy selfe vp by the rootes, and plant thy selfe in the sea, it should euen obey you.

7 ¶ Who is it also of you, that hauing a seruant plowing or feeding cattell, would say vnto him by and by, when he were come from the field Goe, and sit downe at table?

8 And would not rather say to him, Dresse wherewith I may suppe, and gird thy selfe, and serue mee, till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterward thou shalt eate and drinke?

9 Doeth hee thanke that seruant, because he did that which was commanded vnto him? I trow not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee haue done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are vnprofitable seruants: wee haue done that which was our duetie to doe.

11 ¶ And so it was when he went to Hierusalem, that he passed through the mids of Samaria and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine towne, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood asarte off.

13 And they liit vp their voyces, and sayd, Iesus, Master, haue mercie on vs.

Leuit. 14.

14 And when he sawe *them*, hee sayd vnto them, * Goe, shewe your selues vnto the Præstes. And it came to passe, that as they went they were clenfed.

15 Then one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voice praised God.

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, and gaue him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

17 And Iesus answered, and sayd, Are there not ten clenfed? but where *are* the nine?

C H A P. XVII.

18 There are none found that returned to giue God prayse, saue this stranger.

19 And he sayd vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath saued thee.

20 ¶ And when hee was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdome of God should come, he answered them, and sayd, The kingdome of God commeth not with obseruation.

21 Neither shall men say, Loe here, or loe there: for behold, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he sayd vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and yett shall not see it.

23 * Then they shall say to you, Behold here, or behold there: *Matth. 24*
but goe not thither, neither follow them. *23. marke*

24 For as the lightning that lightneth out of the one *par* vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other *par* vnder heauen, so shall the Sonne of man be in his day. *13. 21*

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be reprovved of this generation.

26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it bee in the dayes of the Sonne of man. *Gen 7. 1*
mat. 24. 38

27 They ate, they dranke, they married wives, and gaue in marriage vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke: and the flood came, and destroyed them all. *1. pet. 3. 20.*

28 * Likewise also, as it was in the dayes of Lot, they ate, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built. *Gen. 19. 34.*

29 But in the day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rained fire and brimstone from heauen and destroyed them all.

30 After these *ensamples* shall it be in the day when the Sonne of man is reuealed.

31 At that day hee that is vpon the house, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it out: and he that is in the field likewise, let him not turne backe, to that he left behind.

32 * Remember Lots wife.

33 * Whosoever will seeke to saue his soule, shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose it, shall get it life. *Gen. 19. 26.*

34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two in one bed: the one shall be receiued, and the other shall be left. *Chap 5. 24*
mar. 10. 39

35 Two women shall be grinding together: the one shall bee taken, and the other shall be left. *mar. 8. 35*
john 12. 25

36 Two shall be in the field: one shall be receiued, and another shall be left. *Matth. 24. 41.*

37 And

S. L V K E.

Matth. 23.
28.

37 And they answered and sayd vnto him. Where, Lord? And he sayd vnto them, * Where soeuer the bodie is, thither shall also the eagles be gathered together.

C H A P. XVIII.

2 The parable of the vniuersall iudge and the widow 10 Of the Pharise and Publicane. 15 Children are of the kingdom of heauen. 21 To sell all and come to the poore. 28 The Apostles forsake all. 31 Christ foretelleth his death. 35 The blind man receiueth sight.

Rom 12.
12. 1, thes.
5. 17.

And he spake also a parable vnto them, *to this rule*, that they ought alwayes to pray, and not to waxe faint.

2 Say now, There was a iudge in a certaine citie, which feared not God neither reuerenced man.

3 And there was a widow in that citie, which came vnto him, saying Doe me iustice against mine aduersary.

4 And he would not of a long time: but afterward hee sayd with himselfe, Though I feare not God nor reuerence man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will doe her right, lest at the last she come and make me weary.

6 And the Lord sayd Heare what the vniuersall iudge saith.

7 Now shall not God avenge his elect, which crye day and night vnto him, yea though he suffer long for them?

8 I tell you, hee will avenge them quickly: but when the Sonne of man cometh shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 He spake also this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselves that they were iust, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Pharise, and the other a publicane.

11 The Pharise stood and prayed thus with himselfe, O God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men extortioners, vnjust, adulterers or euen as this Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke: I giue tithe of all that euer I possess.

13 But the Publicane standing a farre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes to heauen, but smote his breast, saying, O God, be mercifull vnto me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man departed to his houle iustified, rather then the other: * for every man that exalteth himselfe, shall be brought low, and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

15 ¶ They brought vnto him also babes that he should touch them. And when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Suffer the babes

Chap 14
11. Matth.
22. 12.
Matth 19.
13. *marke*
10. 13.

C H A P. XVIII.

to come vnto me, and to bid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, who soeuer receiveth not the kingdom of God as a babe, he shall not enter therein.

18 * Then a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what ought I to doe to inherite eternall life? *Mat. 19. 16. mar.*

19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one *even* God. *10. 17.*

20 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit adulteries: Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witness: Honour thy father and thy mother. *Exod. 20. 13.*

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth.

22 Now when Iesus heard that, he said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing. Sell all that ever thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heauen, and come follow me.

23 But when he heard those things, he was very heavie: for he was marvellous rich.

24 And when Iesus saw him very sorrowful, he said, With what difficultie shall they that have riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

25 Surely it is easier for a camel to goe through a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 Then said they that heard it, And who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 * Then Peter said, Loe, we have left all and have followed thee. *Mat. 19. 27. mar.*

29 And hee said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Which shall not receive much more in this world, and in the world to come life everlasting.

31 * Then Iesus took vnto him the twelve, and said vnto them, Behold, we goe up to Hierusalem, and all things shall be fulfilled to the Sonne of man that are written by the Prophets. *Mat. 20. 17. mar. 10. 32.*

32 For he shall be delivered vnto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked and shall be spitefully entreated, and shall be spitte on.

33 And when they have scourged him, they will put him to death: but the third day he shall rise againe.

34 But they understood none of those things, and this saying was hidde from them, neither perceived they the things which

Mat. 20.

29. mar.

10. 46

which were spoken.

35 ¶ And it came to passe, that as hee was come neere vnto Iericho. a certaine blinde man sat by the way side begging.

36 And when hee heard the people passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they said vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 Then he cried, saying, Iesus the sonne of David, haue mercie on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that hee should hold his peace, but hee cried much more; O Sonne of David, haue mercie on me.

40 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to bee brought vnto him. And when he was come neere, he asked him,

41 Saying, what wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And hee said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee.

43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, praying God; and all the people, when they saw *thū*, gaue praye to God.

C H A P. XIX.

2 *Zaccheus the Publicane. 13 Ten pieces of money delivered to seruants to occupie withall. 29 Iesus enueth int. Hieruſal. m. 41 He foretelleth the destruction of the citie with teares 45 He casteth the sellers out of the Temple.*

NOW when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho,

2 Behold, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus, who he should be, and could not for the preasse, because he was of a low stature.

4 Wherefore hee ran before, and climed vp into a wilde figge tree, that he might see him: for he should come that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place he looked vp, and saw him, and said vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once; for to day I must abide at thine house.

6 Then he came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when all they saw it, they murmured, saying, that hee was gone in to lodge with a sinfull man.

8 And Zaccheus stood forth, and said vnto the Lord, Behold Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauſation, I restore him fourefold.

9 Then Iesus sayd to him, This day is saluation come vnto *thū*

CHAP. XIX.

this house, forasmuch as he is also become the house of Abraham.
10 *For the Son of man is come to seeke, and to save that which was lost.

11 And whiles they heard these things, he continued and spake a parable, because hee was neere to Hierusalem. and because also they thought that the kingdome of God shoulde shortly appeare.

12 Hee sayde therefore, * A certaine noble man went into a farr countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome and so to come againe.

13 And he called his ten seruants, and delivered them ten pieces of money, and said vnto them, Occupy till I come.

14 Now his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, when hee was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome, that he commanded the seruants to be called to him, to whom he gaue his money, that he might know what euery man had gained.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy piece hath increased ten pieces.

17 And hee said vnto him, Well, good seruant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very little thing, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying Lord, thy piece hath encreased five pieces.

19 And to the same hee said, Be thou also ruler ouer five cities.

20 So the other came, and said, Lord, behold thy piece, which I haue layd vp in a napkin.

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a strait man: thou takest vp that thou laydest not downe, and reapest that thou diddest not sow.

22 Then hee said vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, O euill seruant, Thou knewest that I am a straite man, taking vp that I layd not downe, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gauest thou my money into the banke, that at my coming I might haue required it with vantage?

24 And hee said to them that stood by, Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath ten pieces.

25 (And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pieces)

26 * For I say vnto you, that vnto all them that haue, it shall be giuen: and from him that hath not, even that hee hath, shall be taken

Mat. 18.

11.

Mat. 25.

14.

Chap. 8 18

Mat. 13 13

25. 29.

Mat. 4 25.

S. L V K E.

taken from him.

27 Moreover those mine enemies, which would not that I should reigne over them, bring hither and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went forth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

Mat. 21. 7
Luk. 19. 29
29 * And it came to passe, when hee was come nere to Bethphage, and Bethania, betwixt the mount which is called Olieues he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, goe yee to the towne which is before you, wherein as soon as yee are come, yee shall finde a colt tied, whereon neuer man sat: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man aske you, why doe you loose him, thus shall ye say vnto him Because the Lord hath neede of him.

32 So they that were sent, went their way, and found it as hee had said vnto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof sayd vnto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath neede of him.

Mat. 21. 7
Luk. 12. 14
35 ¶ So they brought him to Iosus, and they cast their garments on the colt, and set Iesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was now come nere to the going downe of the mount of Olieues, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce and to praye God with a loud voyce, for all the great works that they had seene.

38 Saying Blessed bee the King that cometh in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen and glory in the highest places.

39 Then some of the Pharisees of the companye said vnto Iesus, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 But he answered, and said vnto them I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would crie.

Chap. 21. 6
Mat. 21. 14
Luk. 19. 41
41 ¶ And when he was come nere, he beheld the Citie, and wept for it.

42 Saying, O if thou haddest euen knowne the least in this thy day those things which lead vnto thy peace! but now are they hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keepe thee in on every side.

44 And they shall make thee euen with the ground, and thy children which are in thee, and they shall not leane in thee a stone vpon a stone, because thou knowest not that season of thy visitation.

45 ¶ He

C H A P. XX.

45 ¶ He went also into the Temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein and them that bought,

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, * Mine house is the house of prayer, * but ye haue made it a denne of thieues.

47 And hee taught dayly in the Temple And the hie Priests and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him.

48 But they could not finde what they might doe to him : for all the people hanged vpon him when they heard him.

C H A P. XX.

4 From whence Iohns baptisme was. 9 The necessitye of the Priests is noted by the parable of the vineyard and the husbandmen. 21 To giue tribute to Cesar. 27 Hee conuinceth the Scribes denying the resurrection. 41 How Christ is the sonne of Dauid.

And * it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the hie Priests and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders,

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authoritie thou doest these things, or who is hee that hath giuen thee this authoritie?

3 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, I also will aske you one thing: tell me therefore:

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleued ye him not?

6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 Therefore they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

8 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

9 ¶ Then began he to speake to the people this parable, A certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey, for a great time.

10 And at a time conuenient he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away empty.

11 Again he sent yet another seruant: and they did beate him, and foule intreated him, and sent him away empty.

12 Moreover he sent the third, and him they wounded, and cast out,

13 Then

Matth. 21
12.

Mar. 11.
17 & 18.

56. 7.
Jo. 7. 11.

Matth. 21
25. Marke
11. 27.

Matth. 21
33. Marke
12. 1. 12.
5. 17.
2. 21.

13 Then sayd the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued Sonne: it may be that they will doe repentance when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned with then selues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What shall the Lord of the vineyard therefore doe vnto them?

16 He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it, they sayd, God forbid.

Psal. 118.
21. *isa. 28.*
16. *act. 4.*
11. *rom. 9.*
33. *1. pet.*
2. 8.
27. ¶ And he beheld them, and sayd, What meaneth this then that is written, * The stone that the builders refused, that is made the head of the corner?

18 Whosoever shall fall vpon that stone, shalbe broken and on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 Then the chief Priests, and the Scribes the same houre went about to lay hands on him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

Mat. 22.
16. *mar.*
12. 13.
20 * And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should faigne themselues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, wee know that thou sayest, and teachest right, neither dost thou accept mans person, but teachest the way of God truly.

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar tribute, or no?

23 But he perceiued their craftinesse, and sayd vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a peny: Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and sayd, Cesars.

Rom. 13. 7.
25 Then he sayd vnto them, * Giue then vnto Cesar the things which are Cesars, and to God those which are Gods.

26 And they could not reprove his saying before the people: but they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

Mat. 22.
23. *mar.*
12. 18.
27 * Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces, (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

Deut. 25. 5.
28 Saying, Master, * Moyses wrote vnto vs. If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

29 Now there were seven brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and he died without children,

30 And the second tooke the wife, and he died childlesse.

31 Then

CHAP. XXI.

31 Then the third tooke her : and so likewise the seuen died, and left no children.

32 And last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose wife of them shall shee be? for seuen had her to wife.

34 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, The children of this world marrie wives, and are married.

35 But they which shalbe counted worthy to enioy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry wives, neither are married.

36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the sonnes of God, since they are the children of the resurrection.

37 And that the dead shall rise againe, euen * Moses shewed it besides the bush, when he said, The Lord is the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of them which liue: for all liue vnto him.

39 Then certaine of the Scribes answered and said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, durst they not aske him any thing at all.

41 ¶ Then said he vnto them, How say they that Christ is Dauid's sonne? Mat. 22. 44. mar.

42 And Dauid himselfe saith in the booke of the Psalmes, * The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit at my right hand, 12. 35. Psa. 110. 1

43 Till I shall make thine enemies thy footstoole.

44 Seeing Dauid called him Lord, how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said vnto his disciples,

46 * Beware of the Scribes, which willingly goe in long robes, and loue salutations in the markets, and the highest seates in the assemblies, and the chiefe rooms at feasts: Chap. 11. 43. mat. 23. 6. mar. 12. 38

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and in steade make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 The whithnes liberalitie about her riches. 5 Of the time of the destruction of the Temple, 19 and Hierusalem, 25 The signes comynge before the last iudgement.

And * as he beheld, he saw the rich men, which cast their gittes into the treasure. Mar. 12. 41.

2 And he sawe also a certaine poore widow which cast in thither two mites.

3 And hee sayd, Of a trueth I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath callt in more then they all.

4 For they all haue of their superfluite cast into the offerings of God: but thee of her penurie hath callt in all the liuing that thee had.

Cha. 19. 43
Mat. 24. 1.
Mar. 13. 1. 5 *Now as some spake of the Temple, how it was garnished with goodly stones, and with consecrate things, he said,

6 Are these the things that ye looke vpon? the dayes wil come wherein a stone shall not be leit vpon a stone, that shall not be throwen downe.

7 Then they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things bee? and what signe shall there be when these things shall come to passe?

Ephes. 5. 6.
2. thes. 2. 3. 8 *And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many wil come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth nere: follow ye not them therefore.

9 And when yee heare of warres and seditions, be not afraid: for these things must first come, but the ende followeth not by and by.

10 Then said he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome,

Mat. 24. 7.
Mar. 13. 8. 11 *And great earthquakes shall be in diuers places, and hunger, and pestilence, and seafull things, and great signes shall there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, deliucting you vp to the assemblies, and into prisons, and bring you before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And this shall turne to you, for a testimoniall.

Cha. 12. 12
Mat. 10. 14 *Lay it vp therefore in your hearts, that ye cast not before-hand, what ye shall answere.

15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisdom, where against all your aduersaries shall not be able to speake, nor resist.

Mat. 10. 19. 16 Yea, yee shall be betrayed also of your parents, and of your brethren, and kindred, and friends, and some of you shall they put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake.

Mat. 10. 30. 18 *Yet there shall not one haire of your head perish.

19 By your patience possesse your soules.

Ex. 9. 27
Mat. 24. 20 *And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with souldiers, then vnderstand that the deuolution thereof is nere.

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mountaines: and let them which are in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not

CHAP. XXI.

Not them that are in the countrey enter therein.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to fulfill all things that are written.

23 But wee be to them that be with childe, and to them that give sucke in those dayes: for there shall be great distresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people.

24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sword, and shall be led captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shall be troden vnder foote of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 * Then there shalbe signes in the Sunne and in the moone, and in the starres, and vpon the earth trouble among the nations with perplexitie: the sea and the waters shall roare. *7/a. 13. 10
ezek 32. 7
mat. 24.
29. mat.
13. 34.*

26 And mens hearts shall faile them for feare, and for looking after those things which shal come on the world: for the powers of heauen shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a cloud, with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heads: * for your redemption draweth neere.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold, the figge tree and all trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, ye seeing them, know of your owne selves, that sommer is then neere.

31 So likewise, ye, when yee see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere.

32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all these things be done:

33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe a way.

34 * Take heed to your selves, least at any time your hearts be oppressed with forgetting and drunkenesse, and cares of this life, and lest that day come on you at vnwares. *Rom. 13.
13.*

35 For as a snare: shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth

36 Watch therefore, and pray continually, that yee may be counted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and that ye may stand before the Sonne of man.

37 ¶ Nowe in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives:

38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

S. L V K E.
CHAP. XXII.

3 Judas selleth Christ. 7 The Apostles prepare the Pasche. 24 They strue who should be chiefeſt. 31 Satan deſtreſh them. 39 Christ ſheweth that they wanted nothing. 43 He prayeth in the mount. 44 Hee ſweateſh blood. 50 Malchus eare cut off and healed. 57. 58. 60 Peter denieth Christ thrise. 63 Christ is mocked and ſtroken. 69 He confeſſeth himſelfe to be the Sonne of God.

Mat. 26. 1
Mar. 14. 1.

NOwe * the feaſt of vneleauened bread drewe neere, which is called the Paſcheouer.

2 And the hie Prieſtes and Scribes ſought how they might kill him: for they feared the people

Mat. 26.
14 Mar.
14 10.

3 * Then entred Satan into Judas, who was called Iſcariot, and was of the number of the twelue.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the hie Priests and captaines, how he might betray him to them.

5 So they were glad, and agreed to giue him money.

6 And he conſented, and ſought opportunitie to betray him vnto them, when the people were away.

Mat. 26.
17 Mar.
14 13.

7 * Then came the day of vneleauened bread, when the Paſcheouer muſt be ſacrificed.

8 And he ſent Peter and Iohn, ſaying, Goe and prepare vs the Paſcheouer, that we may eate it.

9 And they ſaid to him, Where wilt thou that we prepare it?

10 Then he ſaid vnto them, Behold, when ye be entred into the citie, there ſhall a man meete you beaung a pitcher of water: follow him into the houſe that he en'reth in,

11 And ſay vnto the goodman of the houſe, The Maſter ſaith vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I ſhall eate my Paſcheouer with my diſciples?

12 Then hee ſhall ſhewe you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it ready.

13 So they went, and found as hee had ſaide vnto them, and made ready the Paſcheouer.

Mat. 26.
20 Mar.
14 17.

14 * And when the houre was come, he ſate downe, and the twelue Apoſtles with him.

15 Then he ſaid vnto them, I haue earneſtly deſired to eat this Paſcheouer with you, before I ſuffer.

16 For I ſay vnto you, Hencefoorth I will not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and ſaid, Take this, and diuide it among you.

18 For I ſay vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of the vine,

vntill

C H A P. XXII.

untill the kingdome of God be come.

19 * And he tooke bread, and when he had giuen thanks, he brake it and gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you : doe this in the remembrance of me. *Mat. 26. 26 mar. 14. 22.*

20 Likewise also after supper, he tooke the cup, saying, This cup is that new Testament in my blood, which is shed for you. *1. cor. 11. 24.*

21 * Yet behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me at the table. *Mat. 26. 21 mar. 14. 18.*

22 And truly the Sonne of man goeth as it is appointed : but woe be to that man, by whom he is betrayed. *psal. 41. 9.*

23 Then they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it should be, that should doe that.

24 * And there arose also a strife among them, which of them should seeme to be the greatest. *Mat. 20. 25 mar. 10. 42.*

25 But he said vnto them, The Kings of the Gentiles reigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them are called bountifull.

26 But ye shall not be so : but let the greatest among you bee as the least ; and the chiefest as he that serueth.

27 For who is greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that serueth ? Is not he that sitteth at table ? And I am among you as he that serueth.

28 And yee are they which haue continued with mee in my tentations :

29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me,

30 * That ye may eat, and drinke at my table in my kingdome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel. *Mat. 19. 28.*

31 * And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, beholde, * Satan hath desired you, to winnow you as wheat. *1 Pet. 5. 8.*

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not : therefore when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

33 * And he said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee into prison, and to death. *Mat. 26. 34. mar. 14. 29.*

34 But he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall not crowe this day, before thou hast thrise denied that thou knewest me. *Joh. 13. 38.*

35 * And he said vnto them, * When I sent you without bag, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing ? And they said, Nothing. *Mat. 10. 9.*

36 Then he said to them But now he that hath a bagge, let him take it, and likewise a scrip : and he that hath none, let him sell his coate and buy a sword.

37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which is written, must be performed in me, * Euen with the wicked was hee numbered : for doubtlesse those things which are written of me, haue an end. *Jsa. 53. 12.*

S. L Y K E.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said vnto them, It is ynough.

Matt. 26.

26. mar.

14. 32.

26. 18. 1.

Mat. 26.

41. mar.

14. 38.

39 ¶ And he came out, and went (as he was wont) to the mount of Oliues: and his disciples also followed him.

40 * And when he came to the place, he said to them, Pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

41 And hee was drawen aside from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cuppe from mee: neuerthelesse, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from heauen, comforting him.

44 But being in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly: and his sweate was like drops of blood, trickling downe to the ground.

45 And he arose vp from prayer, and came to his disciples, and found them sleeping for heavynesse.

46 And he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

Matt. 26.

47. mar.

14. 43.

26. 18. 3.

47 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold, a company, and he that was called Iudas one of the twelve, went before them, and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him.

48 And Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 Now when they which were about him, sawe what would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall we smite with sword?

50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and stroke off his right eare.

51 Then Iesus answered, and said, Suffer thew thus farre: and he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said vnto the hie Priests, and captaines of the Temple and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as vnto a thiefe with swords and stauces?

53 When I was daily with you in the Temple, yee stretched not forth the hands against me: but this is your very house, and the power of darkenesse.

Matt. 26.

58.

26. 1.

28. 19.

Mar. 14.

66.

26. 18. 3.

54 ¶ Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Priests house. And Peter followed a farre off.

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the mids of the hall, and were sit downe together, Peter also sate downe among them.

56 And a certaine maid beheld him as he sate by the fire, and hauing well looked on him, said, This man was also with him.

57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And

CHAP. XVIII.

38 And after a little while another man saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not.

39 And about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely even this man was with him: for hee is also a Galilean.

40 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cocke crew.

41 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how hee had said vnto him, * Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise.

42 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

43 ¶ And the men that helde Iesus, mocked him, and strooke him.

44 And when they had blindfolded him, they smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecie who it is that smote thee.

45 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

46 * And as soone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the high Priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their Council,

47 Saying, Art thou that Christestell vs. And he said vnto them, If I tell you, ye will not beleue it.

48 And it also I sake you, ye wil not answere me, nor let me go.

49 Hereafter shall the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power of God.

50 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye say that I am.

51 Then said they, What need we any further witnesse? for we our selues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 He is accused before Pilate. 7 Hee is sent to Herod. 11 Hee is mocked. 24 Pilate recheit him vp to the Jewes request. 27 The women bewaile him. 31 Hee is crucified. 39 One of the thieves reuileth him: 43 The other is sated by faith. 45 Hee dieth. 53 He is buried.

Then the whole multitude of them arose, and ledde him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We haue found this man perverting the nation, * and forbidding to pay tribute to Cesar, saying, That he is Christ a King.

3 * And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jewes? And he answered him, and said, Thou sayest it.

Mat. 26

34. 1ohn

13. 38.

Mat. 26.

67. 2. 17.

14. 65.

Mat. 27. 1.

Mar. 15. 1.

Job. 18. 28.

Mat. 23.

21. Mar.

12. 17.

Mat. 27.

11. Mar.

15. 2. Job.

18. 33.

4 Then said Pilate to the hie Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 But they were the more fierce, saying, Hee mouneeth the people, teaching throughout all Iudea, beginning at Galile even to this place.

6 Now when Pilate heard of Galile, hee asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And when he knew that he was of Herodes iurisdiction, hee sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusalem in those dayes.

8 And when Herod sawe Iesus, hee was exceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and trusted to haue seene some signe done by him.

9 Then questioned he with him of many things: but hee answered him nothing.

10 The high Priests also and Scribes stood forth, and accused him vehemently.

11 And Herode with his men of warre, despised him, and mocked him, and arrayed him in white, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate and Herode were made friends together: for before they were enemies one to another.

13 ¶ Then Pilate called together the high Priests and the rulers and the people,

14 *And said vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruerter the people: and beholde, I haue examined him before you, and haue found no fault in this man, of those things whereof ye accuse him:

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: and loe, nothing worthy of death, is done of him.

16 I will therefore chastise him and let him loose.

17 (For of necessitie hee must haue let one loose vnto them at the least)

18 Then all the multitude cryed at once, saying, Away with him, and deliver vnto vs Barabbas:

19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, and murder, was cast in prison.

20 Then Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose.

21 But they cryed, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him.

22 And hee said vnto them the third time, But what euill hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

23 But they were instant with loude voices, and required that hee

Mat. 27.

23. mar.

15. 14.

oh. 18. 34.

CHAP. XXIII.

hee might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the high Priests prevailed.

24 So Pilate gaue sentence, that it should be as they required.

25 And he let loose vnto them him that for insurrection and murder was cast into prison, whom they desired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what they would.

26 ¶ And as they ledde him away they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the field, and on him they laid the crosse, to beare it after Iesus. *Mat. 27. 32. mar. 15. 21.*

27 And there followed him a great multitude of people and of women, which women bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, and saide, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes will come, when men shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, and the pappes which neuer gaue sucke.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, * Fall on vs: and to the hilles, Cover vs. *J/a. 2. 19. bus. 10. 8.*

31 ¶ For if they doe these things to a greene tree, what shall be done to the drie? *rene. 6. 15.*

32 ¶ And there were two others, which were euill doers, ledde with him to be slaine. *1. Pet. 4. 17.*

33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluare, there they crucified him, and the euill doers, one at the right hand, and the other at the left. *Mat. 27. 38. mar. 15. 27. 10. 19. 18.*

34 Then said Iesus, Father, forgive them: for they knowe not what they doe. And they parted his raiment, and call lots.

35 And the people stood, and beheld: and the rulers mocked him with them, saying, Hee saued others: let him saue himselfe, if he be that Christ, the choïsen of God.

36 The souldiers also mocked him, and came and offered him vinegar,

37 And said, If thou be the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription was also written ouer him, in Greeke letters, and in Latine, and in Hebrew, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 Wee are indeede righteously ~~here~~: for wee receiue things worthy

S. I V K E.

worthy of that wee haue done: but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And hee said vnto Iesus, Lorde, remember mee, when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 ¶ And it was about the sixt houre: and there was a darknesse ouer all the land, vntill the ninth houre.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaille of the Temple rent through the mids.

Psa. 31. 6 46 And Iesus cried with a loud voice, and said, * Father, into thine hands I commend my spirit. And when he thus had said, hee gaue vp the ghost.

47 ¶ Now when the Centurion saw what was done, hee glorified God, saying, Of a suretie this man was iust.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance stood asafarre off, and the women that followed him from Galile, beholding these things.

Mat. 27. 37. Mar. 15. 43. Luk. 19. 38. 50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, which was a counsellour, a good man and a iust.

51 He did not consent to the counsell, and deed of them, which was of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes: who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God.

52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus.

53 And tooke it downe, and wapped it in a linnen cloth, and layd it in a tombe hewen out of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, & the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also that followed alter, which came with him from Galile, beheld the sepulchre, & how his body was laid.

56 And they returned and prepared odours, and ointments, and rested the Sabbath day according to the commandement.

C H A P. XXIIII.

The women cometo the sepulchre. 9 They report that which they heard of the Angels vnto the Apostles. 13 Christ doeth accompany two goings to Emmaus. 27 He expoundeth the Scriptures vnto them. 39 He offereth himselfe to his Apostles to be handled. 49 Hee promiseth the holy Ghost. 51 Hee is caried vp into heauen.

Mar. 16. 1. Luk. 24. 1. **N**Owe the * first day of the weeke early in the morning, they came vnto the sepulchre, and brought the odours, which they

CHAP. XXIII.

they had prepared, and certaine women with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre,

3 And went in, but found not the body of the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, that as they were amased thereat, behold, two men suddenly stood by them in shining vestures.

5 And as they were afraide, and bowed downe their faces to the earth they said to them, Why seeke ye him that liueth, among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: remember * how he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile,

7 Saying, that the Sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembered his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and tolde all these things vnto the eleven, and to all the remnant.

10 Nowe it was Mary Magdalene and Ioanpa, and Mary the mother of Iames, & other women with them, which tolde these things vnto the Apostles.

11 But their words seemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neither beleued they them.

12 * Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the sepulchre, and looked in, and saw the linnen clothes laid by themselues, and departed, wondering in himselfe at that which was come to passe.

13 ¶ * And beholde, two of them went that same day to a towne which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs, called Emmaus.

14 And they talked together of all these things that were done.

15 And it came to passe, as they communed together, and reasoned, that Iesus himselfe drew neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were hol-len, that they could not know him.

17 And he said vnto them, What maner of communications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walke, and are sad?

18 And the one (named Cleophas) answered, and said vnto him. Art thou only a stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not knownen the things which are come to passe therein in these dayes?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they said vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet, mightie in deed and in word before God, and all the people.

20 And how the high priests, and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had bene hee that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching all these things, to day is the third day,

that

Chap. 9. 27.

Mat. 17.

13. Mar.

9. 54.

Job. 10. 8.

Mark. 16.

12.

that they were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women among vs made vs astonied, which came earely vnto the sepulchre.

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also scene a visio of Angels, which said that he was alyue.

24 Therefore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found it euen as the women had saide, but him they saw not.

25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles and slow of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken!

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in all the scriptures the things which were *written* of him.

28 And they drew neere vnto the towne, which they went to, but he made as though he would haue gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs: for it is towards night, and the day is farre spent. So hee went in to tary with them.

30 And it came to passe as he sate at table with them, he tooke the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gaue it to them.

31 Then their eyes were opened, and they knew him: and hee was no more scene of them.

32 And they said betweene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and when he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they ro'ed vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Which said, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 Then they told what things *were* done in the way, and how he was knowne of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ And as they spake these things, Iesus him selfe stood in the mids of them, and said vnto them. Peace be to you.

37 But they were abashed and afraid, supposing that they had scene a spirit.

38 Then he said vnto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore doe doubts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold mine hands and my feet: for it is I my selfe; handle me, and see: for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And

Mat. 16.

14. 10. 20

19.

C H A P. I.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and feete.

41 And while they yet beleueued not for ioy, and wondered, he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meat?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an hony combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the words, which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes,

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto them, Thus is it written, & thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise againe from the dead the third day,

47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 Now ye are witnesses of these things

49 And beholde, I doe send the * promise of my Father vpon you: but tary ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntil ye be endued with power from on hie.

*John 13.
26. acts
1.4.*

50 Afterward he led them out into Bethania, and lift vp his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed them, * he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen.

*Mar. 16.
19. acts
1.9.*

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy.

53 And were continually in the Temple, praying, and lauding God, Amen.

¶ THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS Christ, according to Iohn.

C H A P. I.

1 That Word brootten of God before all worlds, 2 and which was euer with the Father, 14 is made man. 6 7 For what end Iohn was sent from God. 16 His preaching of Christs office: 19. 20 The record that he bare, giuen out vnto the Priests. 40 The calling of Andrew, 42 of Peter, 43 Philip, 45 and Nathanael.

IN the beginning was that Word, and that Word was with God, and that Word was God.

2 This same was in the beginning with God:

3 * All things were made by it, and without it

*Col. 1. 16.
was*

S. I O H N.

was made nothing that was made.

4 In it was life, and that life was the light of men,

5 And that light shineth in the darknesse, and the darknesse comprehended it not.

Mat. 3. 1.

6 ¶ There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn,

Mat. 1. 4.

7 This same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of that light, that all men through him might beleue.

Luke. 3. 2.

8 He was not that light, but was *Jesus* to beare witnesse of that light.

9 This was that true light, which lightneth euery man that cometh into the world.

Neh. 11. 3.

10 He was in the world, and the world was * made by him: and the world knew him not:

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not,

12 But as many as receiued him, to them he gaue prerogative to be the sonnes of God *euen* to them that beleue in his Name,

13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

Mat. 1. 16

14 * And that Worde was made flesh, and dwelt among vs,

Mat. 17. 2

(and wee saw * the glory thereof, as the glory of the onely begotten Sonne of the Father) full of grace and truth.

2. p. 1. 17

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cryed, saying, This was he of whom I sayd. He that cometh after mee, was before me: for he was better then I.

Col. 1. 19.

16 * And of his fulnesse haue all wee receiued, and grace for grace.

2. 2. 9.

17 For the Law was given by Moses: but grace, and truth came by Iesus Christ.

1. Tim. 6.

18 ¶ No man hath seene God at any time: that onely begotten

16. 1. Job,

Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father he hath declared him.

4. 12.

19 ¶ Then this is the recorde of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priests and Leuites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who art thou?

Acts. 13.

20 And he confessed and denied not, and said plainly, I * am not that Christ.

25.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he said, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou, that we may giue an answer to them that sent vs? what sayest thou of thy selfe?

Jsa. 40. 3.

23 Hee said, I * am the voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as saide the Prophet

2. 1. 1. 3.

Esaia.

Luke 3. 4.

CHAP. I.

24 Now they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.
25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither Elias, nor that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whome ye know not.

27 *Hee it is that cometh after me, which was before mee, whose shoe latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize.

29 ¶ The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and sayth, Behold that Lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the world.

30 This is he of whome I said, After me cometh a man, which was before me: for he was better then I.

31 And I knew him not: but because he should be declared to Israel, therefore am I come, baptizing with water.

32 So Iohn bare record, saying I beheld* that spirit come down from heauen like a dove, and it abode vpon him.

33 And I knewe him not: but hee that sent me to baptize with water, he said vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see the spirit come downe, and tary still on him, that is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I sawe, and bare record that this is the Sonne of God.

35 ¶ The next day, Iohn stood againe and two of his disciples:

36 And hee beheld Iesus walking by, and sayde, Behold the Lambe of God:

37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned about, and saw them follow, and said vnto them, What seeke ye? And they said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say by interpretation, Master) where dwellest thou?

39 Hee said vnto them, Come and see. They came and sawe where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 Andrew Simon Peters brother, was one of the two which heard it of Iohn, and that followed him.

41 The same found his brother Simon first, and said vnto him, We haue found * Messias, which is by interpretation, that Christ.

42 And hee brought him to Iesus. And Iesus beheld him, and said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The

Mat. 3. 12

Mat. 3. 17.

Luke 3. 16.

Mat. 3. 15.

Ex. 11. 16.

and 19. 4.

Mat. 3. 16.

Mat. 3. 16.

Luke 3. 22.

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would goe into Galile, and found Philip, and said vnto him, Follow me.

44 Nowe Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrewe and Peter.

45 Philip found Nathanael, and said vnto him, We haue found him, of whom * Moyses did write in the Lawe and the * Prophets, Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, that was of Nazareth.

46 Then Nathanael said vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip said to him, Come and see.

47 Iesus saw Nathanael comming to him, and said of him, Behold indeed an Israelite, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael said vnto him, Whence knewest thou me? Iesus answered and said vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the figgetree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered, and saide vnto him, Rabbi, thou art that sonne of God: thou art that King of Israel.

50 Iesus answered and said vnto him, Because I said vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the figgetree, beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And he said vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, hereafter shall yee see heauen open, and the Angels of God * ascending, and descending vpon that Sonne of man.

C H A P. 11.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 11 which was the beginning of his miracles. 12 He goeth downe to Capernaum, 13 from thence he goeth up to Hierusalem, 14 and casteth the marchanasse out of the Temple. 19 He foretelleth that the Temple, that is his body, shall be destroyed of the Iewes. 23 Many beleeue in him seeing the miracles which he did.

AND the third day was there a marriage in Cana a towne of Galile, and the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And Iesus was called also, & his disciples vnto the marriage.

3 Nowe when the wine failed, the mother of Iesus saide vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother said vnto the seruants, What soeuer he saith vnto you doe it.

6 And there were set there, sixe waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Iewes, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 And Iesus saide vnto them, Fill the waterpots with water. Then

Gen. 39.

10. deut.

18. 18.

3/a 4 2.

40. 10.

and 45. 8.

iere. 23. 5.

43. 14.

ere. 34. 23.

43. 24.

dan. 9. 24.

Gen. 28.

12.

CHAP. II.

Then they filled them vp to the brimme.

8 Then he sayd vnto them, Drawe out now and beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. So they bare it.

9 Now when the Gouernour of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, (for he knew not whence it was: but the seruants, which drew the water, knew) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegrome,

10 And said vnto him, All men at the beginning set forth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worie: but thou hast kept backe the good wine vntill now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana a towne of Galile, and shewed forth his glory: and his disciples beleued on him.

12 After that, he went downe into Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: but they continued not many dayes there.

13 For the Iewes Passeouer was at hand. Therefore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

14 And hee found in the Temple those that solde oxen, and sheepe, and doves, and changers of money, sitting there.

15 Then he made a scourge of small cordes, and drave them all out of the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables.

16 And sayd vnto them that solde doves, Take these things hence, make not my fathers house, an house of merchandise.

17 And his disciples remembered, that it was written, * The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp. *Psal. 69.9*

18 Then answered the Iewes, and sayd vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, * Destroy this Temple, *Matth. 26*
and in three dayes I will raise it vp againe. *51. and 27*

20 Then sayd the Iewes, Forty and sixe yeres was this Temple *40. marke*
a building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes? *14. 58.*

21 But he spake of the Temple of his bodie.

22 After that therefore as he was risen from the dead his disciples remembered that Iesus had sayd vnto them: and they beleued the Scripture and the word which Iesus had sayd. *and. 5. 19*

23 Now when he was at Hierusalem, at the Passeouer in the feast, many beleued in his Name, when they sawe his miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because hee knew them all,

S. I O H N.

23 And had not neede that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

C H A P. III.

1 *Christ teacheth Nicodemus the very principles of Christism revealed in. 17 The jerbans in the wilderness. 23 John baptizeth, 27 and teacheth him: that he is not Christ.*

THere was now a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jewes.

2 This man came to Iesus by night, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could doe these miracles that thou doest, except God were with him.

3 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him. Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, he cannot see the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus sayd vnto him, Howe can a man bee borne which is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe againe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except that a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marreile not that I sayd to thee, Ye must be borne againe.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every man that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and sayd vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou a teacher of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, we speake that we know, and testifie that we have seene: but ye receive not our witness.

12 If when I tell you earthly things, ye beleeve not, howe should ye beleeve if I shal tell you of heavenly things?

13 For no man is ascended vp to heauen, but hee that hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 * And as Moses hit vp the serpent in the wilderness, so must that sonne of man be hit vp,

15 That whosoever beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternall life.

16 * For God so loued the world, that he hath given his only begotten

2. Cor. 12.
1. Cor. 12.
3.
2. Cor. 4.9.

C H A P. III.

begotten Sonne, that whosoever beleueth in him, should not perish, but haue euertlasting life.

17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the world, that he should condemne the world, but that the world through him might be saued. Chap. 9.
39. and
12 47.

18 He that beleueth in him, is not condemned: but hee that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonne of God.

19 * And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the world, and men loued darknesse rather then that light, because their deedes were euill. Chap. 1. 9

20 For euery man that euil doeth, hateth the light, neither cometh to light, leaſt his deedes should be reprooued.

21 But hee that doeth trueth, cometh to the light, that his deedes might be made manifest, that they are wrought according to God.

22 * After these things came Iesus and his disciples into the land of Iudea and there taried with them, and * baptizd. Chap. 4. 1.

23 And Iohn also baptizd in Enon besides Salim, because there was much water there: and they came and were baptizd.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns disciples and the Iewes about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Iordan to whom * thou bareſt witnesse, be- hold he baptizeth, and all men come to him. Chap. 1. 34

27 Iohn answered, and said, A man can receiue nothing, except it be given him from heauen.

28 Ye your selues are my witnesſes, that I * said, I am not that Christ, but that I am sent before him. Chap. 1. 20

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegrome: but the friend of the bridegrome which standeth and heareth him, reioiceth greatly, because of the bridegromes voyce. This my ioy therefore is fulfilled,

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that is come from on high, is above all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: hee that is come from heauen, is above all.

32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth: but no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath receiued his testimony, hath sealed that * God is true. Rv 1. 9.

S. I O H N.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God for God giueth him not the Spirit by measure.

35 The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath *giuen all things into his hand.

36 * He that beleeueth in the Sonne, hath euermlasting life, and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

C H A P. I I I I.

6 Jesus bring wearie asketh drinke of the woman of Samaria. 21 He teacheth the true worship. 26 He confesseth that he is the Messias. 32 His meate. 39 The Samaritanes beleeue in him. 46 He healeth the rulers sonne.

8 Chap. 3. 22 **N**OW when the Lord knew, how the Phariſes had heard, that Iesus made * and baptized moe disciples then Iohn,

1 (Though Iesus himſelfe baptized not: but his disciples)

2 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.

3 And he muſt needs goe through Samaria.

4 Then came he to a citie of Samaria called Sychar, neere vnto the poſſeſſion that * Iacob gaue to his Sonne Ioseph.

5 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then wearied in the iourney, ſate thus on the well: it was about the ſixt houre.

6 There came a woman of Samaria to draw water. Iesus ſaid vnto her, Giue me drinke.

7 For his disciples were gone away into the citie, to buy meate.

8 Then ſaid the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it, that thou being a Iewe, asked drinke of mee, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes.

9 Iesus answered and ſaid vnto her, If thou kneweſt that giſt of God, and who it is that ſaith vnto thee, Giue mee drinke, thou wouldeſt haue asked of him, and he would haue giuen thee water of life.

10 The woman ſaid vnto him, Syr, thou haſt nothing to draw with, and the well is deepe: from whence then haſt thou that water of life?

11 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and he himſelfe dranke thereof, and his ſonnes, and his cattell?

12 Iesus answered, and ſaid vnto her, Whoſoeuer drinketh of this water, ſhall thiſt againe:

13 But whoſoeuer drinketh of the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhall neuer bee more a thiſt: but the water that I ſhall giue him, ſhall be in him a well of water ſpringing vp into euermlasting life.

CHAP. IIIL

15 The woman said vnto him, Syr, giue me of that water, that I may not thirst, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesus said vnto her, Goe call thine husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband.

18 For thou hast had fise husbands, and hee whom thou now hast, is not thine husband: that saidest thou truly.

19 The woman sayde vnto him, Syr, I see that thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye say that in * Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

Deu. 12.6

21 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, heleeue mee, the houre commeth, when yee shall neither in this mountaine, nor at Hierusalem worship the Father.

22 Yee worship that which yee * know not: we worship that which we know: for saluation is of the Iewes.

2. Kings 17.29.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth: for the Father requereth euen such to worship him.

24 * God is a spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and truth.

2. Cor. 3. 27.

25 The woman said vnto him, I know well that Meisias shall come which is called Christ: when hee is come, hee will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake vnto thee.

27 ¶ And vpon that came his disciples, and marueiled that hee talked with a woman: yet no man said vnto him, What askest thou? or why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the citie and said to the men.

29 Come, see a man which hath tolde me all things that euer I did: is not he that Christ?

30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while, the disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eate.

32 But he said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that yee know not of.

33 Then said the disciples betweene themselves, Hath any man brought him meate?

34 Iesus said vnto them, My meate is that I may doe the will of him that sent me, and finish his worke.

35 Say not yee, There are yet some monethes, and then cometh

S. IOHN.

Mat. 9.

37. luke

10. 20

meth haue? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes and looke on the regions. * for they are white already vnto harvest.

36 And hee that reapeth, receiveth reward, and gathereth fruit vnto life eternall, that both hee that soweth, and hee that reapeth, might reioyce together.

37 For herein is the saying true, that one soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that, whereon yee bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and yee are entred into their labours.

39 Now many of the Samaritans of that citie beleueed in him for the saying of the woman which testified, Hee that tolde me all things that euer I did.

40 Then when the Samaritans were come vnto him, they besought him, that he would tarie with them: and hee abode there two dayes.

41 And many more beleueed because of his owne word.

42 And they said vnto the woman, Now wee beleue not because of thy saying: for wee haue heard him our selues, and know that this is in deede that Christ the Sauour of the world.

43 ¶ So two dayes after hee departed thence, and went into Galile.

Mat. 13.

57. mar. 6.

5. luke 4.

24.

44 For Iesus himselfe had testified * that a Prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey.

45 Then when he was come into Galile the Galileans receiued him, which had seene all the things that hee did in Hierusalem at the feast: for they went also vnto the feast.

Chap. 2. 1.

12.

46 And Iesus came againe into * Cana a towne of Galile where he had made of water wine. And there was a certaine ruler, whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galile he went vnto him, and besought him that he would go downe, and heale his sonne: for he was euen ready to die.

48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, yee will not beleene.

49 The ruler sayd vnto him, Syr, goe downe before my sonne die.

50 Iesus sayd vnto him. Goe thy way, thy sonne liueth: and the man beleueed the word that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and went his way.

51 And as hee was now going downe, his seruants met him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then enquired hee of them the house when hee began to aske.

mead.

CHAP. V.

dead. And they sayd vnto him, Yesterday the seventh houre the younger leif him.

53 Then the father knewe, that it was the same houre in the which Iesus had said vnto him, Thy sonne liueth. And he beleueed, and all his household.

54 This second miracle did Iesus againe, after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP. V.

3 One thing at the poole, 5 is healea of Christ on the Sabbath: 10 The Jewes that rashly made fault with that he did, 17 hee commeth with the authoritie of his Father. 19 20 He prooueth his diuine power by many reasons, 45 and with Moses testimony.

After * that, there was a feast of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

*Leuit. 23. 5
deut. 16. 1*

2 And there is at Hierusalem by the place of the sheepe, a poole called in Hebrew Bethes: a hauing three porches,

3 In the which lay a great multitude of sicke folke, of blinde, halfe, and withered, waiting for the moouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoever then fast after the stirring of the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had been diseased eight and thirtie yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, and knew that he now long time had been diseased, he said vnto him Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The sicke man answered him. Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am coming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus sayd vnto him Rise: take vp thy bed and walke.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: and the same day was the Sabbath.

10 The Iewes therefore said to him that was made whole, It is the Sabbath day: * It is not lawfull for thee to cary thy bed.

Iere. 17. 22

11 Hee answered them. Hee that made me whole, he said vnto me, Take vp thy bed and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which sayd vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And hee that was healed, knew not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away from the multitude that was in that place.

S. I O H N.

14 And after that, Iesus found him in the Temple, and sayd vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 ¶ The man departed, and told the Iewes that it was Iesus which made him whole.

16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute Iesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day.

17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

Chap. 7. 19

18 * Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him: not onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but sayd also that God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and sayd vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, saue that he seeth the Father doe: for whatsoever things he doeth, the same things doeth the sonne in like maner.

20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things whatsoever he himselfe doeth, and he will shew him greater workes then these, that ye should marueile.

21 For likewise as the Father raiseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them, so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath committed all iudgement vnto the Sonne,

23 Because that all men should honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the same honoureth not the Father, which hath sent him.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, hee that heareth my word, and beleueth in him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but hath passed from death vnto life.

25 Verely, verely I say vnto you the houre shall come, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voice of the Sonne of God: and they that heare it, shall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe, so likewise hath hee giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe,

27 And hath giuen him power also to execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for the houre shall come in the which all that are in the graues shall heare his voice,

Matth. 25.
41.

29 And they shall come forth, * that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of condemnation.

30 I can doe nothing of mine owne selfe: as I heare, I iudge:
and

C H A P. V.

and my iudgement is iust, becaule I seeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.

31 If I * should beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse were not true. [Chap. 8. 14]

32 * There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which he beareth of me, is true. Mat. 3. 17

33 * Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto the trueth. [Chap. 1. 29]

34 But I receiue not the record of man: neuertheless these things I say, that ye might be saued.

35 He was a burning, and a shining candle: and ye would for a season haue reioiced in his light.

36 But I haue greater witnes then the witnesse of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finish, the same workes that I doe beare witnes of me, that the Father sent me.

37 And the * Father himselfe which hath sent mee, beareth witnesse of me. Ye haue not heard his voice at any time, * neither haue ye seene his shape. Mat. 3. 17
and 17. 5
Deut. 4. 12

38 And his word haue yee not abiding in you: for whom hee hath sent him yee beleene not.

39 * Search the Scriptures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me. [Alis 17
41.]

40 But you will not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not the praise of men.

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if another shall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue.

44 How can ye beleene, which receiue * honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that cometh of God alone? [Chap. 12
43.]

45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to my Father: there is one that accuseth you, euen Moles, in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye beleened Moles, yee would haue beleened meet * for he wrote of me. [Gene. 3. 15
and 22. 18
and 49. 10
Deu. 18. 15]

47 But if yee beleene not his writings, how shall ye beleene my words?

C H A P. VI.

3 Five thousand are fed with five loaves and two fishes. 15 Christ goeth apart from the people. 17 As his disciples were rowing, 19 hee cometh to them walking on the water. 26 Hee reasoneth of the true, 27 and everlasting 33 bread of life. 41. 52 The Iewes murmure, 60 and many of the disciples 68 depart from him. 69 The Apostles confesse him to bee the Sonne of God.

After

S. IOHN.

After these things, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galilee, which is Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples,

4 Now the Passouer, a * feast of the Iewes, was neere.

5 *Then I E S V S lift vp h : eyes, and seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, he said vnto Philip, Whence shall wee buy bread, that these might eate ?

6 (And this he sayd to proue him : for he himselfe knew what he would doe)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 Then sayd vnto him one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother,

9 There is a little boy here, which hath fve barley loaves, and two fishes : but what are they among so many ?

10 And Iesus sayd, Make the people sit downe. (Now there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men sate downe, in number about five thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and gave thanks, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set downe : and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

12 And when they were satisfied he sayd vnto his disciples, Gather vp the broken meate which remaineth, that nothing be lost.

13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue baskets with the broken meate of the fve barley loaves, which remained vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then the men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, sayd, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world

15 When Iesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him to make him a King, hee departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone.

16 ¶ When euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea,

17 * And entred into a ship, and went ouer the sea toward Capernaum : and now it was darke and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose with a great wind that blew.

19 And when they had rowed about fve and twenty or thirtie furlongs, they saw Iesus walking on the Sea, and drawing neere

vnto

Leuit 23.7

deut 16.1

Matth. 14

16 marke

6.37. luke

9.13.

Matth. 14

35. marke

6.47

C H A P. VI.

vnto the ship: so they were afraid.

20 But he said vnto them, It is I: be not afraid.

21 Then willingly they receiued him into the ship, and the ship was by and by at the land, whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, the people which stood on the other side of the Sea, saw that there was none other shippe there, saue that one, whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples in the ship, but that his disciples were gone alone,

23 And that there came other ships from Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate the bread, after the Lord had given thanks.

24 Now when the people saw that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the Sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when canst thou hither?

26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, yee seeke me not because yee saw the miracles, but because yee ate of the loaves, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meate which perisheth, but for the meate that endureth vnto euertlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall give vnto you: for him hath * God the Father sealed.

28 Then sayd they vnto him, What shall we doe, that wee might worke the workes of God?

29 Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, * This is the worke of God, that yee beleue in him, whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe thou est thou then, that we may see it and beleue thee? What dost thou worke?

31 Our Fathers did eate Manna in the desert, as it is * written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate.

32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Moyses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then they said vnto him, Lord, enermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus sayd vnto them, I am that bread of life: hee that commeth to me, shall not hunger, and he that beleueth in me, shall neuer thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleue not.

37 All that the Father giueth me, shall come to mee: and him that

Chap. 1. 38
Mat. 3. 17.
and 17. 3
1. John 3.
23.

Exod. 16.
3. 1. Matt.
11. 7. Psal.
78. 25.

S. I O H N.

that commeth to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne wil, but his will which hath sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent mee, that every man which seeth the Sonne, and beleeneth in him, should haue euerslasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

Mat. 13.

55.

42 And they said * Is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother wee know? how then saith hee, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus then answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father, which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

Jha. 54. 13

3err. 31. 33

45 It is written in the * Prophets, And they shalbe all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto mee:

Mat. 11.

27.

46 * Not that any man hath seene the Father, saue he which is of God, he hath seene the Father.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleeneth in me, hath euerslasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

Exod. 16.

32.

49 * Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead.

50 This is that bread which commeth downe from heauen, that he which eateth of it, should not die,

51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: If any man eate of this bread, hee shall liue for ever: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.

52 Then the Iewes stroue among themselues, saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eate?

53 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except ye eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you.

1 Cor. 11.

27.

54 Whosoever * eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat in deed, and my blood is drinke in deed.

C H A P. VII.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As that living Father hath sent mee, so liue I by the Father, and he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. Hee that eateth of this bread, shall liue for euer.

59 These things spake hee in the Synagogue, as hee taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) said, This is an hard saying: who can heare it?

61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at this, said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 *What* then if yee should see that Sonne of man ascend vp * where he was be ore?

Chap. 3. 13

63 It is the Spirit that quickneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Iesus knew from the beginning, which they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him.

65 And hee said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time, many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus to the twelue, Will yee also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whom shall we goe? thou hast the words of eternall life:

69 And wee beleeue and know that thou art that Christ that Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I * chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill?

Mat. 26. 16.

71 Now hee spake it of Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, though he was one of y^e twelue.

C H A P. VII.

1 *Christ, after his cousins were gone vp to the feast of Tabernacles,*
 10 *goeth thither priuily.* 12 *The pe- ples sundry opinions of him.*
 14 *Hee teacheth in the Temple.* 32 *The Priests commaund to take him.* 41 *trife am no the multitude about him* 47 *and betweene the Pharises and the officers that were sent to take him,*
 50 *and Nicodermus.*

After these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes sought to kill him.

Now

S. I O H N.

that commeth to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne wil, but his will which hath sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent mee, that every man which seeth the Sonne, and beleueth in him, should haue euerslasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

42 And they said * Is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother wee know? how then saith hee, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus then answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father, which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

45 It is written in the * Prophets, And they shalbe all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto mee:

46 * Not that any man hath seene the Father, saue he which is of God, he hath seene the Father.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleueth in me, hath euerslasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 * Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead.

50 This is that bread which commeth downe from heauen, that he which eateth of it, should not die.

51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: If any man eate of this bread, hee shall liue for ever: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.

52 Then the Iewes stroue among themselves, saying, How can this man gine vs his flesh to eate?

53 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except ye eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you.

54 Whosoever * eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat in deed, and my blood is drinke in deed.

C H A P. VII.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As that living Father hath sent mee, so live I by the Father, and he that eateth me, enen he shall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. Hee that eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.

59 These things spake hee in the Synagogue, as hee taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) said, This is an hard saying: who can heare it?

61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at this, said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 *What* then if yee should see that Sonne of man ascend vp * where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life.

64 But there are some of you that beleene not: for Iesus knew from the beginning, which they were that beleued not, and who should betray him.

65 And hee said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time, many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus to the twelue, Will yee also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whom shall we goe? thou hast the words of eternall life:

69 And wee beleue and know that thou art that Christ that Sonne of the living God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I * chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill?

71 Now hee spake it of Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, though he was one of the twelue.

C H A P. VII.

2 Christ, after his cousins were gone up to the feast of Tabernacles,

10 goeth thither privately. 12 The pe- ples sundry opinions of him.

14 Hee teacheth in the Temple. 32 The Priests commaund to take him.

34 A strife amon the multitude about him 47 and betweene the Pharises and the officers that were sent to take him,

50 and Nicodemus.

After these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes sought to kill him.

Now

Chap. 3. 13

Mat. 26.
16.

S. I O H N.

Leuit. 23.
34.

2 Now the Iewes * fealt of the Tabernacles was at hand. -

3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iudea, that thy disciples may see thy workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing secretly, and hee himselfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, then why sleepest thou to the world.

5 For as yet his brethren beliered not in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you: but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Goe ye vp vnto this fealt: I will not goe vp yet vnto this fealt. * for my time is not yet fulfilled.

Cap. 8. 20

9 ¶ The things he said vnto them, and abode still in Galile.

10 But as soone as his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the fealt, not openly, but as *it were* priuily.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the fealt, and sayd, Where is hee?

12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some said, He is a good man: others said, Nays: but hee deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 Now when halfe the fealt was done, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man the Scriptures seeing that he neuer learned?

16 Iesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will doe his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 Hee that seeketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glorie: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true and no vnrighteousness is in him.

Exo. 24. 3.

Chap. 5. 12

19 * Did not Moses giue you a Law, and yet none of you keepeth the Law? * Why goe ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered, and said, Thou hast a deuill: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered, and said to them, I haue done one worke, and yett all maruile.

Leuit. 12. 3.

Gen. 17.

10.

22 * Moses therefore came vnto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the * fathers) and ye on the the Sabbath day circumsise a man.

C H A P. VII.

23 If a man on the Sabbath receive circumcision, that the Law of Moses should not be broken, be ye angry with mee, because I haue made a man euerie whit whole on the Sabbath day?

24 * Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righteous iudgement. *Deu. 1. 16*

25 ¶ Then sayd some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this he, whom they goe about to kill?

26 And behold, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing to him: doe the rulers know in deed that this is in deed that Christ?

27 He wher we know this man whence he is: but when that Christ cometh, no man shall know whence he is.

28 ¶ Then cryed Iesus in the Temple as hee taught, saying, Yee both know me and know whence I am: yet am I not come of my felie, but he that sent me, is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him: for I am of him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him, but no man layd handes on him because his houre was not yet come.

31 Now many of the people beleeyed in him, and sayd, When that Christ cometh, will hee doe more miracles then this man hath done?

32 The Pharises heard that the people murmured these things of him, and the Pharises, and the Priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a litte while with you, and then goe I vnto him that sent me.

34 * Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me, and where I am, can ye not come. *Cha. 23. 33*

35 Then said the Jewes among themselves, Whither will hee goe, that we shall not finde him? Will he goe vnto them that are dispersed among the Grecians?

36 What saying is this that he sayd Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me: (and where I am, can ye not come?)

37 Now in the last and * great day of the feast, Iesus stood and cryed, saying, Many man thirst, let him come vnto me, and drinke. *Leuit. 23. 36*

38 He that beleueth in me, * as sayth the Scripture, out of his belly shall flowe riuers of water of life. *Deut. 28. 15*

39 (* This spake he of the Spirit, which they that beleeyed in him, should receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Iesus was not yet glorified) *Ioh. 2. 28. act. 2. 17*

40 So many of the people, when they heard this saying, sayde, * Of a truth this is that Prophet. *Deut. 18*

41 Other sayd, This is that Christ: and some sayd, But shall that Christ come out of Galilee? *15.*

42 * Sayd

S. IOHN.

Mich. 5.2
Matth. 2.5

43 * Saith not the Scripture that that Christ shall come of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethlehem, where Dauid was?

43 So was there dissention among the people for him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to the hie Priests and Pharises, and they sayd vnto them Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharises. Are ye also deceiued?

48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Pharises beleeue in him?

49 But this people which know not the Law, are cursed.

Chap. 3.2

50 Nicodemus sayd vnto them, (* hee that came to Iesus by night, and was one of them)

Deut. 17.5
and 19.5

51 Doeth our Lawe iudge a man before it heare him, * and know what he hath done?

52 They answered, and said vnto him, Art thou also of Galile?

53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

C H A P. VIII.

3 The woman taken in adultery. 11 I haue her finnes forgiven her.
12 Christ the light of the worlde. 19 The Pharises aske where his Father is. 29 The sermones of Abraham. 42 The sermones of God. 44 The deuil the father of lying. 56 Abraham sawe Christe.

And Iesus went vnto the mount of Oliues,

2 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and hee satte downe, and taught them.

3 Then the Scribes and the Pharises brought vnto him a woman taken in adultery, and set her in the mids,

4 And sayd vnto him, Master, we found this woman committing adultery, euen in the very acte.

Leu. 20.10

5 * Now Moses in our Law commaunded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore?

6 And this they sayde to tempt him, that they might haue, whereof to accuse him. But Iesus stooped downe, and with finger wrote on the ground.

Deu. 17.7

7 And while they continued asking him, he lift himselfe vp, and sayd vnto them, * Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her.

8 And againe he stooped downe, and wrote on the ground.

9 And

CHAP. VIII.

9 And when they heard it, being accused by their owne conscience, they went out one by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last: so Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the mids.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe againe, and sawe no man, but the woman, he said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Iesus said, Neither doe I condemne thee: goe and sinne no more.

12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I * am that light *Chap. 1. 5. and 9. 5.* of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walke in darkenesse, but shall haue that light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said vnto him, Thou bearest record of thy selfe: thy record is not true.

14 * Iesus answered, & said vnto them, Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go. *Chap. 5. 38*

15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I iudge no man.

16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, and the Father, that sent me.

17 And it is also written in your Lawe, * That the testimonie of two men is true. *Deu 17. 6 and 19. 15*

18 I am one that beare witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnesse of me. *mat. 18. 16 2. cor. 13. 1. 1. cor. 10. 28.*

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is that Father of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had knowen me, ye should haue knowen that Father of mine also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasure, as he taught in the Temple, and no man laid hands on him; for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then said Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my way, and ye shall seeke me, & shal die in your sinnes. Whither I go, can ye not come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill himselfe, because he sayth, Whither I goe, can ye not come?

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from above: ye are of this world: I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you, That ye shall die in your sinnes: for except ye beleue, that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus said vnto them, Euen the same thing that I said vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of you: but he that sent me, is true. and the things that I haue heard of him, those speake I to the world.

S. I O H N.

27 They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shal ye know that I am he, & that I do nothing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught me, so I speake these things.

29 For he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone, because I doe alwayes those things that please him.

30 ¶ As he spake these things, many beleued in him.

31 Then said Iesus to the Iewes which beleued in him, If ye continue in my word, ye are verely my disciples,

32 And shall know the trueth, & the trueth shal make you free,

33 They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were neuer bond to any man: why sayest thou then, Ye shal be made free?

34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that whosoever committeth sinne, is the * seruant of sinne.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Sonne abideth for ever.

36 If that Sonne therefore shal make you free, ye shall be free in deed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed: but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye do that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They answered, and said vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would doe the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye goe about to kill me, a man that haue told you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the workes of your father. Then said they to him, We are not borne of fornication: we haue one father, which is God.

42 Therefore Iesus said vnto them, If God were your Father, then would yee loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe ye not vnderstand my talke? because yee cannot heare my word.

44 ¶ Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lusts of your father ye will doe: he hath bene a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie, then speaketh hee of his owne: for hee is a liar, and the father thereof.

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleene me not.

46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the truth, why doe ye not beleue me?

47. * He

CHAP. IX.

47 *He that is of God, heareth Gods word: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God. 1. John 4. 6.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say wee not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill, but I honour my Father, and ye haue dishonoured me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne praise: but there is one that seeketh it, and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I say vnto you, If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer see death:

52 Then said the Iewes to him, Now know we that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, mine honour is nothing worth: it is my Father that honourieth me, whom ye say, that he is your God.

55 Yet yee haue not knowen him: but I knowe him, and if I should say, I know him not, I should be a liar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his word.

56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day, and hee sawe it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yeere old, and hast thou seene Abraham?

58 Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then tooke they vp stones, to cast at him, but Iesus hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple: and he passed through the mids of them, and so went his way.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Christ giveth sight on the Sabbath day, to him that was borne blind: 13 Whom, after he had long reasoned againt the Pharisees, 22. 35 and was cast out of the Synagogue, 36 Christ endueth with the knowledge of the everlasting light.*

AND as Iesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sine, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blind?

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sined, nor his parents: but that the workes of God should be shewed on him.

4 I must worke the works of him that sent me, while it is day:

S. I O H N.

Chap 2.9.
and 8. 12.
and 12.35

the night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.
6 As soone as he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed the eyes of the blinde with the clay,

7 And said vnto him, Go wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent:) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came againe seeing.

8 Nowe the neighbours and they that had scene him before, when he was blind, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: and other said, He is like him: but he himselfe said, I am he.

10 Therefore they saide vnto him, Howe were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered, and sayd, The man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and wash. So I went, and washed, and receiued sight.

12 Then they said vnto him, Where is he? He said, I cannot tell.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharises him that was once blind.

14 And it was the Sabbath day, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharises also asked him, how he had receiued sight. And he said vnto them, He laid clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, and doe see.

16 Then said some of the Pharises, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a dissention among them.

17 Then spake they vnto the blinde againe, What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a Prophet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleue him, (that hee had bene blind, and receiued his sight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, whom ye say was borne blind? How doeth he now see then?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blind:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is old ynough; aske him he shall answer for himselfe.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes:
sat

CHAP. IX.

for the Iewes had ordeined already, if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is old ynough, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bene blind, and said vnto him, Giue glory vnto God: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 Then he answered and said, Whether he be a sinner, or no, I cannot tell: one thing I know, that I was blind, and now I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, What did hee to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye haue not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then reuiled they him, and said, Bee thou his disciple, we be Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake with Moses: but this man wee know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Doubtlesse, this is a maruelous thing, that ye know not whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we knowe, that God heareth not sinners. but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him heareth he.

32 Since the world began was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blind.

33 If this man were not of God, he could haue done nothing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, and dost thou teach vs? so they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when hee had found him, he said vnto him, Dost thou beleue in the Sonne of God?

36 He answered, and said, Who is hee, Lord, that I might beleue in him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Both thou hast seene him, and he it is that talketh with thee.

38 Then he said, Lord, I beleue, and worshipped him.

39 And Iesus said, I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that they which see not, might see: and that they * which see, might be made blind.

40 And some of the Pharises which were with him, heard these things, and said vnto him, Are we blind also?

41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blind, yee should not haue sinned: but now ye say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

S. I O H N.
C H A P. X.

1 Christ proueth that the Pharises are the euill shepheards, 8 and by many reasons, that himselfe 11. 14 is the good shepheard: 19 And thereof disputation ariseth. 31 They take vp stones, 39 and goe about to take him, but he escapeth.

Verely, verely I say vnto you, Hee that entreth not in by the doore into the sheepfold, but climeth vp another way, he is a theefe and a robber.

2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the shephcard of 5 sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he hath sent forth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him: for they know his voyce,

5 And they will not follow a stranger, but they flee from him: for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstode not what things they were, which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am the doore of the sheepe.

8 All that euer came before me, are theeuers and robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he shalbe saved, and shall goe in, and goe out, and find pasture.

10 The theefe cometh not, but for to steale, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and haue it in abundance.

7sa. 40. 11
ere. 34. 23 11 * I am that good shepheard: that good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe.

12 But an hireling, and he which is not the shepheard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the wolfe comming, and hee leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheepe.

13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am that good shepheard, and know mine, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, so know I the Father: and I lay downe my life for my sheepe.

ere. 37.
23.
7sa. 53 7. 16 Other sheepe I haue also, which are not of this fold: them also must I bring, and they shall heare my voyce: and * there shall be one sheepfold, and one shepheard.

17 Therefore doth my Father loue me, because I * lay downe

CHAP. X.

my life, that I might take it againe.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and haue power to take it againe: this *commandement haue I receiued of my Father.

19 ¶ Then there was a dissention againe among the Iewes: for these sayings,

20 And many of them said, He hath a deuill, and is mad: why heare ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a deuill: can the deuill open the eyes of the blind?

22 And it was at Hierusalem the *fiast of the Dedication*, and it was winter.

23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him, How long doest thou make vs doubt? If thou be that Christ, tell vs plainly.

25 Iesus answered them, I tolde you, and yre belecue not: the works that I doe in my Fathers Name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But ye belecue not: for ye are not of my sheepe, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voice, and I knowe them, and they follow me,

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perill, neither shall any plucke them out of mine hand.

29 My Father which gaue *them* me, is greater then all, and none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 ¶ Then the Iewes againe tooke vp stones, to stone him.

32 Iesus answered them, Many good works haue I shewed you from my Father: for which of these workes doe ye stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For thy good worke wee stone thee not, but for blasphemie, and that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your Law, * I said, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods, vnto whom the word of God was *giuē*, and the Scripture cannot be broken,

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleene me not.

38 But if I doe, then though yee beleue not me, yet beleue the workes,

S. I O H N.

worker, that yee may knowe and beleue, that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Again they went about to take him: but hee escaped out of their hands,

40 And went againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn first baptized, and there abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleued in him there.

C H A P. X I.

1 *Christ, to shewe that hee is 25 the life and the resurrection, 14 cometh to Lazarus being dead, 17 34 and buried, 43 and raise him vp. 47 As the Priests were consulting together, 49 Caiaphas 50 prophesieth that one must die for the people: 56 57 They commaund to seeke Christ out, and to take him.*

ANd a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethania, the

*Chap. 12. 3
mat 26 7-*

2 (And it was that * Mary which anoynted the Lorde with oyntment, and wiped his feete with her haire (whose brother Lazarus was sicke,)

3 Therefore his sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lord, behold, hee whom thou louest, is sicke,

4 When Iesus heard it, he said, This sicknesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 And after he had heard that hee was sicke, yet abode he two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, said he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea againe

8 The disciples said vnto him, Master, the Iewes lately sought

*Chap 7. 30
and 8 59.
Ch 10. 33.*

9 to * stone thee, and dost thou goe thither againe?

10 Ie answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world:

11 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

12 These things spake he, and after, hee said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeeth: but I goe to wake him vp.

13 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he shal be safe.

14 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of the naturall sleepe.

CHAP. XI.

14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there, that yee may beleue: but let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then said Thomas (which is called Didymus) vnto his fellow disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 ¶ Then came Iesus, and found that hee had lyen in the graue some dayes already.

18 (Now Bethania was nere vnto Hierusalem, about fiftene furlongs off.)

19 And many of the Iewes were come to Martha and Mary to comfort them for their brother.

20 Then Martha when she heard that Iesus was comming, went to meete him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

22 But now I know also, that whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha said vnto him, I know that he shall rise againe * in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection and the life, * hee that beleueth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he liue.

26 And whosoever liueth, and beleueth in me, shall neuer die: Beleuest thou this?

27 Shee said vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleue that thou art that Christ that Sonne of God, which should come into the world.

28 ¶ And when she had so said, she went her way, & called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 And when she heard it, she arose quickly, & came vnto him.

30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose vp hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and saw him, she fell downe at his feet, saying vnto him, Lorde, if thou haddest bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

33 When Iesus therefore sawe her weepe, and the Iewes also weepe which came with her, he grieved in the spirit, and was troubled in himselfe,

34 And said, Where haue yee laid him? They said vnto him, Lord,

Chap. 5. 29

Ioh. 1. 9. 1. 4

Chap. 6. 35

Lord, come and see.

35 And Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he loned him,

Chap. 9. 6.

37 And some of them said, * Could not he, which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue made also, that this man should not haue dyed?

38 Iesus therefore againe groned in himselfe, and came to the graue. And it was a caue, and a stone was laid vpon it.

39 Iesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh already: for he hath bene dead some dayes.

40 Iesus said vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou diddest belecue, thou shouldst see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thanke thee, because thou hast heard me.

42 I knowe that thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may belecue, that thou hast sent me.

43 As he had spoken these things, hee cryed with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foote with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said vnto them, Looe him, and let him goe.

45 ¶ Then many of the Iewes which came to Mary, and had seene the things, which Iesus did. beleueed in him.

46 But some of them went their way to the Pharises, and tolde them what things Iesus had done.

47 Then gathered the hie Priests and the Pharises a Conncill, and said, What shall we doe? for this man doth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleue in him, & the Romanes wil come and take away both our place, and the nation.

49 Then one of them named Caiaphas, which was the hie priest that same yeere, said vnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at all,

Chap. 18.
24.

50 * Nor yet doe you consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 This spake he not of himselfe: but being hie Priest that same yeere, he propheeted that Iesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that he should gather together in one, the children of God, which were scattered.

53 Then from that day forth they consulted together, to put him to death,

CHAP. XII.

34 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey nere to the wildernesse, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

35 ¶ And the Iewes Pasche was at hand, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusalem before the Pasche, to purifie themselves.

36 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he commeth not to the feast?

37 Nowe both the hie Priestes and the Pharises had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

2 As Christ is at supper with Lazarus, 3 Mary anointeth his feet, 5 Iudas findeth fault with her: 7 Christ defendeth her, 10 The Priests would put Lazarus to death. 12 As Christ commeth to Hierusalem, 18 the people meet him, 20 The Grecians desire to see him. 42 The chiefe rulers that beleue in him, but for feare doe not confesse him, 44 he exhorteth to faith.

Then * Iesus, sixe dayes before the Pasche, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whom he had raised from the dead.

Mat. 26. 7
mar. 14. 3.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard very costly, and anointed Iesus feete, and wiped his feet with her haire, and the house was filled with the sauour of the ointment.

4 Then said one of his disciples, *euen* Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this oyntment solde for three hundred pence, and giuen to the poore?

6 Now he said this, not that hee cared for the poore, but because he was a thiefe, and * had the bagge, and baie that which was giuen.

Chap. 13.
29.

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying she kept it.

8 For the poore alwaies ye haue with you, but me ye shall not haue alwaies.

9 Then much people of the Iewes knew that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead

10 The hie Priestes therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus

Lazarus to death also,

11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went away, and beleueed in Iesus.

Mat. 21.8 12 ¶ On the morow a great multitude that were come to
mar. 11.8 the feast, when they heard that Iesus should come to Hierusalem,

luke 19. 13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and went forth to meete
35. him, and cried, Hosanna, Blessed is the king of Israel that commeth
in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus found a yongasse, & sate thereon, as it is written,

Zech. 9. 9 15 * Feare not, daughter of Sion: Behold, thy king commeth
sitting on an asses colt.

16 But his disciples vnderstood not these things at the first: but
when Iesus was glorified, then remembered they, that these things
were written of him, & that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, bare witnesse that
he called Lazarus out of the graue, and raised him from the dead

18 Therefore met him the people also, because they heard that
he had done this miracle.

19 And the Pharises said among themselues, Perceiue yee how
ye preuaile nothing? Behold, the world goeth after him.

20 Now there were certaine Greekes among them that came
vp to worship at the feast.

21 And they came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida in Gali-
le, and desired him, saying. Sir, we would see that Iesus.

22 Philip came and told Andrew: and againe Andrew and Phi-
lip told Iesus.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the
Sonne of man must be glorified.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the wheate come fall
into the ground and die, it bldeth alone: but if it die, it bringeth
forth much fruit.

Mat. 10. 25 * He that loneth his life, shall lose it, and he that hateth his
39. and life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

16. 25. 26 * If any man serue me, let him follow me: for where I am,
mar. 8 35. there shall also my seruant bee: and if any man serue me, him will
34. my Father honour.

luke 9. 24 27 Now is my soule troubled; and what shal I say? Father, saue
and 17. 33 me from this houre: but therefore came I vnto this houre.

chap. 17. 28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voice from
34. heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, and will glorifie it againe.

29 Then said the people that stood by, and heard, that it was a
thunder: other said, An Angel spake to him.

CHAP. XII.

30 Iesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 *And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, will drawe all men vnto me. Chap. 3. 14

33 Now this said he, signifying what death he should die.

34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of the * Law, Psal 89. 36. and 110. 4. and 117. 2. isa. 40. 8. ezek. 37. 25. Chap. 1. 9
that that Christ abideth for euer: & now saiest thou, that that Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is that Sonne of man?

35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a little while is * the light with you: walke while ye haue that light, least the darknesse come vpon you: for he that walketh in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye haue that light, beleue in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid himselfe from them.

37 ¶ And though he had done so many miracles before them, yet beleued they not on him,

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled that he saide, * Lord, who beleued our report? and to whom is the arme of the Lord reueiled? Isai 53. 1. rom. 10. 16.

39 Therefore could they not beleue, because that Esaias saith againe,

40 * He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor vnderstand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heale them. Isa. 6. 9. matth. 13. 14. mark. 4. 12. luke 8. 10. act. 28. 26. rom. 11. 8.

41 These things said Esaias when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 Neuerthelesse, even among the chiefe rulers, many beleued in him: but because of the Pharises they did not confesse him, least they should be cast out of the Synagogue.

43 * For they loued the praise of men, more then the praise of God. Chap. 5. 44

44 And Iesus cried, and said, He that beleueneth in me, beleueth in me, but in him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 I * am come a light into the world, that whofoener beleueth in me, should not abide in darknesse. Chap. 3. 19. and 9. 39. Chap. 3. 17

47 * And if any man heare my words, and beleue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to save the world.

48 Hee that refuseeth mee, and receiueth not my wordes, hath

one

S. I O H N.

Mat. 16.
16.

one that iudgeth him: * the word that I haue spoken, it shall iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father, which sent me, he gaue me a commandement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I knowe that his commandement is life euermlasting: the things therefore that I speake, I speake *them* so as the Father said vnto me.

C H A P. XIII.

4 *(Christ rising from supper, 15 to commend humilitie to his Apostles, washeth their feet. 21 He noteth the traitour Judas 28 with an euident token. 34 He commendeth charity. 37- 39 He foretelleth Peter of his deniall.*

Mat. 26.
2 marke
14. 1. luke
22. 11.

NOW * before the feast of the Pascheuer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this world vnto the Father, forasmuch as he loued his owne which were in the world, vnto the end he loued them,

2 And when supper was done (and that the deuill had now put in the heart of Iudas Icarior, Simons sonne to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come forth from God and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and layeth aside *his* upper garments, and tooke a towell, and guided himselfe.

5 After that, he powred water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towell, wherewith he was girded.

6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who said to him, Lord, dost thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered and said vnto him, What I do, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know it hereafter.

8 Peter said vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part with me

9 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but also the hands and the head.

10 Iesus said to him, He that is washed needeth not, save to wash *his* feete, but is cleane euery whit: and * yee are cleane, but not all:

11 For he knew who should betray him: therefore said he, Yee are not all cleane.

12 «So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Knowe yee what I haue done to you?

CHAP. XIII.

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and ye say well: for so am I.

14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I haue given you an example, that ye should doe, euen as I haue done to you.

16 Verely, verely I say vnto you, * The seruant is not greater then his master, neither the ambassadour greater then hee that sent him.

17 If ye know these things blessed are ye, if ye doe them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all: I knowe whome I haue chosen: but it is that the Scripture might be fulfilled, * He that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me.

19 From henceforth tell I you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleue that I am he.

20 * Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I send any, hee that receiveth him, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

21 When Iesus had said these things, hee was troubled in the Spirit, and testified and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 * Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was one of his disciples, which leaned on Iesus bolour, whom Iesus loued.

24 To him beckned therefore Simon Peter, that he should aske who it was of whom he spake.

25 Hee then, as he leaned on Iesus breast, said vnto him, Lorde, who is it?

26 Iesus answered, Hee it is, to whome I shall give a sop, when I haue dipt it: and he wet a sop, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simonis foris.

27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him. Then said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.

28 But none of them that were at table, knewe for what cause he spake it vnto him.

29 For some of them thought because Iudas had the bagge, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy those things that we haue neede of against the feast, or that he should giue something to the poore.

30 As soone then as he had receiued the sop, he went immediately out, and it was night.

31 ¶ When hee was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If

Chap. 13.

20 Math.

10. 24.

Iuke 6. 40.

Psal. 41. 9.

Mat. 10.

40. Iuke

10. 16.

Mat. 7. 6.

21. Marke

14. 18.

Iuke 22.

21.

S. I O H N.

Chap. 7. 34

Chap. 15.

12. leuis.

19. 18.

mat. 22.

39. 1. ioh.

4. 21.

Mat. 26.

33. Marke

14. 29.

Luke 22.

33.

32 If God bee glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while am I with you: ye shall seeke me, but as I said vnto the * Iewes, Whither I go, can ye not come: also to you say I now,

34 A * new commandement giue I vnto you, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you, that ye also loue one another.

35 By this shall all men know that yee are my disciples, if yee haue loue one to another.

36 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterward.

37 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why can I not follow thee now? * I will lay downe my life for thy sake.

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake? Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke shall not crow till thou haue denied me thrice.

C H A P. XIII.

1 He comforteth his disciples, 2. 7 declaring his diuinitie and the fruit of his death, 16 promising the comforter, 17 euen the holy spirit, 26 whose office he setteth out, 27 He promiseth his peace.

Let not your heart be troubled: ye beleene in God, beleene also in me.

2 In my fathers house are many dwelling places: if it were not so, I would haue told you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I goe to prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe, & where I am, there may ye be also.

4 And whither I goe, ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas said vnto him, Lord, wee know not whither thou goest: how can we then know the way?

6 Iesus said vnto him, I am that Way, and that Truth, and that Life. No man cometh vnto the Father, but by me.

7 If yee had knowen me, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and haue seene him.

8 Philip said vnto him, Lord, shewe vs thy Father, and it sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus said vnto him, I haue bene so long time with you, and hast thou not knowen me, Philip? he that hath seene me, hath seene my Father: how then sayest thou, Shew vs thy Father?

10 Beleuest thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me? The wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes.

11 Beleue

C H A P. XIII.

11 Beleue me, that I *am* in the Father, and the Father *is* in mee: at the least beleue me for the very workes sake.

12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, hee that beleueth in mee, the workes that I doe, hee shall doe also, and greater then these shall he doe: for I goe vnto my Father.

13 *And whatsoeuer ye aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne.

14 If ye shall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it.

15 If ye loue me, keepe my commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, and hee shall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer.

17 *Even* the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receiue, becaule it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth in you, and shalbe in you.

18 I will not leaue you fatherlesse: *but* will come to you.

19 Yet a little *while*, and the world shall see me no more, but ye shall see mee: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, is hee that loueth me: and hee that loueth me, shall be loued of my Father: and I will loue him, and will shew mine owne selfe to him.

22 Iudas said vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord, what is the cause that thou wilt shew thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered and sayd vnto him, If any man loue me, he will keepe my worde, and my Father will loue him, and wee will come vnto him, and will dwell with him.

24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my wordes, and the word which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being present with you.

26 *But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, he shall teach you all things & bring al things to your remembrance, which I haue told you.

27 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart bee troubled, nor feare.

28 Ye haue heard howe I sayd vnto you, I goe away, and will come vnto you. If yee loued mee, yee would verely reioyce, because I said, I goe vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I.

29 And now haue I spoken vnto you, before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleue.

Chap. 13

23. mat.

7. 7. mat.

11. 24.

1. 1. 5

Chap. 13

26.

S. I O H N.

30 Hereafter will I not speake many things vnto you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nought in me.

31 But it is that the world may knowe that I loue my Father^r and as the Father hath commanded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs goe hence,

C H A P. XV.

1 By the parable of the vine, 2 and the branches, 3, 6 he declar-
eth howe the disciples may beare fruit. 12. 17 He commendeth
mutual loue. 18 He exhorteth them to beare afflictions patiently,
20 by his owne example.

I Am that true Vine, and my Father is that husbandman.

Mat. 15
13.

2 * Euery branch that beareth not fruit in mee, hee taketh
away: and euery one that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may
bring forth more fruit.

Chap. 13
10.

3 * Now are yee cleane through the word, which I haue spo-
ken vnto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branch cannot beare fruit
of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can yee, except yee
abide in me.

5 I am that Vine: ye are the branches: he that abideth in mee,
and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without mee
ye can doe nothing.

Col. 1. 23

6 * If a man abide not in me, hee is cast forth as a branch, and
withereth: and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and
they burne.

1. John 3.
21.

7 * If ye abide in mee and my wordes abide in you, aske what
ye will, and it shalbe done to you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, and
be made my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued mee, so haue I loued you: con-
tinue in that my loue.

10 If ye shall keepe my commandements, ye shall abide in my
loue, as I haue kept my Fathers commandements, and abide in his
loue.

Chap. 13

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might re-
maine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

34 1. thes.
4. 9. 1. John
3. 11. and
4. 21

12 * This is my commandement, that yee loue one another, as
I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man bestow-
eth his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye doe whatsoeuer I command you.

15 Henceforth call I you not seruants: for the seruant knoweth
not

C H A P. XV.

not what his master doeth : but I haue called you friendes : for all things that I haue heard of my Father , haue I made knownen to you.

16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordeined you, * that yee goe and bring forth fruite, and that your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer yee shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you. Mat. 28. 19.

17 These things command I you, that yee loue one another.

18 If the world hate you, yee knowe that it hated mee before you.

19 If yee were of the world, the world would loue his owne: but because yee are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I sayd vnto you, * The seruant is not greater then his master. * If they haue persecuted me, they will persecute you also: if they haue kept my word, they wil also keepe yours. Chap. 13. 16. Mat. 20. 24. Mat. 24. 9 Chap. 16. 4

21 But * all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they haue not knownen him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken vnto them, they should not haue had sinne: but now haue they no cloke for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done workes among them which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but now haue they both seene, and haue hated both me and my Father.

25 But *it is* that the word might bee fulfilled, that is written in their Law, * They hated me without a cause.

26 But when that Comforter shall come, * whom I will send vnto you from the father, *euen* the Spirit of truth which proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of me. Psa. 39. 19. Chap. 14. 26.

27 And ye shall witnesse also, because yee haue bene with mee from the beginning. luk. 24. 49

C H A P. XVI.

1 Hee foretelleth the disciples of persecuti-on. 7 Hee promisseth the Comforter, and declareth his office. 21 He comparseth the afflictions of this, to a woman that travaileth with childe.

These things haue I sayd vnto you, that yee should not be offended.

2 They shall excommunicate you, yea, the time shal come that whosoever killeth you, will thinke that he doeth God service.

3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not knownen the Father, nor me,

S. I O H N.

Chap. 15.
21.

4 *But these things haue I tolde you, that when the houre shall come, yee might remember, that I tolde you them. And these things sayde I not vnto you from the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you, your hearts are full of sorrow.

7 Yet I tell you the truth, It is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, that Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, hee will reprove the world of sinne, and of righteousness, and of iudgement:

9 Of sinne, because they beleueed not in me:

10 Of righteousness, because I goe to my Father, and yee shall see me no more:

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this world is indged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but yee cannot beare them now.

13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of truth, he will leade you into all truth: for hee shall not speake of himselfe, but what soeuer he shall heare, that he speake, and he will shew you the things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me: for hee shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore sayd I, that he shall take of mine, and shew it vnto you.

16 A little while, and yee shall not see mee: and againe a little while, and yee shall see me: for I goe to the Father.

17 Then sayd some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that hee saith vnto vs, A little while, and yee shall not see me, and againe, A little while, and yee shall see me, and, For I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we know not what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knew what they would aske him, and said vnto them, Doe yee enquire among your selues, of that I said, A little while, and yee shall not see me: and againe, A little while, and yee shall see me?

20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, that yee shall weepe and lament, and the world shall reioyce: and yee shall sorrow, but your sorrow shall be turned to ioy.

C H A P. XVII.

22 A woman when shee trauaileth hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but as soone as shee is deliuered of the childe, shee remembereth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

23 And yee now therefore are in sorrow: but I will see you againe, and your hearts shall reioyce, and your ioy shall no man take from you.

24 And in that day shall ye aske me nothing. * Verely, verely I say vnto you, What soeuer yee shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you.

25 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and yee shall receive, that your ioy may be full.

26 These things haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the time will come, when I shall no more speake vnto you in parables: but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

27 At that day shall yee aske in my Name, and I say not vnto you, that I will pray vnto the Father for you:

28 For the Father himselfe loneth you because yee haue loued me: and haue beleued that I came out from God.

29 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: againe I leaue the world, and goe to the Father.

30 His disciples said vnto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and thou speakest in parable.

31 Now know wee that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should aske thee. By this we beleue, that thou art come out from God.

32 Iesus answered them, Doe yee beleue now?

33 * Behold, the houre cometh, and is already come, that yee shall be scattered every man into his owne, and shall leaue me alone: but I am not alone, for the Father is with me.

34 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that in the yee might haue peace: in the world yee shall haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue overcome the world.

C H A P. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth that his church together with his Fathers may be made manifest. 9 Hee prayeth for his Apostles, 20 and for all beleuers.

THese things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee,

3 * As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to all them that thou hast given him.

O

And

*Chap. 14.
13 mar. 7.
7. and 21.
22. mar.
11. 24.
Iuke 11. 9.
Iam. 1. 5.*

Chap. 17. 8

*Mat. 26.
31. mar.
34. 27.*

*Mat. 28.
18.*

S. I O H N.

3 And this is life eternall, that they know thee *to be* the onely very God, and whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe:

5 And now glorifie me: thou Father, with thine owne selfe, with the glorie which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them mee, and they haue kept thy word.

*Chap. 16.
27.*

7 * Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast giuen me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes, which thou gauest me, and they haue receiued *them*, and haue knowen surely that I came out from thee, and haue beleuened that thou hast sent me.

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast giuen me: for they are thine,

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now am I no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe them in thy Name, *eu*n them whom thou hast giuen mee, that they may bee one, as wee are.

*Psal. 105.
7.* 12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest me, haue I kept, and none of them is lost, but the childe of perdition, that the * Scripture might bee fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things speake I in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou keepe them from euill.

16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them with thy truth: thy word is truth.

18 As thou diddest send me into the world, so haue I sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, that they also may be sanctified through the truth.

20 I pray not for these alone, but for them also which shall beleeue in me through their word,

21 That they all may be one, as thou, O Father, art in me, and I in thee: *eu*n that they may bee also one in vs, that the world may

C H A P. XVIII.

may beleuee that thou hast sent me,

22 And the glory that thou gauest me, I haue giuen them, that they may be one, as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in mee, that they may bee made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them as thou hast loued me.

24 Father, I will that they which thou hast giuen mee, bee with mee euen where I am, that they may behold that my glory, which thou hast giuen mee: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world. Chap. 12.
36.

25 O righteous Father, the world also hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, and these haue knowen that thou hast sent mee.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may bee in them, and I in them.

C H A P. XVIII.

1 By Christs power whom Iudas betrayeth, 6 The souldiers are cast downe to the ground. 13 Christ is led to Annas, and from him to Cazaphas. 22. 23 He answereth to the officers that smote him with a rod, 28 Being deliuered to Pilate, 36 he declareth his kingdome.

When Iesus had spoken these things, he went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke * Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples.

2 And Iudas which betrayed him, knew also the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 *Iudas then after he had receiued a band of men and officers of the hie Priests, and the Pharises, came thither with lanternes, and torches, and weapons. Mat. 26.
36. Marke
14. 32. Luke
22. 39.
Matth. 26
47. Marke
14. 43.
Luke 22.
47.

4 Then Iesus knowing all things that should come vnto him, went forth, and sayd vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus sayd vnto them, I am hee. Now Iudas also which betrayed him stood with them.

6 Assoone then as he had sayd vnto them, I am hee, they went away backwards and fell to the ground.

7 Then he asked them againe, Whom seeke ye: and they sayd, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I sayd vnto you, that I am hee: therefore if ye seeke me, let these goe their way.

9 This was that the word might bee fulfilled which hee spake,

S. IOHN.

Chap. 17

12

* Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the hie Priests servant, and cut off his right eare. Nowe the servants name was Malchus.

11 Then sayd Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sworde into the sheath: shall I not drinke of the cup which my Father hath given mee?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and the officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus and bound him,

Luke 3.2

13 And led him away to * Annas first (for he was father in law to Caiaphas which was the hie Priest that same yeeer)

Chap. 11

30

14 * And Caiaphas was he, that gave counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

Mat. 26

58.

mark

14

54

luke 22.54

15 ¶ Now Simon Peter followed Iesus, and another disciple, and that disciple was knowne of the hie Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest:

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out the other disciple which was knowne vnto the hie Priest, and spake to her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then sayd the mayd that kept the doore vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He said, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, which had made a fire of coles: for it was cold, and they warmed themselves. And Peter also stood among them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ (The hie Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine,

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world: I neuer taught in the Synagogue and in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually, and in secret have I sayd nothing.

21 Why askest thou mee? aske them which heard me what I sayd vnto them: behold, they know what I sayd.

22 When he had spoken these things, one of the officers which stood by, smote Iesus with his rod, saying, Answerest thou the hie Priest? so?

23 Iesus answered him, If I have euill spoken, beare witnesse of the euill: but if I have well spoken, why smitest thou me?

Matth. 26

57.

luke 22

54.

Matth. 26

69.

marke

14

59

luke 22.55

24 ¶ Nowe Annas had sent him bound to Caiaphas the hie Priest)

25 * And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe, and they said vnto him, Art thou also of his disciples? Hee denied it, and sayd, I am not.

26 One of the servants of the hie Priest, his cousin whose

eare

C H A P. XVIII.

ere Peter smote off, sayde, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the Cocke crew.

28 ¶ Then led they Iesus from Caiphas into the common hall. Now it was morning, and they themselves went not into the common hall, lest they should be defiled, but that they might eate the Pascheouer.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and sayd, What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered, and said vnto him, If he were not an euill doer, we would not haue deliuered him vnto thee.

31 Then said Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and iudge him after your owne Law. Then the Iewes sayd vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death.

32 It was that the word of Iesus might be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

33 ¶ So Pilate entred into the common hall againe, and called Iesus, and sayd vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou that of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of mee?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, and the hie Priests haue deliuered thee vnto me. What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, my seruants would surely fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate then sayd vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King: for this cause am I borne, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should beare witnesse vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voice.

38 Pilate sayd vnto him, What is trueth? And when hee had said that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and sayd vnto them, I finde in him no cause at all.

39 ¶ But you haue a custome, that I should deliuer you one looke at the Pascheouer: will ye then that I loose vnto you the King of the Iewes?

40 ¶ Then cryed they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barabbas: now this Barabbas was a murderere.

C H A P. XIX.

1 Pilate, when Christ was scourged, 2 and crowned with thorne, 4 was desirous to let him loose: 8 but being overcome with the

Mat. 27.1

Mar. 15.1

Luke 23.1

Acts 10

28. and

11.3.

Mat. 20

19.

Matth. 27

11. mar.

15. 2. Luke

23.3

Matth. 27

15. mar. 16

15. 6. Luke

23. 17

Acts 3. 14

S. IOHN.

outrage of the Iewes, 16 hee deliuereith him to bee crucified.
26 Iesus committeth his mother to the disciple. 30 Having ta-
sted vinegar, he dieth: 34 and being dead, his side is pearced with
a speare. 40 He is buried.

Mat. 27

27. Marke

15. 16

Then * Pilate tooke Iesus and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put
it on his head, and they put on him a purple garment,

3 And said, Haile King of the Iewes. And they smote him with
their rods.

4 Then Pilate went forth againe, and sayd vnto them, Behold,
I bring him sooth to you, that ye may know, that I finde no fault
in him at all.

5 Then came Iesus soorth, wearing a crowne of thornes, and a
purple garment. And Pilate said vnto them, Behold the man.

6 Then when the hie Priests and officers saw him, they cryed,
saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. Pilate sayd vnto them, Take yee him,
and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, Wee haue a law, and by our law
he ought to die, because he made himselfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate then heard that worde, hee was the more
afraid,

9 And went againe into the common hall, and sayd vnto Ie-
sus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him none answer.

10 Then sayd Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto mee?
Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue po-
wer to loose thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against
me, except it were given thee from aboue: therefore he that deli-
uered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 From thence soorth Pilate sought to loose him, but the
Iewes cryed, saying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Césars
friend: for whosoever maketh him selfe a King, speaketh against
Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate heard this word, he brought Iesus soorth, and
sate downe in the iudgement seate, in a place called the Pavement,
and in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the Pasche, and about the
sixt honre: and he sayd vnto the Iewes, Behold your King.

Mat 27

3. Marke

15. 25. Luke.

23. 26.

15 But they cryed, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him.
Pilate sayd vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The hie Priests
answered, We haue no king but Cesar.

16 Then deliuered hee him vnto them to bee crucified. * And
they

CHAP. XIX.

they tooke Iesus, and led him away.

17 And he bare his owne crosse, and came into a place named of dead mens skuls, which is called in Hebrew, Golgotha :

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one and Iesus in the middes.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote also a title, and put it on the crosse, and it was written, I E S V S OF NA Z A R E T H T H E KING OF T H E I E W E S.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was neere to the citie: and it was written in Hebrew, Greeke, and Latin.

21 Then sayd the hie Priestes of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but that hee sayd, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written.

23 ¶ Then the * souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, tooke his garments (and made foure parts, to euery souldier a part) and his coate: and the coate was without seame wouen from the top throughout. Mat. 27.
55. mar.
15 24.

24 Therefore they said one to another, Let vs not diuide it but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. *This was* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, * They parted my garments among them, and on my coate did cast lots. So the souldiers did these things in deede. Psal. 22.
18.

25 ¶ Then stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Marie *the wife of Cleophas*, and Marie Magdalene.

26 And when Iesus saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loued, he said vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne.

27 Then said he to the disciple, Behold thy mother: and from that houre, the disciple tooke her home vnto him.

28 ¶ After, when Iesus knew that all things were performed, that the * Scripture might be fulfilled, he said, I thirst. Psal. 69.
22.

29 And there was set a vessel full of vineger: and they filled a sponge with vineger, and put it about an hyssope stalk, and put it to his mouth.

30 Now when Iesus had receiued of the vineger, hee said, It is finished, and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes then (because it was the Preparation, that the Ioudies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath day: for that Sabbath was an hie day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken downe.

53 Then

S. I O H N.

32 Then came the souldiers and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with *Iesus*.

33 But when they came to *Iesus*, and saw that hee was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pearced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that yee might beleue it.

36 For these things were done that the Scripture should bee fulfilled, * Not a bone of him shalbe broken.

37 And againe another Scripture sayth, * They shall see him whom they haue thrust through.

38 * And after these things *Ioseph* of Arimathea (who was a disciple of *Iesus*, but secretly for feare of the *Iewes*) besought *Pilate* that he might take downe the body of *Iesus*. And *Pilate* gaue him licence. He came then and tooke *Iesus* body.

39 And there came * also *Nicodemus* (which first came to *Iesus* by night) and brought of myrrhe and aloes mingled together about an hundreth pound.

40 Then tooke they the body of *Iesus*, and wrapped it in linnen clothes with the odours, as the maner of the *Iewes* is to burie.

41 And in that place where *Iesus* was crucified. was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet layde.

42 There then layd they *Iesus*, because of the *Iewes* preparation day, for the sepulchre was neere.

C H A P. XX.

1 *Mary* bringeth word that *Christ* is risen. 3 *Peter* and *John* come to see it. 15 *Iesus* appeareth to *Mary*, 19 and to the disciples that were together in the house. 25 *Thomas*, before faithlesse. 29 now beleeueth.

NOW * the first day of the weeke came *Mary Magdalene*, early when it was yet darke, vnto the sepulchre, and saw the stone taken away from the tombe.

2 Then shee ranne, and came to *Simon Peter*, and to the other disciple whom *Iesus* loved, and sayd vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they haue layd him.

3 *Peter* therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and they came vnto the sepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, but the other Disciple did outrunne

Exod. 12.

46 numb.

9. 12.

Zech. 12.

10.

Mat. 27.

57. mar.

15. 43.

luke 23.

50.

Chap. 3. 2.

Mar. 16. 1.

luke 24. 1.

CHAP. XXI.

ourinne Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And hee stouped downe, and saw the linnen clothes lying yet went he not in.

6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre and saw the linnen clothes lie,

7 And the kercheife that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also the other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw it, and beleueed.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, That hee must rise againe from the dead.

10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, shee bowed her selfe into the sepulchre, Mat. 28. 1.

12 And saw two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had layen. Mat. 28. 5.

13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Shee said vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue layed him.

14 When shee had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and saw Iesus standing and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Whome seekest thou? Shee supposing that hee had bene the gardiner, said vnto him, Syr, if thou hast borne him hence, tell mee where thou hast layd him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Marie. Shee turned her selfe, and said vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus sayth vnto her, Touch mee not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and to your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that shee had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things vnto her.

19 ¶ The same day then at night, which was the first day of the weeke, and when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stood in the middles, and said to them, Peace be vnto you. Mat. 28. 16.

20 And when hee had so said, he shewed vnto them his hands, and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they had seene the Lord. 14. Luke 24. 36.

21 ¶ Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace be vnto you: as my Father sent me, so send I you. 1. Cor. 15. 5.

22 And Mat. 28. 18.

S. IOHN.

22 And when he had said that, hee breathed on them, and said vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghost.

23 Whoso euer sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them and whoso euer sinnes yee reteine, they are reteined.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord: but hee said vn o them, Except I see in his hands, the print of the nayles, and put my finger into the print of the nayles, and put my hand into his side, I will not beleuee it.

26 ¶ And eight dayes after againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Then came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stood in the mids, and said, Peace be vnto you.

27 After, said he to Thomas. Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, and put forth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but faithfull.

28 Then Thomas answered, and sayd vnto him, Thou art my Lord and my God.

29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas. because thou hast seene me, thou beleuest: blessed are they that haue not seene, and haue beleueed.

30 ¶ And many other signes also did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.

31 But these things are written, that yee might beleuee, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, and that in beleueing yee might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Iesus appeareth to his disciples as they were a fishing, 6. 7 whom they knew by a miraculous draught of fishes. 15 He committeth the charge of the sheepe to Peter, 18 and foretelleth him of the manner of his death.

After these things, Iesus shewed himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and thus shewed he himselfe.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galile, and the sonnes of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I goe a fishing. They said vnto him. We also will goe with thee. Then they went their way and entred into a shippe straightway, and that night caught they nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shore: neuertheless the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus

Chap. 1.
35.

C H A P. XXI.

5 Iesus then said vnto them, Sirs, haue yee any meate? They answered him, No.

6 Then hee said vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde. So they cast out, and they were not able at all to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore said the disciple whome Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coate to him (for he was naked) and cast himselfe into the sea.

8 But the other disciples came by ship (for they were not farre from land, but about two hundreth cubites) and they drew the net with fishes.

9 Assonne then as they were come to land, they saw hot coles, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus said vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter stepped forth and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundreth fiftie and three: and albeit there were to many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus said vnto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knew that he was the Lord.

13 Iesus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen againe from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus said to Simon Peter, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, louest thou mee more then these? Hee said vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 He said to him againe the second time, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, louest thou mee? Hee sayd vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

17 He said vnto him the third time, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, louest thou mee? Peter was sory because hee said to him the third time, Louest thou mee? and said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest all things: thou knowest that I loue thee. Iesus sayd vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

18 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, When thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be olde, thou shalt stretch forth thine hands, and another shall gird thee, and leade thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 And

THE ACTES.

Chap. 13.
23

19 And this spake he signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had said this, he said to him, Follow me,

20 Then Peter turned about, and sawe the disciple whom Iesus loued, following, which had also * leaned on his breast at supper, and had sayd, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

21 When Peter therefore saw him, he said to Iesus, Lord, what shall this man doe?

22 Iesus sayd vnto him, If I will that he tary till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me.

Chap. 20
30

23 Then went this word abroad among the brethren, that this disciple should not die. Yet Iesus sayd not vnto him, Hee shall not die: but, If I will that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee?

24 This is that disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is true.

25 * Now there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose the world could not containe the bookes that should be written. AMEN

THE ACTES OF THE HOLY APOSTLES WRITTEN

by Luke the Euangelist.

CHAP. I.

1 Luke teach this history to his Gospel. 9 Christ being taken into heauen, 10 the Apostles 11 being warned by the Angel, 12 retorne, 13 and giue themselves to prayer. 15 By Peters motion, 18 into Judas the traitours place, Matthias is chosen.



Have made the former treatise, O Theophilus, of all that I E S V S began to doe and teach,

2 Vntill the day, that hee was taken vp, after that hee through the holy Ghost, had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles, whome hee had chosen:

Luke 24
49
Job. 14. 25
Chap. 2. 3
and 11. 16
and 19. 4
mat. 3. 13
mar. 1. 8
I. 3. 16

3 To whom also he presented himselfe aliuie after that he had suffered, by many infallible tokens, being scene of them by the space of fourty dayes, and speaking of those things which appertaine to the kingdome of God.

4 * And when he had gathered them together, he commanded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to waite for the promise of the Father, * which, sayd hee, yee haue heard of mee:

5 * For Iohn in dedde baptixed with water, but yee shall be baptixed

CHAP. I

baptized with the holy Ghost within these few dayes.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 *But ye shall receive power of the holy Ghost, when he shall come on you: and ye shall be witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the uttermost part of the earth.

Chap. 2. 2.

9 *And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of their sight.

Luke 24. 51.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as hee went, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galil-, why stand ye gazing into heauen? This Iesus which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 ¶ Then returned they vnto Hierusalem from the mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues, which is neere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and Iames and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartlemewe, and Matthewe, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames brother.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the middes of the disciples, and saide, (now the number of names that were in one place were about an hundreth and twentie)

16 Ye men and brethren, this Scripture must needs haue bene fulfilled, which *the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before of Iudas, which was * guide to them that tooke Iesus.

Psal 41 9.

John 13.

17 For he was numbred with vs, and had obtained fellowship in this ministration.

27.

18 He therefore hath purchased a feldc with the reward of iniquitie: and when he *had throwen downe himselfe headlong, hee brast asunder in the mids, and all his bowels gushed out.

Mat. 27 5.

19 And it is known vnto all the inhabitants of Hierusalem, in so much that that feldc is called in their owne language Acladama that is, The field of blood.

Psal. 69.

20 For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, *Let his habitation

26.

THE ACTES.

P/a. 109.7 be void, and let no man dwell therein: ¹⁰ also, let another take his charge.

21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lord Iesus was conuersant among vs,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn vnto the day that hee was taken vp from vs, must one of them be made a witnesse with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they presented two, Ioseph called Barabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, saying, Thou Lorde, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take the rounge of this ministratioun and Apostleship, from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place.

26 Then they gaue forth their lours: and the lot fell on Matthias, and he was by a comon consent counted with the eleuen Apostles.

C H A P. II.

1 The Apostles 4 filled with the hoily Ghost, 8 speake with diuers tongues: 12 They are thought to be drunke, 15 but Peter disproueth that. 34 He teacheth that Christ is the Messias:

37 And seeing the hearers astonied, 38 he exhorteth them to repentance.

AND when the day of Pentecost was come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen, as of a rushing and mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they sat.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sat vpon ech of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God of every nation vnder heauen.

6 Now when this was noised, the multitude came together, and were astonied, because that every man heard them speake his owne language.

7 And they wondered all, and marvelled, saying among themselves, Behold, are not all these which speake, of Galile?

8 How then heare we every man our owne language, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, & of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus and Asia,

10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the partes
of

C H A P. II.

of Libya, which is beside Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, & Iewes, and Profelytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabianst we heard them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull ~~workes~~ ^{works} of God.

12 They were all then amased, and doubted, saying one to another, What may this be?

13 And others mocked, and said, They are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing with the eleuen list vp his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, ~~and~~ ye all that inhabite Hierusalem, be this knowen vnto you, and hearken vnto my words,

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, since it is but the third houre of the day.

16 But this is that, which was spoken by the Prophet * Ioel,

Ioel. 2. 28.

17 And it shalbe in the last dayes, saith God, I will powre out my Spirit vpon all flesh, and your sonnes and your daughters shall prophecie, and your yong men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreames.

Isa. 24-26

18 And on my seruants, and on my handmaidcs I will powre out of my Spirit in those dayes, and they shall prophecie,

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath, blood, and fire, and the vapour of smoke.

20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darknesse, and the moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

21 And it shall be, that whosoener shall call on the Name of the Lord, shall be saved.

22 Ye men of Israel, heare these words, I E S V S of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you with great works, and wonders and signes, which God did by him in the mids of you, as yee your selues also know:

23 Him, *7/ai.* being deliuered by the determinate counsell, and foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, with wicked hands you haue crucified and slaine.

24 Whom God hath raised vp, and loosed the sorowes of death, because it was vnpossible that he should be holden of it.

25 For Dauid saith concerning him, * I beheld the Lord alwaies be ore me for he is at my right hand, that I should not be shaken.

Psal. 118. 9

26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce and my tongue was glad, and moreover al o my flesh shall rest in hope:

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in graue, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.

28 Thou hast shewed me the wayes of life, and shalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance.

THE ACTES.

Chap. 13.

36.

1. king. 2.

10.

Psal. 132.

11.

Chap. 13.

35.

Psal. 15.

10.

Psal. 110.

3.

29 Men *and* brethren, I may boldly speake vnto you of the patriarch Dauid,* that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre remaineth wth vs vnto this day.

30 Therefore, seeing he was a Prophet, and knewe that God had * sworne with an othe to him, that of the fruite of his loynes he would raise vp Christ concerning the flesh, to set him vpon his throne,

31 He knowing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that * his soule should not be left in graue, neither his flesh should see corruption.

32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Since then that he by the right hand of God hath bene exalted, and hath receined of his Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into heaven, but he saith, * The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand,

35 Vntill I make thine enemies thy footestool.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know for a suretie that God hath made him both Lord, and Christ, this Iesus, *I say*, whom ye haue crucified.

37 Now when they heard it, they were pricked in their hearts, and said vnto Peter and the other Apostles, Men, *and* brethren, what shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Amend your liues, and be baptized euery one of you in the name of Iesus Christ for the remission of sinnes: and ye shall receiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is made vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarie off, *even* as many as *y* Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other wordes he besought and exhorted *them*, saying, Saue your selues from this froward generation.

41 Then they that gladly receined his word, were baptized: and the same day, there were added *to the Church* about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued in the Apostles doctrine, and fellowship, and breaking of bread, and prayers.

43 ¶ And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that belceued, were in one place, and had all things common.

45 And they sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one accord in the Temple,

CHAP. III.

and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart,

47 Praying God, and had fauour with all the people: and the Lord added to the Church from day to day, such as should be saved.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter goeth vp into the Temple with Iohn, 2 healeth the creeple. 9 To the people gathered together to see the miracle, 12 he expoundeth the mystery of our saluation through Christ, 14 accusing their ingratitude, 19 and requiring their repentance.

NOW Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.

2 And a certaine man which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, was caried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, desired to receiue an almes.

4 And Peter earnestly beholding him with Iohn, sayd, Looke on vs

5 And he gaue heed vnto them, trusting to receiue something of them.

6 Then said Peter. Silver and gold haue I none. but such as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the hand, and lift him vp, and immediately his feete and a kile bones receiued strength.

8 And he leaped vp, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walke, and praising God.

10 And they knew him, that it was he which sat for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were amazed, and sore astonied at that, which was come vnto him.

11 And as the creeple which was healed helde Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amazed vnto them in the porch which is called Salomons

12 So when Peter saw it, he answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke yee so sadly on vs, as though by our owne power or goodliasse, we had made this man goe.

13 The God of Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, the * God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom ye betrayed, and

THE ACTES.

denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be deliuered.

14 But ye denied the Holy one and the Iust, and desired a murderer to be giuen you,

15 And killed the Lord of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his Name hath made this man sound, whom ye see, and know, through faith in his Name: and the faith, which is by him, hath giuen to him this perfecte health of his whole body in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I know that through ignorance yee did it, as did also your gouernours.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath thus fulfilled.

19 Amend your liues therefore, and tume, that your finnes may be put away, when the time of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord

20 And he shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whom the heauen must containe vntill the time that all things be restored, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the world began.

*Chap. 7. 37
Act. 18.
15.*

22 * For Moses said vnto the Fathers, The Lord your God shall raise vp vnto you a Prophet, euen of your brethren like vnto me: ye shall heare him in all things, whatsoever hee shall say vnto you

23 For it shall be that every person which shall not heare that Prophet, shall be destroyed out of the people.

24 Also all the Prophets from Samuel, and thenceforth as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretold of these dayes.

*Gen. 12. 3.
Galat. 3. 8.*

25 Yee are the children of the Prophets, and of the covenant which God hath made vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham, * Euen in thy seede shall all the kinreds of the earth be blessed.

26 First vnto you hath God raised vp his Sonne Iesus, and him he hath sent to blesse you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Peter and John 3 are taken and brought before the Council: 7 and 19 They speake boldly in Christs cause. 24 The disciples pray vnto God. 32 Many sell their possessions: 36 Of whom Barnabas is one.

And

ANd as they spake vnto the people, the Priests and the Captaine of the Temple, and the Sadduces came vpon them,
 2 Taking it grievously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus ~~Name~~ the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in holde, vntill the next day: for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued, and the number of them was about fise thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morow, that their rulers and Elders, and Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,

6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high Priests.

7 And when they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what Name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter full of the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,

9 For as much as wee this day are examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, so ~~will~~ by what meanes he is made whole,

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of I E S V S CHRIST of Nazareth, whom ye haue crucified, whom God raised againe from the dead, ~~earn~~ by him doeth this man stand here before you whole.

11 *This is the stone cast aside of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there saluation in any other. for among men there is giuen none other Name vnder heaven, whereby we must be saued.

13 Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstood that they were vulcained men & without knowledge, they marueiled, and knew them, that they had bene with Iesus:

14 And beholding also the man which was healed standing with them, they had nothing to say against it.

15 Then they commanded them to goe aside out of the Council, and conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for surely a manifest signe is done by them, and it is openly knowen to all them that dwell in Hierusalem: and we cannot denie it.

17 But that it bee noyed no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 So they called them, and commanded them, that in no wise they should speake or teach in the Name of Iesus.

Tsal. 118.

22. 4a 28.

16. matt.

21. 42.

mar. 12.

10. luke

20. 17.

rom 9 33.

1 pet. 2. 7.

THE ACTES.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered vnto them, and said, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to obey you rather then God, Iudge ye.

20 For wee cannot but speake the things which we haue seene and heard.

21 So they threatned them, and let them go, and found nothing how to punish them, because of the people: for all men praised God for that which was done.

22 For the man was about fortie yeres olde, on whome this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 Then assoone as they were let goe, they came to their fellowes, and shewed all that the high Priests and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voices to God with one accord. & said, O Lord, thou art the God, which hast made the heauen, and the earth, the sea, and all things that are in them,

Psal. 2. 1. 25 Which by the mouth of thy seruant Dauid hast said, * Why did the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine things?

26 The kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For doubtlesse, against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whom thou haddest anointed, both Herode and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, gathered themselves together,

28 To doe whatsoeuer thine hand, and thy counsell had determined before to be done.

29 And now, O Lord behold their threatnings, and grant vnto thy seruants with all boldnesse to speake thy word.

30 So that thou stretch forth thine hand, and that healing, and signes and wonders may be done by the name of thine holy Sonne Iesus,

31 And when as they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spoke the word of God boldly

Chap. 2. 41 32 And the multitude of them that beleued were of one heart, and of one soules: neither any of them said, that any thing of that which he possessed was his own, but they had all things * common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus: and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessours of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the price of the things that were sold,

35 And laid it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euery man, according as he had neede.

C H A P. V.

36 Also Ioses which was called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that is by interpretation, the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, and of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Whereas he had land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it downe at the Apostles freere.

C H A P. V.

1 Ananias for his deceit in keeping backe part of the price, 5 falleth downe dead, 10 and likewise Sapphira his wife. 12 Through diuers the Apostles miracles, 14 the fruit is increased. 18 The Apostles that were imprisoned 19 are deliuered by an Angel, 26 and being before the Synode of the Priests, 36 through Gamaliels counsell they are kept alive, 40 and beaten: 41 They glorifie God.

BUt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept away part of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine part, and laid it downe at the Apostles feete,

3 Then said Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe away part of the price of this possession?

4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? how is it that thou hast conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Now when Ananias heard these things, he fell downe, and gaue vp the Ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men rose vp, and tooke him vp, and caried him out, and buried him.

7 And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, that his wife came in, ignorant of that which was done.

8 And Peter laid vnto her, Tell me, tolde yee the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said vnto her, Why haue ye agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which haue buried thine husband, are at the doore, and shall cary thee out.

10 Then she fell downe straightway at his feet and yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in, and found her dead, and caried her out, and buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came on all the Church, and on as many as heard these things.

12 Thus

THE ACTES.

12 Thus by the hands of the Apostles were many signes and wonders shewed among the people (and they were all with one accord in Salomons porch.

13 And of the other durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: nevertheless the people magnified them.

14 Also the number of them that beleued in the Lorde, both of men and women, grew more and more.

15 Insomuch that they brought the sicke into the streetes, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least way the shadowe of Peter, when he came by, might shadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, who were all healed.

17 ¶ Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him (which was the sect of the Sadduces) and were full of indignation,

18 And laide hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lorde by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and said,

20 Goe your way, and stand in the Temple, and speake to the people all the words of this life.

21 So when they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councill together, and all the Elders of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison, to cause them to be brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and told it,

23 Saying, Certainly wee found the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Then when the chiefe Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the high Priests heard these things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one & shewed them, saying, Behold, the men that ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teach the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, lest they should have beene stoned)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Council, and the chiefe Priest asked them,

28 Saying,

C H A P. V.

38 Saying, Did not we straitly command you, that yee should not teach in this Name? and behold, yee haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and ye would bring this mans blood vpon vs.

39 Then Peter and the Apostles answered and said, We ought rather to obey God then men.

40 The * God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whom yee slew, and hanged on a tree. Cba.3.13.

41 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sinnes.

42 And we are his witnesses concerning these things which we say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.

43 Now when they heard it, they brast for anger, and consulted to slay them.

44 Then stood there vp in the Councill a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Law, honoured of all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles soorth a little space,

45 And said vnto them Men of Israel, take heed to your selues, what ye intend to doe touching these men,

46 For before these times, rose vp Theudas boasting himselfe, to whom resorted a number of men about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they all which obeyed him were scattered, and brought to nought.

47 After this man, arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the daies of the tribute, and drew away much people after him: hee also perished, and all that obeyed him were scattered abroad.

48 And now I say vnto you, Refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or this worke be of men, it will come to nought:

49 But if it be of God, ye cannot destroy it, lest ye be founde- men fighters against God.

50 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commanded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

51 So they departed from the Councill, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer rebuke for his Name.

52 And daily in the Temple, and from house to house they ceased not to teach and preach Christ.

C H A P. VI.

1 The Apostles 2 appoint the office of Deaconship 3 so seuen chosen men: 8 Of whom Steuen full of faith & power: 12 He is taken 13 and accused as a transgressor of Moses Law.

And

THE ACTES.

AND in those daies, as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towards the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the daily ministring.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples together, and said, It is not meete that wee should leaue the worde of God to serue the table.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke yee out among you seven men of honest report, and full of the holy Ghost, and of wisdom, which we may appoint to this businesse.

4 And we will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the word.

Cap. 21. 8.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and * Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a Proselyte of Antiochia.

6 Which they set before the Apostles: and they prayed, and laide their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great company of the Priests were obedient to the faith.

8 ¶ Now Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagoge, which are called Libertines and Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, and disputed with Steuen.

10 But they were not able to resist the wisdom, and the Spirit by the which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, which said, Wee haue heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses, and God.

12 Thus they mooued the people and the Elders, and the * Scribes: and running upon him, caught him, and brought him to the Council,

13 And set fourth false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, and the Lawe.

14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shal destroy this place, and shall change the ordinances, which Moses gaue vs.

15 And as all that sate in the Council, looked stedfastly on him, they saw his face as it had bene the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

2 Steuen pleading his cause sheweth that God chose the fishers,
20 before

CHAP. VII.

20 before Moses was borne, 47 and before the Temple was built: 44 And that all outward ceremonies were ordered according to the heavenly Paierne. 54 The Jewes gnashing their teeth, 59 stone him.

Then said the chiefe Priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said, Ye men, brethren and fathers, hearken, * That Gen. 12. 4. God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said vnto him, Come out of thy Countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after that his father was dead, God brought him from thence into this land, wherein ye now dwell,

5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no, not the breadth of a foote: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet hee had no child.

6 But God spake thus, that his * seede should be a sojourner in a strange land, and that they should keepe it in bondage, and entreate it euill foure hundred yeeres. Gen. 15. 13.

7 But the nation to whom they shall bee in bondage, will I iudge, saith God: and after that, they shall come forth, and serue me in this place.

8 * He gaue him also the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begat * Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and Isaac begate * Jacob, and Jacob the twelue * Patriarkes. Gen. 17. 9. Gen. 21. 3. Gen. 25.

9 And the Patriarkes moued with enuie sold * Ioseph into Egypt, but God was with him, 24

10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, and * gaue him fauour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaos king of Egypt, who made him gouernour ouer Egypt, and ouer his whole house. Gen. 39. 33. and 30. 5. and 35. 23.

11 ¶ Then came there a famine ouer all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, & great affliction, that our fathers found no sustenance. Gen. 37. 28.

12 But when * Jacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first: Gen. 42. 37.

13 * And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, and Iosephs kinred was made knowen vnto Pharaos. Gen. 42. 1. Gen. 43. 4.

14 Then sent Ioseph and caused his father to be brought, and all his kinred, euen threescore and fiftene soules.

15 So * Jacob went downe into Egypt, and he * died, and our fathers, Gen. 46. 3. Gen. 49.

16 And were remoued into Sychem and were put in the sepulchre. 33.

THE ACTES.

Gen. 23. 16. pulchre, that Abraham had bought * for money of the sonnes of Emor, *forme* of Sychem.

Exod. 1. 7. 17 But when the time of the promise drewe neere, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people * grewe and multiplied in Egypt.

18 Till another king arose, which knew not Ioseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and euill intreated our fathers, and made them to cast out their young children, that they should not remaine alive.

Exod. 2. 2. 20 * The same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths.

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdome of the Egyptians, and was mighty in wordes and in deedes.

Exo. 2. 11 23 Now when he was full fourtie yeeres old, it came into his heart to visite his brethren, the children of Israel.

24 * And when he saw one of *them* suffer wrong, hee defended him, and auenged his quarrell that had the harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian.

Exo. 2. 13 25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstand, that God by his hand should giue them deliuerance: but they vnderstood it not.

26 * And the next day, he shewed himselfe vnto them as they stroue, and would haue set them at one agalne, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why doe ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, and a iudge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill mee, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.

Exod. 3. 2. 30 And when forty yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the * wilderness of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 And when Moses sawe it, he wondered at the sight: and as hee drewe neere to consider it, the voice of the Lord came vnto him. *saying,*

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold it.

CHAP. VII.

33 Then the Lord said vnto him, Put on thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groaning, and am come downe to deliuer them: and nowe come, and I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whome they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince and a iudge? the same God sent for a prince, and a deliuerer by the hand of the Angel, which appeared to him in the bush.

36 He * brought them out, doing wonders, and miracles, in the land of Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernesse * fortie yeres.

37 This is that Moses, which sayde vnto the children of Israel, * A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you, *turne of* your brethren, like vnto me: him shall ye heare.

38 * This is he that was in the Congregation, in the wildernes with the Angel, which spake to him in mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but refused, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt,

40 Saying vnto Aaron, * Make vs gods that may goe before vs: for wee know not what is become of this Moses that brought vs out of the land of Egypt.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne hands.

42 Then God turned himselfe away, and gaue them vp to serue the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, * O house of Israel, haue yee offered to me flaine beasts and sacrifices by the space of fortie yeres in the wildernesse?

43 And yee tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch and the starre of your god Remphan, figures, which yee made to worship them: therefore I will cary you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wildernes, as he had appoynted speaking vnto * Moses, that hee should make it according to the fashion that he had seene.

45 * Which *tabernacle* also our fathers receiued, and brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, which God draue out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of David:

46 * Who found fauour before God, and desired that he might build a tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 * But Salomon built him an house.

48 Howbeit the most High * dwelleth not in Temples made with

Exod. 7.8,

9.10, 11.

14. chap-

ters.

Exo. 16.8

Chap. 3.22.

Num. 18.

15.

Exo. 19.2.

Exo. 32.8

Amos 5.

25.

Exod. 25.

40. bebr.

8.5.

10. 2. 3. 14.

2. Sam. 7.2

Psa. 132.5

1. Chro. 17

12. 2. King.

6. 1.

Chap. 17.

24.

THE ACTES.

with hands, as sayth the Prophet.

Isa. 66. 1. 49 *Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build for me, saith the Lord? or what place is it that I should rest in?

50 Hath not mine hand made all these things?

Iere. 9. 26. 51 *Ye stiffnecked and of uncircumcised hearts and eares, ye have alwayes resisted the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so doe you.

Exod. 19. 52 Which of the Prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slaine them, which shewed before of the coming of that Iust, of whom ye are now the betrayers and murderers,
16. galat. 53 * Which have received the Lawe by the ordinance of Angels, and have not kept it.

3. 19. 54 But when they heard these things, their hearts brast for anger, and they gnashed at him with their teeth.

55 But hee being full of the holy Ghost, looked stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Iesus standing at the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens open, and the Sonne of man standing at the right hand of God.

57 Then they gave shout with a loud voice, and stopped their eares, and ran vpon him violently all at once,

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid downe their clothes at a young mans feete, named Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen, who called on God, and said, Lord Iesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and crued with a loud voice, Lord lay not this sinne to their charge, and when he had thus spoken, he slept.

CHAP. VIII.

2 The godly make lamentation for Steuen. 3 Saul maketh hauocke of the Church. 5 Philip preacheth Christ at Samaria. 9 Simon Magus, 18 his couensniffe reproveth. 26 Philip 27 cometh to the Ethio-pians Eunuch, 33 and baptizeth him.

ANd Saul consented to his death. and at that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad through the region of Iudea and of Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 Then certaine men fearing God caried Steuen among them, to be burned, and made great lamentation for him.

3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church, and entred into

C H A P. VIII.

every house, and drewe out both men and women, and put them into prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went to and fro preaching the word.

5 ¶ Then came Philip into the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people gaue heede vnto those things which Philip spake, with one accord, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits crying with a loude voice, came out of many that were possessed of them: and many taken with palsies, and that halted, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 And there was before in the citie a certaine man called Simon, which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying, that he himselfe was some great man.

10 To whom they gaue heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God.

11 And they gaue heede vnto him, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But as soone as they beleued Philip, which preached the things that concerned the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleued also, and was baptized, and continued with Philip, and wondered, when he saw the signes and great miracles which were done.

14 ¶ Nowe when the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them, but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

17 Then layd they their handes on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw, that through laying on of the Apostles hands the holy Ghost was giuen, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay the hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 Then sayd Peter vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may bee obtained with money.

THE ACTES.

21 Thou hast neither part nor fellowship in this businesse: for thine heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, what if it bee possible the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, & sayd, Pray ye to the Lord forme, that none of these things which ye have spoken, come vpon me.

25 ¶ So they, when they had testified & preached the word of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Go'spel in many townes of the Samaritanes.

26 Then the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe toward the South vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is walle.

27 And he arose and went on: and behold, a certaine Eunuch of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe gouernour, who had the rule of all her treasure, and came to Hierusalem to worship.

28 And as he returned sitting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit sayd vnto Philip, Goe nere and ioine thy selfe to yonder charer.

30 And Philip ranne thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and sayd, But vnderstandest thou what thou redest?

31 And he sayd, How can I, except I had a guide? And he desired Philip, that he would come vp and sit with him.

32 Now the place of the Scripture which hee read, was this, * He was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.

33 In his humilitie his iudgement hath bene exalted: but who shal declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 Then the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, and the Eunuch sayd, See, here is water: what doth it me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said vnto him, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, I can mayest. Then hee answered and saide, I beleeue that

C H A P. IX.

that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God.

38 Then he commanded the charēt to stand still, and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and hee baptized him.

39 And as soone as they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: so he went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus, and he walked to and fro preaching in all the citiestill he came to Cesarea.

C H A P. IX.

2 Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is stroken downe to the ground of the Lord. 10 Ananias is sent 18 to baptize him. 23 The lawing awaite of the Jewes 25 hee escapeth, being had downe through the wall. 33 Peter curseth Acneas of the palse, 36 and by him Talitha being dead, 40 is restored to life.

And * Saul yet breathing out threatening and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the hie Priest,

Rom. 9. 5.
gala. 1. 13.

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he found any that were of that way (either men or women) he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 Now as he journeyed, it came to passe that as hee was come neere to Damascus, * suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

Chap 22. 6
1. cor. 15. 8

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voyce, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against prickes.

6 He then both trembling, and astonied, said, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord said vnto him. Arise, and goe into the citie, and it shall be tolde thee what thou shalt doe.

7 The men also which journeyed with him, stood amazed hearing his voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the ground and opened his eyes, but saw no man. Then led they him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus,

9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor drunke.

10 And there was a certaine discipule at Damascus named Ananias And to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And hee said, Behold, I am here, Lord.

11 Then the Lord said vnto him, Arise and goe into the streete

which

THE ACTES.

which is called Straight, and sacke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth.

12 (And hee sawe in a vision a man named Ananias comming in to him, and putting his hands on him that he might receiue his sight)

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill he hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem.

14 Moreover, here he hath authoritie of the hie Priests, to bind all that call on thy Name.

15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessel vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him, how many things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 Then Ananias went his way, and entred into that house, and put his hands on him, and said, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me (even Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and bee filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had bene scales, and suddenly he receiued sight, and rose, and was baptized,

19 And receiued meate and was strengthened. So was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God.

21 So that all that heard him, were amased and said, Is not this he, that made haucke of them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he should bring them bound vnto the hie Priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, confirming that this was that Christ.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell together to kill him.

24 But their laying awaite was knowne of Saul: now they watched the gates day and night, that they might kill him.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and put him through the wall, and let him downe by a rope in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, hee assayed to ioyne himselfe with the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and

C H A P. IX.

and declared to them how hee had scene the Lord in the way, and that hee had spoken vnto him, and how hee had spoken boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And he was conuersant with them at Hierusalem,

29 And spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and spake & disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 But when the brethren knew it, they brought him to Cefarea and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest through all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified, and walked in the feare of the Lord, and were multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghost.

32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all quarters, he came also to the Saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there hee found a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palfie.

34 Then sayd Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ makeeth thee whole: arise and trusse thy couch together. And hee arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, sawe him, and turned to the Lord.

36 There was also at Ioppa a certaine woman, a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) shee wastul of good workes and almes which shee did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that shee was sicke and dyed: and when they had washed her, they layed her in an vpper chamber.

38 Now forasmuch as Lydda was neere to Ioppa, and the Disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring that he would not delay to come vnto them.

39 Then Peter arose and came with them: and when hee was come they brought him into the vpper chamber, where all the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made while shee was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe and prayed, and turned to the body, and said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when shee saw Peter, shee sat vp.

41 Then hee gaue her the hand, and lift her vp, and called the Saints and widowes, and restored her aliae.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, and many beleued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that hee taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a tanner.

THE ACTES. CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius, 4 at the Angels commandment, 5 sendeth for Peter,
11 who all by a vision 15. 20 taught not to despise the Gen-
tiles. 34 Hee preacheth the Gospel to Cornelius and his household,
45 Hee hauing receiued the holy Ghost, 47 are baptized.

Furthermore there was a certaine man in Celsaica called Corne-
lius, a captaine of the band called the Italian Band,

1 A deuout man and one that feared God with all his house-
hold, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed God con-
tinually.

2 Hee saw in a vision evidently (about the ninth houre of the
day) an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him,
Cornelius.

3 But when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What
is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are
come vp into remembrance before God.

4 Now therefore send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon,
whose surname is Peter.

5 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the
sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

6 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was de-
parted, hee called two of his seruants, and a souldier that feared
God one of them that waited on him,

7 And tolde them all things, and sent them to Ioppa.

8 On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drewe
nere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about
the sixth houre.

9 Then waxed hee an hungred, and would haue eaten: but
while they made *some thing* ready, he fell into a trance.

10 And hee sawe heauen open d, and a certaine vessell come
downe vnto him, as it had bene a great sheete, knit at the foure
corners and was let downe to the earth.

11 Wherein were all manner of foure footed beastes of the
earth, with wilde beastes, and creeping things, and foules of the
heauen.

12 And there came a voyce to him, Arise, Peter: kill and eate.

13 But Peter said, Not so Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any
thing that is polluted, or vncleane.

14 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the second time, The
things that God hath purified pollute thou not.

15 This was so done thrise: and the vessell was drawn vp a-
gaine into heauen.

C H A P. X.

17 ¶ Nowe while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which hee had seene, meant, beholde, the men which were sent from Cornelius had inquired for Simons house, and stood at the gate.

18 And called and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto him, Behold, three men seeke thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and go with them, and doubt nothing: for I haue sent them.

21 ¶ Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and sayd, Behold, I am he whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they sayd, Cornelius the capraine, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare thy words.

23 Then he called them in, and lodged them, and the next day, Peter went forth with them, and certaine brethern from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 ¶ And the day after, they entred into Cesarea. Now Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen, and speciall friends.

25 And it came to passe as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euen I my selfe am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, hee came in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he sayd vnto them, Yee know that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man polluted, or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without saying nay, when I was sent for, I aske therefore for what intent haue ye sent for me?

30 Then Cornelius sayd, Foure dayes agoe, about this houre I fasted and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And sayd, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter: (hee is lodged in the house of Simon a tanner by the

THE ACTES.

the sea side) who when he cometh, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, and thou hast well done to come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 Then Peter opened his mouth, and sayd, Of a trueth I perceiue, that * God is no acceptor of persons.

35 But in euery nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness is accepted with him.

36 Ye know the word which God hath sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ, which is Lord of all.

37 *Euen* the word which came through all Iudea, * beginning in Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached.

38 *To vs.* how God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slew, hanging him on a tree,

40 Him God raised vp the third day: and caused that hee was shewed openly:

41 Not to all the people, but vnto the witnesses chosen before of God, *euen* to vs which did eate and drinke with him, after hee arose from the dead,

42 And hee commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testify, that it is he that is ordayned of God a iudge of quicke and dead.

43 To him also giue all the * Prophets witness, that through his Name all that beleue in him, shall receiue remission of sinnes.

44 While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 So they of the circumcision which beleueed, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost:

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 So he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certaine dayes.

C H A P. XI.

2 Peter being accused for going to the Gentiles, 5 defendeth himselfe. 22 Barnabas is sent to Antiochia, 36 where the disciples

Dent. 10

17. 2. chr.

19. 7. iob

34. 19

rom. 2. 11

gal. 2. 6.

ephes. 6. 9

col. 3. 25.

1. pet. 1. 17

7. heb. 4. 14

Act. 15. 9

1. pet. 3. 1. 34

mic. 7. 18

CHAP. XL

are called Christians: 28 And there Agabus foretoldeth a famine to come.

NOW the Apostles and the brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circumcision contended against him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and hast eaten with them.

4 Then Peter began, and expounded the thing in order to them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw this vision, A certaine vessel comming downe, as it had been a great sheete, let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.

6 Toward the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beastes, and creeping things, and soules of the heauen.

7 Also I heard a voice, saying vnto me, Arise Peter: slay & eate.

8 And I sayd, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me the second time from heauen, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

10 And this was done three times, and all were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 Then behold, immediately there were three men already come vnto the house, where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit said vnto mee, that I should goe with them, without doubting: moreover these sixe brethren came with mee, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed vs how he had seene an Angel in his house, which stood and said to him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

14 He shall speake words vnto thee, whereby both thou and all thine house shalbe saved.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, euen as vpon vs at the beginning.

16 Then I remembered the word of the Lord, how he said, *Iohn baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them a like gift, as he did vnto vs when we beleueed in the Lord Iesus Christ, who was I, that I could let God?

18 When they heard these things, they hold their peace, and glorified

Chap. 2. 4

Chap. 1. 5

and 19. 4

mar. 3. 11

mar. 1. 3

lake 3. 16

iohn 1. 26

THE ACTES.

Chap. 8. 1

glorified God, saying. Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

19 ¶ And they which were * scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose about Steuen, went throughout till they came vnto Phenice and Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the words to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely.

20. Nowe some of them were men of Cyprus and of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleueed, and turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tidings of those things came vnto the eares of the Church which was in Hierusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas that he should goe vnto Antiochia.

23 Who when he was come, and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart they would continue in the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and faith, and much people ioyned themselves vnto the Lord.

25 ¶ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antiochia, and it came to passe, that a whole yeere they were conuersant with the Church, and taught much people, insonmuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia.

27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem to Antiochia.

28 And there stood vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout all the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his habilitie, purposed to send succour to the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which thing they also did, and sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

C H A P. XII.

1 Herod killeth James with the sword: 4. and imprisoneth Peter, 8. whom the Angel delivereth. 20. Herod being offended with them of Tyrus, is pacified: 22. and taking the honour due to God, to himselfe, 23. he is eaten with wormes, and so dieth.

NOW about this time, Herod the King stretched forth his handes to vex certaine of the Church,

2 And he killed James the brother of Iohn with the sword.

3 And when he saw that it pleased the Iewes, hee proceeded further,

CHAP. XII.

farther, to take Peter also: (then were the dayes of vncabened bread)

4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison, and deliuered them to foure quaternions of souldiers to be kept, intending after the Passouer to bring him forth to the people.

5 So Peter was kept in prison, but earnest prayer was made of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when Herod would haue brought him out vnto the people, the same night slept Peter betweene two souldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore kept the prison.

7 *And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and a light shined in the house, and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise quickly. And his chaines fel off from *his* hands.

8 And the Angel said vnto him. Gird thy selfe, and binde on thy sandales. And so he did. Then he said vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 So Peter came out and followed him, and knew not that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but thought he had seene a vision.

10 Now when they were past the first and the second watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne accord, and they went out, and passed through one streete, and by and by the Angel departed from him.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to himselfe, hee said, Now I know for a truth, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the waiting for of the people of the Iewes.

12 And as hee considered *the thing*, hee came to the house of Marie the mother of Iohn whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together and prayed.

13 And when Peter knocked at the entry doore, a maide came forth to hearken named Rhode.

14 But when she knew Peters voyce she opened not the entrie *doore* for gladnesse, but ran in, and tolde how Peter stood before the entrie.

15 But they said vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet shee affirmed it constantly that it was so. Then said they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and saw him, they were astonied.

17 And hee beckned vnto them with the hand, to holde their peace, and tolde them how the Lorde had brought him out of the

Chap. 59.

THE ACTES.

the prison. And hee said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren: and he departed and went into another place.

18 ¶ Now as soone as it was day, there was no small trouble among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded them to be ledde to be punished. And hee went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 Then Herod was angrie with them of Tyrus and Sidon, but they came all with one accord vnto him, and perswaded Blaesus the Kings Chamberlaine, and they desired peace, because their country was nourished by the Kings land.

21 And vpon a day appointed, Herod arrayed himselfe in royall apparell, and sate on the iudgement seate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, saying, The voyce of God, and not of man.

23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not glorie vnto God, so that he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the Ghost.

24 And the word of God grew, and multiplied.

25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

C H A P. XIII.

2 *The holy Ghost commaundeth that Paul and Barnabas be separated vnto him. 6 At Paphus 8 Elymas the sorcerer is stricken blind. 14 From whence they come to Antiochia, 17 They preach the Gospel 45 the Iewes vehemently withstanding them.*

THere were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had bene brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul.

2 Now as they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 Then fasted they and prayed, and layd their hands on them, and let them goe.

4 And they, after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sayled to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of

of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also tolke to their minister.

6 So when they had gone throughout the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine forcerer, a falsie prophet, being a Iew, named Barjesus,

7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the forcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, and sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (which also is called Paul) being full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtiltie and all mischiefe, the childe of the deuill, and enemye of all righteousnes, wilt thou not cease to peruert the straight wayes of the Lord?

11 Now therefore behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt bee blinde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darknesse, and hee went about seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 The Deputie when hee saw what was done, beleued, and was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and they that were with him, were departed by ship from Paphus, they came to Perga a citie of Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them and returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia a citie of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe,

15 And after the lecture of the Law and Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying. Ye men and brethren, if yee haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckned with the hand, and said, Men of Israel and ye that feare God, hearken.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of * Egypt, and with an * high arme brought them out thereof.

18 And about the time * of fourtie yeeres, suffied he their maners in the wildernesse.

19 And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, and * diuided their land to them by lot.

20 Then afterward hee gaue vnto them * Iudges about foure hundredth and fiftie yeeres, vnto the time of Samuel the Prophet.

31 So

Exod. 1.9.

Exod. 13.

14.

Exo. 16.1.

Jos. 14.2

Judg. 3.9.

THE ACTES.

1. Sam. 8. 5. 21 So after that, they desired a * King, and God gave vnto them
 1. Sam. 9. * Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, by the part
 15. and of fourtie yeeres.
 10. 1. 22 And after he had taken him away, hee raised vp * Dauid to
 1. Sam. 16. be their King, of whom hee witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid
 13. the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which will doe all
 things that I wil.
 Psal. 89. 23 Of this mans seede hath God * according to his promise
 21. i. 24 raised vp to Israel, the Saviour Iesus:
 21. 1. 25 When * Iohn had first preached before his coming the
 Mal. 3. 1. baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.
 Mat. 3. 1. 26 And when Iohn had fulfilled his course, hee said, * Whom
 Mar. 1. 8. yee thinke that I am, I am not he: but behold, there cometh one
 Luke 3. 2. after me, whose shoee of his I sette. I am not worthy to loose.
 Mat. 3. 11. 27 Yee men and brethren, children of the generation of Abra-
 Mar. 1. 7. ham, and whosoever among you searcth God, to you is the word
 Iohn 1. 20. of this saluation sent.
 28 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, and their rulers, because
 they knew him not, nor yet the words of the Prophets, which are
 read euery Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning
 him.
 Mat. 27. 29 And though they found no cause of death in him, * yet desired
 22. Mar. they Pilate to kill him.
 25. 13. Luke. 29 And when they had fulfilled all things that were written of
 23. 23. him, they tooke him down from the tree, & put him in a sepulchre.
 Ioh. 19. 6. 30 But God * raised him vp from the dead
 Mat. 28. 31 And he was seene many dayes of them, which came vp with
 2 Mar. 16. him from Galile to Hierusalem, which are his witness vnto the
 6. Luke 24. people.
 6 Ioh. 20. 32 And wee declare vnto you, that touching the promise made
 19. vnto the fathers,
 33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that he raised
 Psal. 2. 7. vp Iesus, even as it is written in the second Psalme, * Thou art my
 Heb. 1. 5. Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee.
 and 5. 5. 34 Now as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, no
 Iha. 55. 3. more to returne to corruption, he hath said thus, * I will give you
 Chap. 3. 31 the holy things of Dauid, which are faithfull.
 psal. 16. 11 35 Wherefore hee saith also in another place, * Thou wilt not
 suffer thine holy one to see corruption.
 Chap. 2. 29 36 Howbeit, Dauid after hee had serued his time by the con-
 1. King. 2. sell of God, hee * slept, and was layd with his fathers, and saw cor-
 10. ruption.

CHAP. XIII.

37. But he whom God raised vp, saw no corruption,

38. Bee it knowen vnto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiveness of sinnes.

39. And from all things from which ye could not bee iustified by the Lawe of Moses, by him every one that beleeueth, is iustified.

40. Beware therefore, lest that come vpon you, which is spoken of in the Prophets,

41. *Behold, yee despisers, and wonder, and vanish away: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which ye shal not beleeue, if a man would declare it you. Hab. 1. 5.

42. ¶ And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought, that they would preach their wordes to them the next Sabbath day.

43. Now when the congregation was dissolued, many of the Iewes, and Proselytes that feared God, followed Paul, and Barnabas, which spake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God:

44. And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole citie together to heare the word of God.

45. But when the Iewes saw the people, they were full of enuie, and spake against those things which were spoken of Paul, contrariy *them*, and railing on *them*.

46. Then Paul and Barnabas spake boldly, and sayd, It was necessary that the worde of God should first haue been spoken vnto you: but seeing ye put it from you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of everlasting life, loe, we turre to the Gentiles.

47. For so hath the Lord commanded vs, saying, *I have made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest bee the saluation vnto the end of the world. J. 1. 49. 6

48. And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained vnto eternal life beleeued.

49. Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole country.

50. But the Iewes stirred certaine deuout and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

51. But they *shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium,

52. And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost. Chap. 18. 6.
Mat. 10.
14. Marke
6. 11. Luke
9. 5.

THE ACTES

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas 5 are persecuted from Iconium: 6 At Lystra Paul 10 healeth a creeple: 13 They are about to dedicate unto them, 15 but they forbid it: 19 Paul, by the persuasion of certaine Jewes, is stoned: 23 From thence passing the row almost Churches, 26 they returne to Antiochia.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and to speake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and of the Grecians beleueed.

2 And the vnbeleueing Iewes stirred vp and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 So therefore they abode there a long time, and spake boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimony vnto the word of his grace, and caused signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the citie was diuided: and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe them violence, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about,

7 And there preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ Now there sat a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his fete, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.

9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed:

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand vp right on thy fete. And he leaped vp, and walked.

11 Then when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, Gods are come down to vs in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought bulls with garlands vnto the gates, and would have sacrificed with the people.

14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, and ranne in among the people, crying,

15 And saying, O men, why doe ye these things? We are men subiect to the like passions that ye be, and preach vnto you, that ye should turne from these vaine things vnto the liuing God,

which

CHAP. XV.

which made brethren and sisters, and the rest, and all things that in them are :

16 Who in times past * suffered all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes.

17 Nevertheless, he left not himselfe without witness, in that he did good and gave vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.

18 And speaking these things, scarce appeared they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them.

19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia and Iconium, which when they had perswaded the people, * stoned Paul, and drew him out of the citie, supposing he had bene dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he arose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Gospel to that citie, and had taught many, they returned to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia,

22 Confirming the disciples hearts, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, affirming, that we must through many afflictions enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders by election in every Church, and prayd, and fasted, they commended them to the Lord in whome they believed.

24 Thus they went throughout Pisidia, & came to Pamphylia,

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they came downe to Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antiochia, * from whence they had bene commended vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they had fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all the things that God had done by them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 So there they abode a long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 Certaine yet about to bring in circumcision at Antiochia: 6 a-bons which moue the Apostles consult: 19 and what must be done, 23 they declare by letters, 36 Paul and Barnabas 39 are at great variance.

Then came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, saying, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

Gal. 1. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

THE ACTES.

36 ¶ But after certaine dayes, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and visite our brethren in euery citie, where we haue preached the word of the Lord, and see how they doe.

37 And Barnabas counselled to take with them Iohn, called Marke.

38 But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnto their company, which departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 Then were they so stirred, that they departed asunder one from the other, so that Barnabas tooke Marke, & sailed vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And hee went through Syria and Cilicia, stablishing the Churches.

C H A P. XVI.

1 Paul hauing circumcised Timotheus, 12 being at Philippi, 14 instructed Lydia in the faith. 16 The spirit of diuination is by him cast out: 20 and for that cause 22 they are whipped, 24 and imprisoned. 26 Through an earthquake 27 the prison doores are opened. 31. 32 The Jailor receiueth the faith.

Rom. 16.
21. phil.
2. 19.
2. the 3. 3.
2.

Then came he to Derbe and to Lystra: and beholde, a certaine disciple was there named * Timotheus, a womans sonne, which was a Iewesse and beleeued, but his father was a Grecian,

2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lystra and Iconium, reported well.

3 Therefore Paul would that he should goe forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Iewes, which were in those quarters: for they knew all, that his father was a Grecian.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees to keepe, ordained of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number dayly.

6 ¶ Nowe when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost, to preach the word in Asia.

7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 Therefore they passed through Mysia, & came down to Troas.

9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

CHAP. XVI.

10 And after he had scene the vision, immediately we purposed to goe into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Then went we forth from Treas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 ¶ And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the parts of Macedonia, and whose inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath day, wee went out of the citie, besides a river, where they were wont to pray, and wee sat downe, and spake to the women which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended vnto the things, which Paul spake.

15 And when shee was baptized, and her household, she besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to be faithfull to the Lord, come into mine house, and abide *there*: and she constrained vs.

16 And it came to passe that as we went to prayer, a certaine maid hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs, which gave her masters much vantage with diuining.

17 Shee followed Paul and vs, and cried, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto you the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieved, turned about, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 Now when her masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market place vnto the magistrates,

20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Iewes, trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances which are not lawfull for vs to receive, neither to obserue, seeing we are Romanes.

22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commanded them to be beaten with rods.

23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast *them* into prison, commanding theailer to keepe them surely,

24 Who hauing receiued such commandement cast them into the inner prison, and made their seete last in the stocks.

THE ACTES.

25 Now at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sung Psalmes vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euery mans bands were loosed.

27 Then the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and when he saw the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing the prisoners had bene fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voice, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme: for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they said, Beleeue in the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thine household.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in the house.

33 Afterward he tooke them the same houre of the night, and washed their stripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and reioyced that he with all his household beleued in God.

35 And when it was day, the gouernours sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 Then the keeper of the prison told these words vnto Paul, saying, The gouernours haue sent to loose you: now therefore get you hence, and goe in peace.

37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncoudermed, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and now would they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out.

38 And the sergeants told these words vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 Then came they and prayed them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into the house of Lydia: and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

C H A P. XVII.

1 Paul at Thessalonica 3 preaching Gospel, 6. 7 is interained of Jailor.

C H A P. XVII.

Iason: 10 Hee is sent to Berea: 15 From thence coming to Athens, 19 in Mars streete 23 hee preacht the living God to them unknowne, 34 and so many are converted vnto Christ.

NOW as they passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes,

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath *daies* disputed with them by the Scriptures,

3 Opening, and alledging that Christ must haue suffered, and risen againe from the dead: and this is Iesus Christ, whome, *(a)d* br, I preach to you.

4 And some of them beleued, and ioyned in company with Paul and Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a fewe.

5 But the Iewes which beleued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine vagabonds *and* wicked Iewes, and when they had assembled the multitude, they made a tumult in the citie, and made assault against the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 But when they found them not, they drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto the heads of the citie, crying, These are they which haue subuerted the state of the world, and here they are,

7 Whome Iason hath receiued, and these all doe against the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another King, one Iesus.

8 Then they troubled the people, and the heads of the citie, when t^{cy} heard these things.

9 Notwithstanding, when they had received sufficient assurance of Iason and of the other, they let them goe.

10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea, which when they were come thither, entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were also more noble men then they which were at Thessalonica, which receiued the worde with all readinesse, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleued, and of honest women, which were Grecians, and men not a fewe.

13 ¶ But when the Iewes of Thessalonica knew, that the word of God was also preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and mocked the people.

14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to go as *it were* to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and

THE ACTES.

Timotheus that they should come to him at once, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was rised in him, when he saw the citie subiect to idolatrie.

17 Therefore hee disputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market daily with whomsoever he met.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoicks disputed with him, and some said, What will this babbler say? Others sayd, Hee seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods (because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.)

19 And they tooke him, and brought him into Mars streete, saying, May wee not know, what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things vnto our eares; we would know therefore, what these things meane.

21 For all the Athenians, and strangers which dwelt there, gaue themselves to nothing els, but either to tell, or to heare some newes.

22 Then Paul stood in the middes of Mars streete, and sayd, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things yee are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, & beheld your deuotions, I found an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOVEN GOD. Whom ye then ignorantly worship, him shew I vnto you.

Chap. 7. 48

24 God that made the world, and all things that are therein, seeing that he is Lord of heauen and earth, * dwelleth not in temples made with hands,

Psal. 50. 8

25 * Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giueth to all life and breath and all things.

26 And hath made of one blood all mankind, to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath assigned the seasons which were ordeined before, and the bounds of their habitation,

27 That they should seeke the Lorde, if so be they might haue groped after him, and found him, though doubtlesse he be not farr from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and moue, and haue our being, as also certaine of your owne Poets haue sayd, For we are also his generation.

Isa. 40. 19

29 * Forasmuch then, as wee are the generation of God, wee ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto golde, or silver, or stone, graven by arte and the inuention of man.

30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not: but
now

C H A P. XVIII.

now he admonisheth all men every where to repent,

31 Because he hath appointed a day in which hee will iudge the world in righteousness, by that man whome he hath appointed, whereof hee hath given an assurance to all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 Now when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked, and other said, Wee will heare thee againe of this thing.

33 And so Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit certaine men claue vnto Paul, and beleueed : among whome was also Denys Areopagita, and a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

C H A P. XVIII.

1 As Paul at Corinth 6 taught the Gentiles, 9 The Lord comforted him, 12 He is accused before Gallio, 16 but in vaine. 18 From thence he saileth to Syria, 19 and so to Ephesus. 23 At Galatia and Phrygia he strengtheneth the disciples. 24 Apollos being more perfectly instructed by Aquila, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficacy.

After these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinthus,

1 And found a certaine Iewe named * Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italy, and his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them.

2 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for their craft was to make tents)

4 And he disputed in the Synagogue every Sabbath day, and exhorted the Iewes and the Grecians.

5 Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in Spirit, testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the Christ.

6 And when they resisted and blasphemed, hee * shooke his raiment, and said vnto them, Your blood be vpon your own head: I am cleane: from henceforth will I goe vnto the Gentiles.

7 So hee departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And * Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleueed in the Lord with all his household: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleueed and were baptized.

9 Then said the Lorde to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not,

R. 12. 16

2. 4. 13 51
Mat. 10. 14

1. Cor. 1.
14.

THE ACTES.

not, but speake, and hold not thy peace.

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall lay hands on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this citie.

11 So he continued there a yeere and sixe moneths, and taught the word of God among the y.

12 ¶ Now when Gallio was Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one accord aganist Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seate,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God otherwise then the Law appointeth

14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deede, O ye Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you.

15 But if it be a question of words and names, & of your Law, tooke ye to it your selues: for I will be no iudge of those things.

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seate.

17 Then tooke al the chiefes of the Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seate: but Gallio cared nothing for those things.

18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good while, he tooke leave of the brethren, and sailed into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that he had shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a * vow.

19 Then he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but hee entered into the Synagogue and disputed with the Iewes.

20 Who desired him to tary a longer time with them: but he would not consent,

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must needs keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierosalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, * if God will. So he sailed from Ephesus.

22 ¶ And when he came downe to Cesarea, he went vp to Herod's house: and when he had saluted the Church, he went downe vnto Antiochia.

23 Now when hee had taried there a while, hee departed, and went through the country of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples,

24 And a certaine Iewe named * Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures.

25 The same was instructed in the way of the Lord, and he spake feruently in the Spirit, and taught diligently the things of the Lord, and knew but the baptisme of Iohn onely.

26 And he began to speake boldly in the Synagogue. Whome when

Chap. 18.
24. 18.
26. 18.

1. Cor. 4.
19. 18.
25.

1. Cor. 1.
12.

CHAP. XIX.

when * Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

Rom. 16.
3.

27 And when he was minded to goe into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the disciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, hee holpe them much which had beleueed through grace.

28 For mightily he confuted publiely the Iewes, with great vehemencie, shewing by the Scriptures that Iesus was that Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Certaine disciples at Ephesus 2 haue onl. receiued Johns baptisme, 3 and knew not the visible gifts of the holy Ghost, where- with God hath beautified his Sonnes kinredome, 4 are baptised in the Name of Iesus. 12 The Iewish exorcists 16 are beaten of the drull. 19 Conuincing bookes are burnt. 24 Demetrius 29 raiseth sedition against Paul.

And it came to passe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he passed through the vpper coastes, came to Ephesus and found certaine disciples.

1 And said vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye beleueed? And they said vnto him, We haue not so much as heard whether there be an holy Ghost.

2 And he said vnto them, Vnto what were ye then baptized? And they said Vnto Johns baptisme.

3 Then said Paul, * Iohn verely baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should beleuee in him, which should come after him, that is, in Christ Iesus.

4 And when they heard it, they were baptised in the Name of the Lord Iesus

5 So Paul laide his hands vpon them, and the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake the tongues, and prophesied,

6 And all the men were about twelue.

7 & Moreover he went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and exhorting to the things that appertaine to the kingdome of God.

8 But when certaine were hardened and disobeyed, speaking euill of the way of God before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, and disputed daily in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

9 And this was done by the space of two yeeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus both Iewes and Grecians.

10 And God wrought no small miracles by the hands of Paul,

11 So

Chap. I. 5.
and 2. 2.
and 11. 16
mar. 3. 11.
mark. 18
luke 3. 16.
job. 1. 16.

THE ACTES.

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sicke, handchiefs or handkerchiefs, and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorcists, tooke in hand to name ouer them, which had euill spirits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus, whom Paul preacheth.

14 (And these were certaine sonnes of Sceua a Iew, the Priest, about seven, which did this)

15 And the euill spirit answered, and said, Iesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill spirit was, ranne on them and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house, naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes and Grecians also, which dwelt at Ephesus, and feare came on all them, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified,

18 And many that beleeued, came and confessed, and shewed their workes.

19 Many also of them which vsed curious arts, brought their bookes, and burned them before all men, and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand *pieces* of siluer.

20 So the word of God grew mightily, and preuailed.

21 ¶ Now when these things were accomplished, Paul purposed by the spirit to passe through Macedonia & Achaia, and to goe to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue bene there, I must also see Rome.

22 So sent hee into Macedonia two of them by ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he remained in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small trouble about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a siluer smith, which made siluer Temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the craftes men.

25 Whom hee called together, with the workemen of like things, and said, Sirs, yee knowe that by this craft we haue our goods:

26 Moreouer ye see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia this Paul hath perswaded, and turned away much people, saying, That they be not gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not only this thing is dangerous vnto vs that this our portion should be reprooued, but also that the temple of the great goddesse Diana should bee nothing esteemed, and that it
would

C H A P. XIX.

would come to passe that her magnificence, which all Asia and the world worshippeth, should be destroyed.

28 Now when they heard it, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was full of confusion, and they rushed into the common place with one assent, and caught * Gaius, and * Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls companions of his journey.

30 And when Paul would have entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not present himselfe in the common place.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was out of order, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And some of the company drew forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwardes. Alexander then beckned with his hand, and would haue excused the matter to the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Iew, there arose a shout almost for the space of two houres, of all men, crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 Then the towne Clarke when he had staied the people, said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of *the image* which came downe from Iupiter?

36 Seeing then that no man can speake against these things, ye ought to be appeased, and doe nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which haue neither committed sacrilege, neither doe blaspheme your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the Law is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawfull assembly.

40 For we are enen in iopardie to be accnsed of this daies sedition, forasmuch as there is no cause, whereby we may giue a reason of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let the assembly depart.

C H A P. XX.

1 Paul appointeth 23哥 to Macedonia: 7 In Treas preaching vntill midnight, 9 Susceus fell downe dead out of a window:

10 he

Rom. 16.
23. 1. cor.
1. 14.
Col. 4. 10.

THE ACTES.

20 he saileth him to life. 15 At Miletum, 17 having called the Elders of Ephesus together, 23 he declareth what things shall come vpon himselfe, 28 and others.

NOW alter the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, and embraced them, and departed to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone through those parts, and had exhorted them with many words, he came into Grecia.

3 And having taried *there* three moneths, because the Iewes laide waite for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gains of Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas.

6 And we sailed forth from Philippi, alter the dayes of vnleavened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fve dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morow, and continued the preaching vnto midnight.

8 And there were many lights in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine young man, named Eutychus, fallen into a deepe sleepe: and as Paul was long preaching, he ouercome with sleepe, fell downe from the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 But Paul went downe, and laid himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues for his life is in him.

11 Then when Paul was come vp againe, & had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, he departed.

12 And they brought the boy aliae, and they were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ Then we went before to ship, and sayled vnto the *erie* Assos, that we might receiue Paul there: for so had he appointed, and woul. himselfe goe a foote.

14 Now when he was come vnto vs to Assos, and wee had receiued him, we came to Mytilenes.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and taried at Tro-
gyllium.

CHAP. XX.

Epheſus: the next day we came to Miletum.

16 For Paul had determined to ſaile by Epheſus, becauſe hee would not ſpend the time in Aſia: for he haſted to be, if he could poiſible, at Hieruſalem, at the day of Pentecoſt.

17 ¶ Wherefore from Miletum hee ſent to Epheſus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 ¶ Who when they were come to him, he ſaid vnto them, Yee know from the firſt day that I came into Aſia, after what manner I haue bene with you at all ſeaſons,

19 Seruing the Lord with all modeſtie, and with many teares, and tentations, which came vnto me by the layings awaie of the Iewes,

20 And how I kept hacke nothing that was profitable, but haue ſhewed you, and taught you openly and throughout euery houſe,

21 Witneſſing both to the Iewes. and to the Grecians, the repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

22 And now be'holde, I goe bound in the ſpirit vnto Hieruſalem. and know not what things ſhall come vnto me there,

23 Saue that the holy Ghoſt witneſſeth in euery citie, ſaying, that bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But I paſſe not at all, neither is my life deare vnto my ſelfe, ſo that I may fulfil my courſe with ioy, and the ministration which I haue receiued of the Lord Ieſus, to teſtifie the Goſpel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I knowe that henceforth yee all through whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, ſhall ſee my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue ſhewed you all the counſell of God.

28 Take heede therefore vnto your ſelues and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghoſt hath made you ouerſeers, to ſeede the Church of God, which hee hath purchaſed with that his owne blood.

29 For I knowe this, that after my departing ſhall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not ſparing the flocke.

30 Moreover of your owne ſelues ſhall men ariſe, ſpeaking peruerſe things, to draw diſciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the ſpace of three yeres I ceaſed not to warne euery one, both night and day with teares,

32 And

THE ACTES.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build further, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coveted no mans siluer, nor gold, nor apparell.

2. Cor. 4. 12. 1. thes. 2. 9. 2. thes. 3. 8. 34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue ministered vnto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so labouring, ye ought to support the weake, and to remember the words of the Lorde Iesus, how that hee said, It is a blessed thing to giue, rather then to receiue.

36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe and prayed with them all.

37 Then they wept all abundantly, and fell on Pauls necke, and kissed him,

38 Being chiefly sory for the words which he spake, That they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

C H A P. XXI.

1 Paul goeth toward Hierusalem: 8 As Cesarea he talketh with Philip the Euangelist: 10 Agabus foretelleth him of his bands. 17 After he came to Hierusalem, 26 and into the Temple, 37 The Jewes laid bandes on him: 38 Lysias the captaine taketh him from them.

ANd as wee lanchted forth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, and the day following vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And we found a ship that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went abroad, and set forth.

3 And when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed toward Syria, and arrived at Tyrus: for there the ship vnladed the burden.

4 And when wee had found disciples, wee taried there fewe dayes. And they tolde Paul through the Spirit, that hee should not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed and went our way: and they all accompanied vs with their wiues, and children, euen out of the citie: and wee kneeling downe on the shore, prayed.

6 Then when we had embraced one another, wee tooke ship, and they returned home.

7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arrived at Ptolemais, & saluted the brethren, & abode with them one day.

8 And

8 And the next day, Paul and wee that were with him departed, & came vnto Cefarea; and we entred into the house of *Philip the Euangelist, which was one of the *seuen Deacons*, and abode with him.

9 Now he had foure daughters virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as wee taried these many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs hee tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feete, & sayd. Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we had heard these things, both we and other of the same place besought him that he would not goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, and sayd, What doe ye weeping, and breaking mine heart? For I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 So when hee would not be perswaded, wee ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we trusted vp our fardels, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also *certaine* of the disciples of Cefarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames; and all the Elders were there assembled.

19 And when hee had imbraced them, hee tolde by order all things that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministration.

20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and sayd vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousand Iewes there are which beleue, and they are all zealous of the Law:

21 Now they are informed of thee, that thou teacheest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses: and sayest, that they ought not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to liue after the customes.

22 What is then to be done? the multitude must needs come together: for they shall heare that thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee, We haue foure men, which haue made a vow,

THE ACTES.

Act. 18. 1
 18. 6. 18

24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may * haue their heads: and all shal know, that those things whereof they haue beene enformed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe alio walkest and keepest the Law.

25 For as touching the Gentiles which beleue, wee haue writen and determined that they obserue no such thing, but that they keepe themselves from things offered to idoles, and from blood, and from that that is strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, & the next day was purified with them, and entred into the Temple, declaring the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntill that an offering should bee offered for every one of them.

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia (when they saw him in the Temple) moued all the people, and layd hands on him,

28 Crying, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euery where against the people, and the Law, and this place: moreover he hath brought Grecians into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had seene before Trophimus an Ephesian with him in the citie, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple.

30 Then all the citie was moued, and the people ran together: and they tooke Paul, and drew him out of the Temple, and forth with the doores were shut.

31 But as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the chiefe captaine of the band, that all Hierusalem was on an vprore,

32 Who immediately tooke souldiers and Centurions, and ranne downe vnto them: and when they saw the chiefe Captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neere and tooke him, and commanded him to be bound with two chaines, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And one cried this another that, among the people. So when he could not know the certaintie for the tumult, he commaunded him to be led into the castell.

35 And when he came vnto the griecer, it was so that hee was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul should haue been led into the castell, hee sayd
 vnto

C H A P. XXII.

vnto the chiefe captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou speake Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before these dayes raised a sedition, and led out into the wildernesse foure thousand men that were murderers?

39 Then Paul said, Doubtlesse I am a man which am a Iew, and citizens of Tarsus, a famous citie of Cilicia, and I beseech thee, suffer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when hee had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the graces, and beckned with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great silence, hee spake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

C H A P. XXII.

1 Paul reclarith a reason of his faith, 22 and the Jewes heare him awhile: 23 But so soone as they cried out, 24 he is commanded to be scourged and examined, 27 and so acquainteth that he is a citizen of Rome.

YE men, brethren and Fathers, heare my defence now toward you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence, and he said)

3 I am verely a man, which am a Iewe, borne in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at the teete of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the perfect maner of the Law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as yee all are this day.

4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and deli-
uering into prison both men and women,

5 As also the chiefe Priest doth beare me witnesse, and all the companie of the Elders: of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, that they might be punished.

6 ¶ And so it was, as Iourneyed and was come neere vnto Damascus about noone, that suddenly there shone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 Then I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said to mee, I am Iesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 More uer they that were with mee, sawe in deede a light, and were astraide: but they heard not the voyce of him that spake vnto me.

10 Then I said, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord sayde

THE ACTES.

vnto mee, Arise, and goe to Damascus: and there it shall bee tolde thee of all things, which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 So when I could not see for the glory of that sight, I was led by the hand of them that were with me, and came vnto Damascus.

12 And one Ananias a godly man, as pertaining to the Lawe, hauing good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,

13 Came vnto mee, and stood, and said vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that same houre I looked vpon him.

14 And hee said, The God of our fathers hath appoynted thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and shouldest see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt bee his witnesse vnto all men of the things which thou hast seene and heard.

16 Now therefore why tarieest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, in calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 ¶ And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, and prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance,

18 And saw him saying vnto me, Make hast and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witnesse concerning me.

19 Then I said, Lorde, they know that I prisoned, and beat in euery Synagogue them that beleued in thee.

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also stood by and consented vnto his death and kept the cloths of them that slew him.

21 Then hee said vnto mee, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles.

22 ¶ And they heard him vnto this word, but then they lift vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not meete that he should live.

23 And as they cried and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the ayre,

24 The chiefe captaine commaunded him to bee led into the castle, and bad that he should be scourged, and examined, that they might know wherefore they cried so on him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge one that is a Romane, and not condemned?

26 Now when the Centurion heard it, he went and tolde the chiefe captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest: for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe captaine came, and said to him, Tell mee,

C H A P. XXIII.

art thou a Roman? And he said, Yes.

18 And the chiefe captaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. Then Paul said, But I was so borne.

19 Then straightway they departed from him, which should haue examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afraide, after he knew that he was a Roman, and that he had bound him.

20 On the next day, because hee would haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from his bonds, and commanded the hie Priests and all their Councell to come together: and he brought Paul, and set him before them.

C H A P. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias commaundeth them to smite him. 7 Dissention among his cusers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Iewes laying waite for Paul, 20 is declared vnto the chiefe captaine. 27 He sendeth him to Felix the Governour.

ANd Paul beheld earnestly the Councell, and sayd, Men and brethren, I haue in all good conscience serued God vntill this day.

2 Then the hie Priest Ananias commaunded them that floode by, to smite him on the mouth

3 Then said Paul to him, God will smite thee, thou whited wall: for thou sittest to iudge me according to the Law, and transgressing the Law, commaundest thou me to be smitten?

4 And they that stood by, said, Reuilest thou Gods hie Priest?

5 Then said Paul, I knew not brethren, that hee was the hie Priest: for it is written, * Thou shalt not speake euill of the Ruler of thy people.

Exod. 22.
27.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were of the Sadduces, and the other of the Pharises, he cried in the Councell, Men and brethren, * I am a Pharise, the sonne of a Pharise, I am accused of the hope and resurrection of the dead.

Chap. 24.
22. phar.
35.

7 And when he had said this, there was a dissention betwene the Pharises and the Sadduces, so that the multitude was diuided.

8 * For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharises confesse both.

Mat. 22.
23.

9 Then there was a great cry: and the Scribes of the Pharises part rose vp, and stood, saying, Wee finde none euill in this man: but if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him, let vs not fight against God.

10 And when there was a great dissention, the chiefe captaine, fearing least Paul should haue bene pulled in pieces of them, com-

manded

THE ACTES.

manded the souldiers to goe downe, and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 ¶ Now the night following the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou hast testified of mee in Hierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome.

12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an assemblie, and bound themselves with a curse, saying, that they would neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fouentie, which had made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priests and Elders, and said, We haue bound our selues with a solemne curse, that wee will eate nothing, vntill we haue slaine Paul.

15 Now therefore, yee and the Councell signifie to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him forth to you to morrow, as though ye would know something more perfectly of him and we, or euer hee come neree will be readie to kill him.

16 But when Pauls friends sonne heard of their laying await, he went, and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and sayd, Take this yong man hee vnto the chiefe captaine: for hee hath a certaine thing to shew him.

18 So hee tooke him and brought him to the chiefe captaine, and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed mee to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath some thing to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went apart with him alone and asked him, What hast thou to shew me?

20 And he said, The Iewes haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring forth Paul to morrow into the Councell, as though they would enquire some what of him more perfectly.

21 But let them not perswade thee, for the chief is in wait for him of them, more then fouentie men, which haue bound themselves with a curse, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, and wait for thy promise.

22 The chief captaine then let the yong man depart, after hee had charged him to utter it to no man, that hee had shewed him these things.

23 And hee called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers, that they may go to Cesarea, and horsemen three score and ten, and two hundred with darts, at the third houre of the night.

¶ Grecke,
that shew
hast shew-
ed these
things to
me.

C H A P. XXIII.

24 And let them make ready an horse, that Paul being set on, may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouvernour.

25 And he wrote an Epistle in this maner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouvernour Felix sendeth greeting.

27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, and should have been killed of them, I came vpon them with the garison, & rescued him, perceiving that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would haue knowne the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Council.

29 There I perceived that he was accused of questions of their Law but had no crime worthy of death, or of bonds.

30 And when it was shewed me, how that the Iewes layd wait for the man, I sent him straightway to thee, and commanded his accusers to speake before thee the things that they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 And the next day, they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned vnto the caſtel.

33 Now when they came to Cesarea they deliuered the Epistle to the Gouvernour, and presented Paul also vnto him.

34 So when the Gouvernour had read it, he asked of what province he was, and when he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia.

35 I will heare thee, sayd he, when thine accusers also are come, and commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

C H A P. XXIII.

2 Tertius a calish Paul. 10 He answereth for him self. 21 He prayeth for his life. 22 the Gouvernour and his wife. 27 Felix hoping in some to receive a bribe, 28 who gaue him his offer to loose Paul in prison.

NOWE after these daies, Ananias the high Priest came downe with the Elders & with Tertullus a certaine oration, which appeared before the Gouvernour, said Paul.

1 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, seeing that we have obtained great quietnesse through thee, and that many worthy things are done vnto this nation through thy providence,

2 We acknowledge it wholly, a disall places, most noble Felix with all the side.

3 But that I beseech thee vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs on thy court in a few words.

THE ACTES.

5 Certainly we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a chiefe maintainer of the sect of the Nazarites :

6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple, therefore we tooke him, and would haue iudged him according to our Law.

7 But the chiefe captaine Lyfias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come to thee, of whom thou mayest (if thou wilt inquire) know all these things whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes likewise affirmed, saying, that it was so.

10 Then Paul, after that the Gouvernour had beckned vnto him that he should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly answer for my selfe, inasmuch as I knowe that thou hast been of many yeeres a iudge vnto this nation,

11 Seeing that thou mayest know, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem.

12 And they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither making vprore among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie,

13 Neither can they proue the things, whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets,

15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselves looke for also, shall bee both of iust and vniust.

16 And herein I endeavour my selfe to haue alway a cleere conscience toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came and brought almes to my nation and offerings.

18 At what time, certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult,

19 Who ought to haue been present before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought against me.

20 Or let these themselves say, if they haue found any vniust thing in me, while I stood in the Councill,

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cryed standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day.

22 Now when Felix heard these things, hee deferred them, and sayd,

C H A P. XXV.

lord, When I shall more perfectly know the things which concern this way, by the coming of Lyfias the chiefe Captaine, I will decide your matter.

23 Then hee commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that he should haue ease, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him.

24 ¶ And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iewesse, and he called iorth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ.

25 And as he disputed of righteousness, and temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, and when I haue conuenient time, I will call for thee.

26 Hee hoped also that money should haue been giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore hee sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 When two yerres were expired, Pontius Festus came into Felix rourne: and Felix willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

C H A P. XXV.

1 Festus succeeding Felix, 6 commandeth Paul to be brought forth. 11 Paul appeareth vnto Cesar. 14 Festus openeth Pauls matter to King Agrippa, 23 and bringeth him before him 27 that he may understand his cause.

WHen Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Cesarea vnto Hierusalem.

2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem: and they layd wait to kill him by the way.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should bee kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would shortly depart thither.

5 Let them therefore, said hee, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednesse in the man let them accuse him.

6 ¶ Now when he had taried among them no more then ten dayes, hee went downe to Cesarea, and the next day sate in the iudgement seate and commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stood about him, and layd many and grieuous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine prooffe.

8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offended any thing

THE ACTES.

thing against the lawe of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor against Cesar.

9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answered Paul, and sayd, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accñe me, no man, to pleasure them, can deliver roce to them: I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Councill, he answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 And after certaine daues, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had remained there many daues, Festus declared Pauls case vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix,

15 Of whom when I came to Hierusalem, the hie Priests and Elders of the Iewes informed mee, and desired to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romans for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defend himselfe concerning the crime.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sat on the iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Icius, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because I doubted of such manner of question, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things.

21 But because he appealed to be referred to the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morow, sayd he, thou shalt sitare him.

C H A P. XXVL

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, and were entred into the Common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Fessus commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Fessus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon mee, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that he ought not to liue any longer.

25 Yet haue I found nothing worthie of death, that hee hath committed: neuerthelesse, seeing that hee hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my lords: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For mee thinketh it vnreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to shew the causes which are *laid* against him.

C H A P. XXVI.

3 Paul in the presence of Agrippa 4 declareth his life from his childhood. 16 and his calling. 22 with such efficacy of words, 28 that at last hee persuadeth him to Christianity: 30 but hee with his companion Ananias, dooeth nothing in Pauls matter.

THEN Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe.

1 I thinke my selfe happie. King Agrippa, because I shall answer this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused to the Iewes:

2 Chiesly, because thou hast knowledge of all customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee, to heare me patiently.

3 As touching my life from *my* childhood, and what it was from the beginning among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes.

4 Which knew me heretofore, even from mine elders (if they would ethe) that after the most strait sect of our religion I liued a Pharise.

5 And now I stand and am accused for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers.

6 Whereunto our twelve tribes instantly turning God day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes sake, O King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.

8 Why

THE ACTES.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible vnto you, that God should raise againe the dead?

9 I also verely thought in my selfe, that I ought to doe many contrarie things against the Name of I E S V S of Nazareth.

Chap. 8. 3.

10 * Which thing I also did in Hierosalem: for many of the Saints I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie of the hie Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue my sentence.

11 And I punished them throughout all the Synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme, and being more mad against them, I persecuted them, euen vnto strange cities.

Chap. 9. 2.

12 At which time, euen as I went to * Damascus with authoritie, and commision from the hie Priests,

13 At midday, O King, I saw in the way a light from heauen, passing the brightnesse of the sunne, shine round about mee, and them which went with me.

14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking vnto me, saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to licke against prickes.

15 Then I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise and stand vp on thy feete: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a witnesse, both of the things which thou hast seene, and of the things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,

17 Deliuering thee from this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, that they may turne from darknesse to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiveness of finnes, and inheritance among them, which are sanctified by faith in me.

19 Wherefore King Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the beauenly vision,

Chap. 22

26. and

13. 4.

20 * But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coastes of Iudea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent, and turne to God, and doe workes worthy amendment of life.

Chap. 21.

30.

21 For this cause the Iewes caught mee in the * Temple, and went about to kill me,

22 Neuerthelesse, I obtained helpe of God, & continue vnto this day witnessing both to smal and to great, saying none other things, then those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come,

23 To wit, that Christ should suffer, and, that he should be the first

C H A P. XXVII.

first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto his people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as hee thus answered for himselfe, Festus said with a lowde voyce, Paul, thou art besides thy selfe: much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, O noble Festus, but I speake the words of truth, and sobernesse.

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake boldly: for I am perswaded that none of these things bee hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 O King Agrippa, beleueit thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleueit.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadeest me to become a Christian.

29 Then Paul said, I would to God that not onely thou, but also all that heare me to day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when hee had thus spoken, the King rose vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betweene themselves, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, nor of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue bene loosed, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

C H A P. XXVII.

1 Paul 7. 9 foretelleth the perill of the voyage, 11 but hee is not beleued. 14 They are tossed to and fro with the tempest, 21. 41 and suffer shipwrecke. 34 Yet all safe and sound 44 escape to land.

NOW when it was concluded, that wee should saile into Italy, they deliuered both Paul and certaine other prisoners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the band of Augustus.

1 And* we entred into a ship of Adramyttium, purposing to saile by the coastes of Asia, and lanced forth, and had Ar starchus of Macedonia a Thessalonian, with vs. 2. Cor. 11. 25.

3 And the next day wee arrived at Sidon: and Iulius courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him libertie to goe vnto his friends, that they might refresh him.

4 And from thence we lanced, and sailed hard by Cyprus, because the winds were contrarie.

5 Then sayled we ouer the sea by Cilicia, and Pamphylia, and came to Myra, a ciitie in Lycia.

6 And

THE ACTES.

6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sayling into Italy and put vs therein.

7 And when wee had sayled slowly many dayes, and scarce were come against Gnidum, because the winde suffered vs not, wee sayled hard by Candie neere to Salmone:

8 And with much adoe sayled beyond it, and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto the which was the citie Laſea.

9 So when much time was spent, and sayling was now ieopardous, because also the Fast was now past, Paul exhorted *them*,

10 And said vnto them, Syrs. I see that this voyage will bee with hurt and much damage, not of the lading and shippe onely, but also of our liues.

11 Neuerthelesse the Centurion beleeeved rather the Gouernour and the master of the shippe, then those things which were spoken of Paul.

12 And because the hauens was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counsell to depart thence, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter, which is an hauens of Candie, and lieth toward the Southweſt and by Weſt, and Northweſt, and by Weſt.

13 And when the Southerne wind blew softly, they supposing to attaine their purpose, looked neerer, and sayled by Candie.

14 But anon after, there arose by it a stormie winde called Euroclydon.

15 And when the shippe was caught, and could not resist the winde, we let her goe, and were caried away.

16 And we ranne vnder a litle yle named Clauda, and had much adoe to get the boate.

17 Which they tooke vp and vsed all helpe, vndergirding the shippe, fearing least they should haue fallen into Syrtes, and they strake sayle, and so were caried.

18 The next day, when we were tossed with an exceeding tempest, we lightned the shippe.

19 And the third day wee cast out with our owne hands the tackling of the shippe.

20 And when neither sunne nor starres in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay vpon vs, all hope that we should be ſaued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence, Paul stood fourth in the mids of them, and said, Syrs. I see I should haue hearkned to me, and not haue looked from Candie: so should ye haue gained this hurt and losse.

22 But now I exhort you to bee of good courage : for there shalbe no losse of any mans life among you, save of the ship onely.

23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou must be brought before Cesar: & loe, God hath given vnto thee freely all that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore, sirs, be of good courage: for I belecue God, that it shalbe to as it hath been told me.

26 Howbeit, we must be cast into a certaine yland.

27 And when the fourteenth night was come, as we were carried to and fro in the Adriaticall sea about midnight, the shipmen deemed that some countrey approached vnto them,

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found fifteene fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest they should have fallen into some rough places, they cast foure ankers out of the sterne, and wished that the day were come.

30 Now as the mariners were about to flee out of the shippe, and had let downe the boat into the sea vnder a colour as though they would have cast ankers out of the foreship,

31 Paul cryd vnto the Centurion and the souldiers, Except they abide in the ship, ye cannot be safe.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boate, and let it fall away.

33 And when it began to bee day, Paul exhorted them all to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that yee haue taried, and continued fasting, receiuing nothing:

34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate: for this is for your safegard: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he tooke bread, and gaue thanks to God, in presence of them all, and brake it, and began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meate.

37 Now wee were in the ship in all two hundredth threescore and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheate into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knewe not the countrey, but they spied a certaine creeke with a banke, into the which they

THE ACTES.

were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship.

40 So when they had taken vp the ankers, they committed the ship vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bonds, and hoisted vp the maine saile to the winde, and drew to the shore.

41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas met, they thrust in the ship: and the forepart stucke fast, & could not be mooued, but the hinder part was broken by the violence of the waues.

42 Then the souldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them, when he had sworne out, should flee away.

43 But the Centurion willing to save Paul, stayed them from this counsel, and commanded that they that could swimme, should cast themselues first into the sea, and goe out to land:

44 And the other, some on boords, and some on certaine pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

C H A P. XXVIII.

2 The Barbarians courtesie towards Paul and his company. 3 A viper on Pauls hand: 6 Hee shakes it off without harme: 8 Publius 9 and others are by him healed. 11 They depart from Melita, 16 and come to Rome. 17 Paul opposeth to the Iewes 20 The cause of his coming: 22 He preacht to Iesus 30 two yeeres.

AND when they were come safe, then they knew that the yle was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one, because of the present shewre, and because of the colde.

3 And when Paul had gathered a number of stiches, and layd them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heate, and leapt on his hand.

4 Now when the Barbarians sawe the worme hang on his hand, they sayd among themselues, This man surely is a murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffered to liue.

5 But he shooke off the worme into the fire, & felt no harme.

6 Howbeit they waited when hee should haue swolne, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no inconuenience come to him, they changed their minds, and said, That he was a God.

7 In the same quarters, the chiefe man of the yle (whose name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the
fever,

CHAP. XXVIII.

fewer, and of a blondie fixe: to whome Paul entred in, and when he prayed, he laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which had diseases, came to him and were healed,

10 Which also did vs great honour: and when wee departed, they laden vs with things necessarie.

11 ¶ Now after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle, whose badge was Castor and Pollux.

12 And when wee arrived at Syracuse, wee taried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we set a compasse, and came to Rhegium: and after one day the South wind blew, and we came the second day to Puteoli:

14 Where wee found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven dayes, and so we went toward Rome.

15 ¶ And from thence, when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meete vs at the Market of Appius, and at the three Tavernes, whom when Paul saw, he thanked God and waxed bold.

16 So when wee came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himselfe with a souldier that kept him.

17 And the third day after, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and when they were come, hee said vnto them Men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or lawes of the fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romanes

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was constrained to appeale vnto Caesar, not because I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore I am I called for you, to see you, and to speake with you: for that hope of Israels sake, I am bound with this chaine.

21 Then they said vnto him, Wee neither received letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of the brethren that shewed or spake any euill of thee.

22 But wee will heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him, into his lodging: to whom he expounded and testified

TO THE ROMANES.

the kingdome of God, and perswading them those things that concerne Iesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the Prophets, from morning to night.

24 And some were perswaded with the things which were spoken, and some beleueed not.

25 Therefore when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after Paul had spoken one word, *to wit,* Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vnto our Fathers,

7/ai 69. 26 Saying, * Goe vnto this people, and say, By hearing ye shall
mat. 13. 14 heare, and shall not vnderstand: and seeing ye shall see, and not perceiue.

mar. 4. 12 27 For the heart of this people is waxed fat, and their eares are
luke 8. 10. dull of hearing, and with thair eyes haue they winked, least they
ioh. 12. 40. should see with *their* eyes, and heare with *their* eares, & vnderstand
rom. 11. 8. with *their* hearts, and should returne that I might heale them.

28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall heare it.

29 And when he had said these things, the Iewes departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul remained two yeeres full in an house hired for himselfe, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things, which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldnesse of speech, without let.

THE EPISTLE OF THE APO. Sle Paul to the Romanes.

CHAP. I.

1 Hee first sheweth on what authoritie his Apostleship standeth:
15 Then he commendeth the Gospel, 16 by which God Ieuesh
out his power to those that are saved 17 by faith, 21 but were
guilty of wicked unrighteousnesse to God, 26 For which his
wrath was worthily poured on them, 29 so that they ran head-
long into all kinds of sinne.

Mat. 13. 1 **P**AVL a seruant of IESVS CHRIST, called
to be an Apostle, *put apart to preach the Gospel of
God,

2 (Which hee had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was
made of the seede of Dauid, according to the flesh,

4 And

CHAP. I.

4 And declared mightily to be the Sonne of God, touching the Spirit of sanctification by the resurrection from the dead)

5 By whom we haue received grace and Apostleship (that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith): for his name among all the Gentiles,

6 Among whom ye be also the called of Iesus Christ:

7 To all on that he at Rome beloued of God, called to be Saints: Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, (whom I serue in my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you

10 Alwayes in my prayers, beseeching that by some meares, one time or other, I might haue a prosperous iourney, by the will of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I might bestowe among you some spirituall gift, that you might be strengthened:

12 That is, that I might bee comforted together with you, through our mutuall faith, both yours and mine.

13 Nowe my brethren, I would that wee should not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you, (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue some fruite also among you, as I haue among the other Gentiles.

14 I am detter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise men and to the vnwise.

15 Therefore, as much as in mee is, I am ready to preach the Gospel to you also that are at Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto saluation to euery one that beleaueth, to the Jewe first, and also to the Grecian

17 For by it the righteousness of God is reuealed from faith to faith: as it is written, * The iust shall liue by faith.

Malak. 2.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen against all vngodlinesse, and vnrighteousnesse of men, which withhold the truth in vnrighteousnesse,

19 Forasmuch as that which may be knowne of God, is manifest in them: for God hath shewed it vnto them.

20 For the invisible things of him, that is, his eternal power and Godhead, are seene by the creation of the world, being considered in his workes, to the intent that they should be without excuse:

21 Because that when they knewe God, they glorified him not

TO THE ROMANES.

21 God, neither were thankful, but became vaine in their thoughts, and their foolish heart was full of darkenesse.

22 When they professed themselves to be wise, they became fooles.

23 For they turned the glory of the incorruptible God to the similitude of the image of a corruptible man, and of birdes, and foure footed beastes, and of creeping things.

24 Wherefore also God gaue them vp to their hearts lustes, vnto uncleannes, to defile their owne bodies betweene themselves.

25 Which turned the truth of God vnto a lie, and worshipped and serued the creatimg, forsaking the Creator, wh ch is blessed for ever, Amen.

26 For this cause God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vse into that which is against nature.

27 And likewise also the men left the naturall vse of the woman, and burned in their lust one toward another, and man with man wrought filthinesse, and recciued in themselves such recompence of their error, as was meete.

28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *euen so* God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not conuenient.

29 Being full of all vnrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, rone:ousnesse, maliciouesnesse full of enie, of murder, of debate, deceite, taking all things in the euill part, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proud, boasters, inueners of euill things, disobedient to parents, without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without naturall affection, such as can neuer be appeased, mercilesse.

31 Which men though they knew the Law of God, how that they which commit such things are worthy of death, yet not only doe the same, but also fauour them that doe them.

C H A P. II.

1 He bringeth a't before the iudgement seate of God. 11 The excuse that the Gentiles might pretend 14 of a conscience, he taketh quite awa. 17 He beginneth the Jewes with the written Lawe, 23 in which they boasted: 27 And so maketh both Jewe and Gentile able.

Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, who soeuer thou art that condemnest: for in that that thou condemnest another, thou condemnest thy selfe: for thou that condemnest, doest the same things.

C H A P. II.

2 But we know that the iudgement of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O thou man, that condemnest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his bountifullnesse, and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifullnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But thou after thine hardnesse and heart that cannot repent, heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, and of the declaration of the iust iudgement of God, Rom. 2.5.

6 * Who will reward every man according to his workes: Psal 62.

7 That is, to them which through patience in wel doing, seeke glory, and honour, and immortallitie, euermlasting life: 12 mat. 16. 27.

8 But vnto them that are contentious and disobey the truth, and obey vnrightheousnesse, *shall be* indignation and wrath, Rom. 2. 9.

9 Tribulation and anguish *shall be* vpon the soule of every man that doeth euill: of the Iew first, and also of the Grecian.

10 But to every man that doeth good *shall be* glory, and honour, and peace, to the Iew first, and also to the Grecian.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as have sinned without the Lawe, shall perishe also without the Law: and as many as haue sinned in the Lawe, shall be iudged by the Law.

13 (For the hearers of the Law are not righteous before God: but the doers of the Law shall be iustified)

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, doe by nature the things contained in the Law, they hauing not the Law, are a Law vnto themselves,

15 Which shew the effect of the Law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts accusing one another, or excusing)

16 At the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospell.

17 Behold, thou art called a Iew, and restest in the Law, and gloryest in God.

18 And knowest his will, and trustest the things that differ from it, in that thou art instructed by the Law: Or shewest y

19 And persuadest thy selfe that thou art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness,

20 An instructor of them which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlerned, which hast the forme of knowledge, and of the

TO THE ROMANES.

the truth in the Law.

21 Thou therefore, which teachest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest, A man should not steale, dost thou steale?

22 Thou that sayest, A man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idoles, committest thou sacrilege?

23 Thou that gloriest in the Lawe, through breaking the Law, dishonourest thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, * as it is written.

25 For circumcision verily is profitable, if thou doe the Lawe: but if thou be a transgressor of the Law, thy circumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe the ordinances of the Law, shall not his vncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not vncircumcision which is by nature (if it keepe the Law) condemne thee which by the letter and circumcision art a transgressor of the Law?

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly: neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh.

29 But he is a Jew which is one within, and the circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit, not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

C H A P. III.

1 He giveth the Jewes some 2 preferment, for the covenants sake, 3 but yet such, as wholly dependeth on Gods mercie. 4 That both Jewes and Gentiles are sinners, 5 he procureth by Scriptures 6 and shewing the use of the Law, 7 he concludeth that we are justified by faith.

WHat is then the preferment of the Jew? or what is the profit of circumcision?

2 Much every manner of way: for chiefly, because vnto them were of credite committed the oracles of God.

3 For what, though some did not beleue? shall their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, and every man a liar, as it is written, That thou mightest be iustified in thy words, and overcome, when thou art iudged.

5 Now if our vnrightheousnesse commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God vnrightheous which punisheth? (I speake as a man,)

C H A P. III.

- 6 God forbid: else how shall God iudge the world?
- 7 For if the veritie of God hath more abounded through my lie vnto his glorie, why am I yet condemned as a sinner?
- 8 And (as wee are blamed, and as some affirme that wee say) why doe we not euill, that good may come *thereof*: whose damnation is iust.
- 9 What then? are we more excellent? No, in no wise, for we haue alreadie prooued, that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder sinne,
- 10 As it is written, * There is none righteous, no not one.
- 11 There is none that vnderstandeth: there is none that seeketh God.
- 12 They haue all gone out of the way: they haue beene made altogether vnprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one.
- 13 * Their throte is an open sepulchre: they haue vsed their tongues to deceit: * the poison of Aspes is vnder their lippes.
- 14 * Whole mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse,
- 15 * Their feete are swift to shed blood,
- 16 Destruction and calamitie are in their wayes,
- 17 And the way of peace they haue not knowen.
- 18 * The feare of God is not before their eyes.
- 19 Now we know that whatsoever the Law sayth, it sayeth it to them which are vnder the Law, that euery mouth may be stopp'd, and all the world be subiect to the iudgement of God.
- 20 Therefore by the workes of the Lawe shall no flesh be iustified in his sight: for by the Law *commeth* the knowledge of sinne.
- 21 But now is the righteousness of God made manifest without the Law, hauing witness of the Law and of the Prophets,
- 22 To wit, the righteousness of God by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all that beleeeue.
- 23 For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, and are depriv'd of the glory of God,
- 24 And are iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus,
- 25 Whome God hath set forth to be a reconciliation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness, by the forgiveness of the finnes that are past,
- 26 Through the patience of God, to shew at this time his righteousness, that hee might be iust, and a iustifier of him which is of the faith of Iesus.
- 27 Where is then the reioicing? It is excluded. By what law of workes? Nay: but by the Law of faith.

Psal. 14.

1. 3. and

53. 1. 3.

Psal. 5. 10.

Psal. 143.

3.

Psal. 10. 7.

Isa 55. 7.

Psal. 36. 1.

TO THE ROMANES.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith without the workes of the Law.

29 God, is he the God of the Iewes onely, and not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euen of the Gentiles also.

30 For it is one God who shall iustifie circumcision of faith, and vncircumcision through faith.

31 Doe we then make the Lawe of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Lawe.

C H A P. IIII.

1 He proueth that which he said before of faith, by the example of Abraham, 3. 6 and the testimonie of the Scripture, and some times in the Chapter he beateh up vpon this word *imputation*.

WHat shall wee say then, that Abraham our father hath found concerning the flesh?

2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, hee hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God.

3 For what sayeth the Scripture? Abraham beleued God, and it was counted to him for righteousness.

4 Now to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by debt:

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleueth in him that iustificieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Euen as Dauid declared the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousness without workes, *lat. 112.*

7 Blessed are they, whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose finnes are couered.

8 Blessed is the man, to whom the Lord imputeth not sinne.

9 Came this blessednesse then vpon the circumcision onely, or vpon the vncircumcision also? For wee say, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then imputed: when he was circumcised, or vncircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when hee was vncircumcised.

11 After, hee received the signe of circumcision, as the seale of the righteousness of the faith which hee had, when hee was vncircumcised, that hee should be the father of all them that beleue, not being circumcised, that righteousness might bee imputed to them also.

12 And the father of circumcision not vnto them onely which are of the circumcision, but vnto them also which walke in the steppes of the faith of our father Abraham, which hee had when hee was vncircumcised.

C H A P. V.

13 For the promise that hee should be the heire of the world, was not *given* to Abraham or to his seede, through the Lawe, but through the righteousness of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Lawe, be heires, faith is made void, and the promise is made of none effect.

15 For the Lawe causeth wrath: for where no Lawe is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* by faith, that *it might come* by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Lawe; but also to that which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations) even before God whom he beleued, who quickneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were.

18 Which *Abraham* alone hope, beleued vnder hope, that he should be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken *to him*. So shall thy seede be.

19 And he not weak in the faith considering not his owne body, which was now dead being almost an hundredth yeres old, neither the deadnesse of Saras wombe,

20 Neither did he doubt of the promise of God through vnbeliefe, but was strengthened in the faith, and gave glory to God,

21 Being fully assured that hee which had promised, was also able to doe it.

22 And therefore it was imputed vnto him for righteousness.

23 Now it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteousness,

24 But also for vs, to whome it shall bee imputed for righteousness, which beleue in him that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead.

25 Who was delivered to death for our finnes, and is risen againe for our iustification.

C H A P. V.

1 He *applieth* 2 *Christs righteousness*, which is laid hold on by faith, 5 *who was given for the weak*, 8 *and sinners*. 14 He *compareth* Christ with *Adam*, 17 *Death with life*, 20 *And the Law with Grace*.

Then being iustified by faith, wee haue peace toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ,

2 *By whom also through faith, we haue had this acceſſe into this grace, wherein wee stand, and reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God.

Ep. 2. 18

3 Neither

TO THE ROMANES.

7407.1.2

3 Neither *that* onely, but also wee *reioyce in tribulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience,

4 And patience experience, and experience hope,

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue of God is shed abroad in our hearts by *h*oly Ghost, which is given vnto vs.

Heb. 2.15.

1.17.3.18

6 For Christ when we were yet of no strength, at *his* time, died for the *vngodly.

7 Doubtlesse, one will scarce die for a righteous man: but yet for a good man it may be that one dare die.

8 But God setteth forth his loue toward vs, seeing that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs.

9 Much more then, being now iustified by his blood, we shall be saued from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, wee were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we shall be saued by his life.

11 And not onely so, but wee also reioyce in God through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom we haue now received the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sinne, and so death went ouer all men: in whom all men haue sinned.

13 For vnto the time of the Lawe was sinne in the world, but sinne is not imputed, while there is no Law.

14 But death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them also that sinned not after the like manner of the transgression of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come.

15 But yet the gift is not so, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 Neither is the gift so, as *that which entred in* by one that sinned: for the fault *came* of one offence vnto condemnation: but the gifts of many offences to iustification.

17 For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more shall they which receive the abundance of grace, and of the gift of that righteousness, reigne in life through one, *that is* Iesus Christ.

18 Likewise then as by the offence of one *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, so by the iustifying of one *the benefite* abounded toward all men to the iustification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many be made righteous.

20 Moreover,

C H A P. VI.

30 Moreover, the Law entred thereupon that the offence should abound: neuerthelesse, where sinne abounded, *there* grace abounded much more:

31 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnesse vnto eternal life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

C H A P. VI.

1 *He cometh to sanctification, without which, that no man putteth in Christs righteousnesse he prometh, 4 by an argument taken of Baptisme: 12 and thereupon exhorteth to holinesse of life, briefly making mention of the Law transformed.*

WHat shall wee say then? Shall we continue still in sinne, that grace may abound? God forbid.

2 How shall we, that are dead to sinne, liue yet therein? *Gal. 3. 27.*

3 Know ye not, that *all we which have bene baptised into Iesus Christ, haue bene baptized into his death?

4 *We are buried then with him by baptisme into his death, *Col. 2. 12.*
that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead to the glory of the Father, so we also should * walke in newnesse of life. *Ephes. 4.*

5 *For if wee bee planted with him to the similitude of his death, *23. col. 5.*
even so shall we be to the similitude of his resurrection, *8 heb. 12.*

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that henceforth wee should not serue sinne. *1. 1 pet. 2.*

7 For he that is dead, is freed from sinne. *1. cor. 6.*

8 Wherefore if we be dead with Christ, we beleue that we shall liue also with him, *14 2. cor. 2. 11.*

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him,

10 For in that he died, hee died once to sinne: but in that hee liueth, he liueth to God.

11 Likewise thinke ye also, that ye are dead to sinne, but are al-
liue to God in Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne therefore reigne in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither giue yee your members as weapons of vnrigh-
teousnesse vnto sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they that are al-
liue from the dead, and giue your members as weapons of righte-
ousnesse vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you: for yee are not
vnder the Law, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shall wee sinne, because wee are not vnder the
Law,

TO THE ROMANES.

Law, but vnder Grace? God forbid.

100. 8. 34
2. pet. 2. 19

16 *Know ye not, that to whomsoever ye give your selues as seruants to obey, his seruants ye are to whom yee obey, whether it be of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye haue bene the seruants of sinne, but ye haue obeyed from the heart vnto the forme of the doctrine, whereunto ye are deliuered.

18 Being then made free from sinne, yee are made the seruants of righteousness.

19 I speake after the maner of man, because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye haue given your members seruants to uncleanness, and to iniquitie, to commit iniquitie, so now give your members seruants vnto righteousness in holiness.

20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne, ye were freed from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death.

22 But now being freed from sinne, and made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruit in holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

C H A P. VII.

1 He declareth what it is, to be no more vnder the Law, 2 by an example taken of the Law of marriage. 7. 12 And least the Law should seeme faultie, 14 he proueth, that our sinne is the cause, 13 that the same is an occasion of death, 17 which was giuen vs vnto life: 21 He setteth out the distance betwene the flesh and the spirit.

1. Cor 7.
55.

K Now ye not brethren (for I speake to them y know the Law) that the Law hath dominion over a man as long as he lieth?

2 *For the woman which is in subiection to a man, is bound by the Law to the man, while he lieth: but if the man be dead, she is deliuered from the Law of the man.

Mat 5. 39

3 So then, if while the man lieth she take another man, shee shall be called an adulteresse: but if the man be dead, she is free from the Law, so that she is not an adulteresse, though she take another man.

4 So ye, my brethren, are dead also to the Law by the body of Christ, that ye should be vnto another, *even* vnto him that is raised vp from y dead, that we should bring forth fruit vnto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the affections of the finnes which were by the Law, had force in our members, to bring forth

CHAP. VIII.

forth fruite vnto death.

6 But now yee are deliuered from the Law, he being dead in whom we were holden, that we should serue in newnesse of Spirit, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

7 What shall wee say then? Is the Law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not sinne, but by the Law; for I had not knowen lust, except the Law had said, * Thou shalt not lust.

Exod. 20.
17 dens.
5.21.

8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the commandement, and wrought in me all manner of concupiscence; for without the Law sinne is dead.

9 For I once was aliue, without the Law: but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued,

10 But I died: and the same commandement which was ordained vnto life, was found to be vnto me vnto death.

11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commandement, and deceived me, and thereby slew me.

12 Wherefore the Law is holy, and that commandement is holy, and iust, and good.

1. Tim. 1.8

13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto mee? God forbid: but sinne, that it might appeare sinne, wrought death in me by that which is good, that sinne might be out of measure full by the commandement.

14 For we know that the Law is spirituall, but I am carnall, sold vnto sinne.

15 For I follow not that which I doe: for what I would, that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If I doe then that which I would not, I consent to the Law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I, that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with mee: but I find no means to performe that which is good.

19 For I doe not the good thing, which I would, but the euill which I would not, that doe I.

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then that when I would doe good, I am thus yoked, that euill is present with me.

22 For I delight in the Law of God, concerning the inner man:

23 But I see another law in my members, rebelling against the law of my mind, and leading me captiue vnto the lawe of sinne, when

TO THE ROMANES.

which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this death!

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. Then I my selfe in my minde serue the Law of God, but in my flesh the Law of sinne.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He concludeth that there is no condemnation to them, who are grafted in Christ through his spirit, 3 howsoever they be as yet burdened with sinnes: 9 for they live through that spirit, 14 whose testimony 15 removeth away all feare, 28 and releaseth our present miseries.

NOW then there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the Law of the Spirit of life, which is in Christ Iesus, hath freed me from the Law of sinne and of death.

3 (For that that was impossible to the Law, inasmuch as it was weake, because of the flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude of sinful flesh and for sinne condemned sinne in the flesh,

4 That that righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, savour the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For the wisdom of the flesh is death: but the wisdom of the Spirit is life and peace,

7 Because the wisdom of the flesh is enimities against God: for it is not subject to the Law of God, neither in deede can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh, can not please God.

9 Now yee are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not the Spirit of Christ, the same is not his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirit is life for righteousness sake.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Iesus from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, by his spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are debtors not to the flesh, to live after the flesh:

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

C H A P. VIII.

15 For yee haue not receiued the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby wee cry Abba, Father.

16 The same Spirit beareth witnesse with our Spirit, that wee are the children of God.

17 If we be children, we are also heires euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be that wee suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I count that the afflictions of this present time are not worthy of the glory which shall be shewed vnto vs.

19 For the seruent desire of the creature waiteth when the sonnes of God shall be reuealed,

20 Because the creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it own will, but by reason of him which hath subdued it vnder hope,

21 Because the creature also shalbe deliuered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious libertie of the sonnes of God.

22 For we know that euery creature groaneth with vs also, and travaileth in paine together vnto this present.

23 And not onely the creature, but we also which haue the first fruits of the Spirit, euen we doe sigh in our selues, waiting for the adoption, *euen* the * redemption of our body.

Iude 21.

24 For wee are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for how can a man hope for that which he seeth?

28.

25 But if we hope for that we see not, we doe with patience abide for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities, for wee know not what to pray as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh request for vs with sighes, which cannot be expressed.

27 But hee that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh request for the Saints, according to the will of God.

28 Also we knowe that all things worke together for the beell vnto them that loue God, euen to them that are called of his purpose.

29 For those which he knew before, he also predestinate to be made like to the image of his Sonne, that hee might be the first borne among many brethren.

30 Moreover whom he predestinated, them also he called, and whome he called, them also hee iustified, and whome he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be on our side, who can be against vs?

32 Who

TO THE ROMANES.

32 Who spared not his owne Son: e, but gaue him for vs all
to death, how shall he not with him giue vs all things also?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? it
is God that iustificeth,

34 Who shall condemne? it is Christ which is dead, yea or ra-
ther which is risen againe. who is also at the right hand of God,
and maketh request also for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribu-
lation, or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill,
or sword?

Psal 44.
22.

36 As it is written, * For thy sake are wee killed all day long,
we are counted as sheepe for the slaughter.

37 Nevertheless, in all these things we are more then conque-
rours through Iesus that loued vs.

38 For I am perswaded that neither death, nor life nor Angels,
nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to
come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall be able
to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our
Lorde.

C H A P. IX.

1 Hee answereth an obiection, & sheweth be brought on the Iewes
beleeife. 7 and telleth of the parts of Abrahams childe, 18
and that God worketh all things in this matter according to his
will, 26 then in the latter part, 24. 30 Hee preacheth as well
the calling of the Gentiles, 31 as also the reuelling of the Jewes,
25. 27 by the testimony of the Prophets.

I Say therefore in Christ. I he not, my conscience bearing me wit-
nesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heavinesse, and continuall sorow in mine
heart.

3 For I would with my selfe to be separate from Christ, for
my brethren that are my kinsmen according to the flesh,

Chap. 2 17
ephe. 2 12. 4 Which are the Israelites to whom pertaineth the adoption,
and the glory, and the * covenants and the giuing of the Law, and
the seruence of God, and the promises.

5 Of whom are the fathers, and of whom concerning the flesh
Christ came, who is God over all blessed for euer, Amen.

Chap. 2 28. 6 *Notwithstanding it can not bee that the worde of God
should take none effect: for all they are not Israel, which are of
Israel:

7 Neither are they all children, because they are the seede of
Abraham:

C H A P. IX.

Abraham : but, * In Isaac shall thy seed be called :

8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, are not the children of God : but the * children of the promise, are counted for the seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, * In this same time will I come, and Sara shall have a sonne,

10 Neither *he* only *sitteth*, but also * Rebecca when she had conceived by one, *was* by our father Isaac.

11 For yet *the children* were borne, and when they had neither the good nor evil (that the purpose of God might remaine according to election, nor by workes, but by him that calleth)

12 It was sayd vnto her, * The eldes shall serue the yonger,

13 As it was written, * I haue loued iacob, & haue hated Esau.

14 What shal we say then? Is there vniuerse with God? God forbid.

15 For hee saith to Moses, * I will haue mercie on him, to whom I will shew mercie: and will haue compaision on him, on whom I will haue compaision.

16 So then *it is* not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie.

17 For the Scripture sayth vnto Pharaon, * For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shewe my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore he hath mercie on whom he will, and whom hee will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt then say vnto me, Why doth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his will?

20 But, O man, who art thou that pleatest against God? shall the * thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

21 * Hath not the potter power of the clay, to make of the same lump one vessel to be honour, and another vnto dishonour?

22 *What* and if God woult, to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowne, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction?

23 And that he might declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercie, which he hath prepared vnto glory?

24 Euen as whom he hath called, not of the iews onely, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he sayth also in Osee. * I will call them, My people, which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued.

Gen. 21

22. 6. 6.

11. 18.

Gal. 4. 28

Gen. 18. 10

Gen. 25

21

Gen. 25

23

Mal. 1. 2

Exod. 33

19

Exo. 9. 16

Isa. 43. 9

Jer. 18. 6

Hos. 2. 23

1 pet. 2.

20

TO THE ROMANES.

Hos. 1. 10

26 And it shall bee in the place where it was sayd vnto them; * Ye are not my people, that there they shall be called, The children of the living God.

Isa. 20. 21

27 Also Esaias crieth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, yet shall but a remnant be saved.

28 For hee will make his account, and gather it into a short summe with righteousness: for the Lord will make a short count in the earth.

Isa. 1. 9

29 * And as Esaias sayd before, Except the Lord of hostes had left vs a seede, we had been made as Sodom, and had been like to Gomorrah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousness, haue attained vnto righteousness, euen the righteousness which is of faith.

31 But Israel which followed the Law of righteousness, could not attaine to the Law of righteousness.

Isa. 1. 18

Isa. 8

Isa. 1. 18

Isa. 1. 16

Isa. 1. 2, 6

32 Wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the Law: for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone,

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke to make men fall: and euery one that beleueth in him, shall not be ashamed.

CHAP. X.

1 He handleth the effects of election, 5 that some refuse, and some embrace 4 Christ, who is the end of the Law. 15 He sheweth that Moses foretold the calling of the Gentiles, 20 and Esaias the harrining of the Jews.

Brethren, mine hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I beare them record, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of the righteousness of God, and going about to stablish their owne righteousness, haue not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God.

Gal. 3. 24

4 * For Christ is the end of the Lawe for righteousness vnto euery one that beleueth.

Leuit. 18

Exe. 20. 11

Gal. 3. 12

Deut. 30

Deut. 30

5 For Moses thus describeth the righteousness which is of the Law, * That the man which doeth these things, shall liue thereby.

6 But the righteousness which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, * Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ againe)

CHAP. X.

7 Or, who shal descend into the deepe? (that is to bring Christ againe from the dead.)

8 But what sayth it? * The word is neere thee, *even* in thy mouth, and in thine heart. This is the word of faith which wee preach. *Deut. 32.*

9 For if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleue in thine heart, that God raised him vp from the dead, thou shalt be saved;

10 For with the heart man beleueth vnto righteousnesse, and with the mouth man confesseth to saluation.

11 For the Scripture saith, * Whosoever beleueth in him, shall not be ashamed. *Ihsa. 28. 16*

12 For there is no difference betwene the Iewe and the Grecian; for hee that is Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that call on him.

13 * For whosoever shall call vpon the Name of the Lord, shall be saved. *Ioh. 1. 38.*

14 But how shall they call on him, in whom they haue not beleued? and how shall they beleue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shall they heare without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, * How beautifull are the feete of them which bring glad tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! *Ihsa. 52. 7. Nah. 1. 15.*

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel: for Esaias saith, * Lord, who hath beleued our report?

17 Then saith he by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. *Ihsa. 53. 1. Iohn 12.*

18 But I demand, Haue they not heard? * No doubt their sound went out though all the earth, and their words into the ends of the world. *Psal. 19. 3.*

19 But I demand, Did not Israel know God? First Moses saith, * I will prouoke you to enuie by a nation that is not my nation, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. *Deut. 32. 21.*

20 * And Esaias is bold, and saith, I was sound of them that sought me not, and haue bene made manifest to them that asked not after me. *Ihsa. 65. 1.*

21 And vnto Israel he saith, * All the day long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a disobedient, and gainsaying people. *Ihsa. 63. 2.*

CHAP. XI.

1 Least the casting off of the leaues should be limited according to the outward appearance, & he sheweth that Elias was in times past accepted, 16 and that, seeing they haue an holie roose, 23 many of them likewise shall bee holie. 18. 24. Hee exhorteth the Gentiles

TO THE ROMANES.

Gentiles to be humble, 33 and crye out, that Gods iudgements are unsearchable.

I Demand then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he knew before, Know yee not what the Scripture saith of Elias, how hee communeth with God against Israel, saying,

3 * Lord, they have killed thy Prophets, and digged downe thine altars: and I am left alone, and they seeke my life?

4 But what saith the answer of God to him? * I have reserved vnto my selfe seuen thousand men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal.

5 Euen so then at this present time is there a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if it be of grace, it is no more of workes: or else were grace no more grace: but if it be of workes, it is no more grace, or else were worke no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that hee sought: but the election hath obtained it, and the rest haue beene hardened,

8 According as it is written, * God hath giuen them the spirit of slumber: eyes that they should not see, and eares that they should not heare vnto this day.

9 And David saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a net, and a stumbling block, euen for a recompence vnto them.

10 Let their eyes be darkened that they see not, and bow down their backe alwayes.

11 I demand ther: Hane they stumbled, that they should fall? God forbid: but through their fall, saluation cometh vnto the Gentiles, to prouoke them to follow them.

12 Wherefore if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much more shall their abundance be?

13 For in that I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles. I magnifie mine office.

14 To trie if by any meanes I might prouoke them of my flesh to follow them, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiuing be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruites be holy, so is the whole lump: and if the roote be holy, so are the branches.

17 * And though some of the branches be broken off, and thou being

2 Kings

19.10.

1 Kings

19.18.

Isa. 69.

and 29.

10. matt.

13. 14.

John 12.

40. a Psa

28. 26.

Psal. 69.

23.

11. 6.

CHAP. XI.

being a wilde Oliue tree, wast gra't in for them, and made partaker of the roote, and fatnesse of the Oliue tree:

18 Boast not thy felie against the branches: and if thou boast thy felie, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken off, that I might be graft in.

20 Well: through vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou standest by faith: be not high minded, but feare.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, *take heede*, lest he also spare not thee,

22 Beholde therefore the bountifullnesse and seueritie of God: toward them which haue fallen seueritie: but toward thee bountifullnesse, if thou continue in *his* bountifullnesse: or else thou shalt also be cut off.

23 And they also, if they abide not still in vnbeliefe, shall bee grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou wast cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wilde by nature, and wast grafted contrarie to nature into a right Oliue tree, how much more shal they that are by nature, be grafted in their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that yee should bee ignorant of this secret (least yee should be arrogant in your selues, that partly obstinacie is come to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles bee come in.

26 And so all Israel shall bee saved, as it is written, * The deli- *7/a. 39. 20*
uerer shall come out of Sion, and shall turne away the vngodlines
from Iacob.

27 And this is my couenant to them, * When I shal take away *7/a. 27. 9*
their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For euen as ye in time past haue not beleued God, yet haue now obtained mercie through their vnbeliefe.

31 Euen so now haue they not beleued by the mercie *showed*
vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercie.

32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that hee might haue mercie on all.

33 O the deepenesse of the riches, both of the wisdom, and knowledge of God: how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out;

TO THE ROMANES.

100. 41. 2. 34 * For who hath knowen the mind of the Lord? or who was
2/a. 40. 13. his counsellour?

1. 207. 2. 16 35 Or who hath given vnto him first, and hee shall be recom-
 pensed?

36 For of him, and throught him, and for him are all things: to
 him be glorie for ever, Amen

C H A P. XII.

1 Her exhorteth 2 to that worship which is acceptable to God:

9 To loue without meell, 14. 20 each towards our enemies.

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that yee
 giue vp your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God,
 which is your reasonable seruing of God.

2 And fashion not your selues like vnto this world, but be ye
2. 16. 5. 17. changed by the renewing of your minde, that yee may * prouoe
1. 2. 16. 4. 3 what that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God is.

3 For I say through the grace that is given vnto me, vnto eue-
 rie one that is among you, that no man presume to vnderstand, a-
 boue that which is meete to vnderstand, but that yee vnderstand
1. Cor. 12. according to sobrietie, as God hath dealt to euery man the * mea-
11. 1. 16. 4. sure of faith.

7 4 For as wee haue many members in one body, and all mem-
 bers haue not one office,

5 So wee being many are one body in Christ, and euery one,
 one anothers members.

1. Th. 4. 6 * Seeing then that we haue gi'tes that are diuers, according
1. 2. to the grace that is given vnto vs, whether we haue propheticke, let
 vs propheticke according to the proportion of faith:

7 Or an office, let vs waite on the office: or hee that teacheth,
 on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that distributeth,
Mat. 6. 2. let him doe it * with simplicitie: he that ruleth, with diligence: he
2. cor. 9. 7. that sheweth mercie, with cheerefulness.

Amos 5. 9 Let vs loue he without dissimulation, * Abhorre that which is
15. euill, and cleane vnto that which is good.

Eph. 4. 2. 10 * Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In
1. Pet. 5. 8. giuing honour, goe one before another.

11 Not slothfull to doe seruice: seruent in spirit: seruing the
 Lord,

Lke 19. 1 12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, * continuing in
1. cor. 16. 1 prayer:

Heb. 13. 2. 13 * Distributing vnto the necessities of the Saints: * giuing
1. pet. 4. 13. your selues to hospitalitie

14 * Bless

C H A P. XIII.

14 *Blesse them which persecute you: blesse, 7 (er) & curse not. *Matt. 5. 44*
 15 Reioyce with them that reioice, and weepe with them that weepe.

16 Be of like affection one towards another: bee not hie minded, but make your selues equall to them of the lower sort: bee not wise in your selues. *Prou. 3. 7
Isa. 5. 11
Pro. 20. 12*

17 *Recompence to no man euill for euill: procure things honest in the sight of all men. *Matt. 5. 39
2. cor. 8. 11*

18 * If it be possible, as much as in you is, haue peace with all men. *1. pet. 3. 9
Hebr. 12*

19 Dearely beloued, * avenge not your selues, but giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine: I will repay, sayth the Lord. *14.
Ecc. 1. 2. 18
Mat. 5. 39*

20 * Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head. *Deut. 32
35. heb. 10
30.*

21: Bee not overcome of euill, but overcome euill with goodnesse. *Prou. 25
22.*

C H A P. XIII.

1 He willeth that we submit our selues to magistrates: 8 To loue our neighbours: 12 To liue vprightly, 14 and to put on Christ. *Titus 3. 1
1. pet. 2. 13*

Let * every soule be subiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: and the powers that be, are ordained of God

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to their selues condemnation.

3 For Magistrates are not to be feared for good workes, but for euill. Wilt thou then be without feare of the power: do well: so shalt thou haue praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God for thy wealth, but if thou do euill, feare: for he beareth not the sword for nought: for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that doth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must be subiect, not because of wrath onely, but also for conscience sake.

6 For for this cause ye pay also tribute. for they are Gods ministers, applying themselves for the same thing.

7 *Gue to all men therefore their due: tribute, to whom ye owe tribute: custome, to whom custome: feare, to whom feare: honour, to whom ye owe honour. *Matt 22.
11.*

8 Owe nothing to any man but to loue one another: for hee that loueth another hath fulfilled the Law.

TO THE ROMANES.

Exod. 30

14. deus.

5. 18

Leuit. 19

18. matt.

22. 59

mar. 12. 31

gal. 5. 14

1. ier. 2. 8

1. Tim. 1. 1

Luke 21

54

Gal. 5. 16

1. pet. 2. 11

9 For this, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witness, Thou shalt not couet : and if there be any other commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, *even* in this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Loue doth not euill to his neighbour: therefore is loue the * fulfilling of the Lawe.

11 And that considering the season, that *it is* now time that we should arise from sleepe: for now is our saluation neerer, then when we beleueed it.

12 The night is past, & the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast away the works of darkness, & let vs put on the armour of light,

13 So that we walke honestly, as in the day: not in * gluttonie, and drunkenesse, neither in chambering and wantonnesse, nor in strife and enuying:

14 * But put ye on the Lord IESVS CHRIST, and take no thought for the flesh, *so fulfill* the lusts of it.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Hee wilteb that wee so deale with the weake in faith, 15 that through our fault they be not offended. 12 And on the other side he commandeth them not to iudge of the strong: 19 that within the bounds of edification 20 and charite, 22 Christian libertie may consist.

Him that is weake in the faith receiue vnto yon, *but* not for contentions of disputations.

2 One beleueth that he may eate of all things: and another which is weake eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.

1. ier. 4. 12

4 * Who art thou that condemnest another mans seruant? he standeth or falleth to his owne master: yea, he shall be established: for God is able to make him stand.

5 This man esteemeth one day above another day: and another man counteth euery day alike: let euery man be fully perswaded in his minde.

6 He that obserueth the day, obserueth it to the Lord: and he that obserueth not the day, obserueth it not to the Lord. Hee that eateth eateth to the Lord: for he giueth God thanks: and he that eateth not, eateth not to the Lord and giueth God thanks.

7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, neither doth any die to himselfe.

8 For

CHAP. XIII.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore, or die, wee are the Lords.

9 For Christ therefore died and rose againe, and remained, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke.

10 But why doest thou condemne thy brother? or why doest thou despise thy brother? * for wee shall all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ.

11 For it is written, * I liue, saith the Lord, and every knee shall bow to me, and all tongues shall confesse vnto God.

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue accounts of himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but vse your iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke before his brother.

14 I knowe, and am perswaded through the Lord Iesus, that there is nothing vncleane of it selfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vncleane to him it is vncleane.

15 But if thy brother bee grieved for the meate, then walkest thou not charitably: * destroy not him with thy meate, for whom Christ died.

16 Cause not your commoditie to be euill spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meate, nor drinke, but righteousness, and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

18 For whosoever in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable vnto God and is approved of men.

19 Let vs then follow those things which concerne peace, and wherewith one may edifie another.

20 Destroy not the worke of God for meats sake: * all things indeede are pure: but it is euill for the man which eateth with offence.

21 * It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or made weake.

22 Hast thou faith? haue it with thy selfe before God blessed is he that condemneth not his selfe in that thing which he alloweth.

23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eate, because he eateth not of faith: and whatsoever is not of faith, is sinne.

CHAP. XV.

1 The stronger must employ their strength to strengthen the weaker, 2 by Christs example, who receiued 8 not onely the Iewes, 10 but also the Gentiles. 15 The cause why he wrote this Epistle.

Wec

2 Cor. 1

10

ff. 45. 23

pb. 1. 2. 10

1 Cor. 8

11

2 Th. 1. 15

2 Cor. 8

13.

TO THE ROMANES.

WE which are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weak, and not to please our selues.

2 Therefore let every man please his neighbour in that that is good to edification.

Psal. 69

10.

3 For Christ also would not please himselfe, but as it is written, * The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, tell on me.

4 For whatsoever things are written aforetime, are written for our learning, that we through patience, and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

1. Cor. 7.

10.

5 Now the God of patience and consolation giue you that ye * be like minded one towards another, according to Christ Iesus,

6 That ye with one minde, and with one mouth may praise God, even the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiue yee one another, as Christ also received vs to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision, for the truth of God, to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers.

Psal. 18

50.

9 And let the Gentiles praise God for his mercie, as it is written, * For this cause I will confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.

Deut. 32

43.

10 And againe he saith, * Reioice, ye Gentiles with his people.

Psa. 117.

11. 10

11 And againe, * Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and laud ye him, all people together.

12 And againe, Elias saith, * There shall bee a roote of Iesse, and he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all ioy, and peace in beleeuing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodwille, and filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren I haue somewhat boldly a'ter a fort written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance through the grace that is giuen me of God,

16 That I should bee the minister of Iesus Christ toward the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioice in Christ Iesus in those things which pertaine to God,

18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not wrought

C H A P. XVI

wrought by me, to make to Gentiles obedient in word and deed.

19 With the power of signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Hierusalem, and round about vnto Illyricum, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should haue built on another mans foundation.

21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see him, and they that heard not, shall vnderstand him. 1/a. 52. 5.

22 * Therefore also I haue bene oft let to come vnto you: Chap. 1. 11

23 But now seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, and also haue * bene desirous many yeeres agoe to come vnto you, 1. Thes. 1.

24 When I shall take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, after that I haue bene somewhat filled with your comfort. 17.

25 But now goe I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certaine distribution vnto 5 poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.

27 For it hath pleased them, and their detters are they: * for if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spiritual things, their due is also to minister vnto them in carnall things. 1. Cor. 9. 11.

28 When I haue therefore performed this, and haue sealed them this fruit, I will passe by you into Spaine.

29 And I know when I come, that I shall come to you with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Also brethren, I beseech you for our Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that ye would strue with me by prayers to God for me,

31 That I may bee delivered from them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue to doe at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints,

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the wil of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Thus the God of peace be with you all, Amen.

C H A P. XVI

1 He commendeth Phebe. 3 He smyth greeting to many, 17 and nameth to beware of them which are the causes of division.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church of Cenchrea:

2 That yee receiue her in the Lord, as it becommeth Saints, and that yee assist her in whatsoever businesse shee needeth of your aid:

TO THE ROMANES.

A.7.18.3

side for mee hath given hospitalitie vnto many, and to me also.
3 Greete * Priscilla, and Aquila my fellow helper in Christ Iesus,

4 (Which haue for my life laved downe their owne necke, Vnto whom not I onely give thanks, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise greets the Church that is in their house Salute my beloved Epeneus which is the first fruits of Achaia in Christ.

6 Greete Mary which bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cousins and fellow prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Vibanus our fellow helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Appelles approued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus *friends*.

11 Salute Herodian my kinsman, Greete them which are of the *friend* is of Narcissus which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphota, which *women* labour in the Lord, Salute the beloved Persis, which *woman*, hath laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Philegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Iulus Nereas, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with * an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 ¶ Now I beseech you brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and * auoyd them.

18 For they that are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies, and with faire speech and flattering deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue you wise, vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euill.

20 The God of peace shall tread Satan vnder you: seeke shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you.

21 * Timotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsmen, salute you.

22 I Tertius,

47.161
phil. 2.19.

CHAP. I.

22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you, Erastus the steward of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 * To him now that is of power to establish you according to my Gospel, and preaching of Iesus Christ, * by the revelation of the myserie, which was kept secret since the world began:

26 (But now is opened, and published among all nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the commandment of the everlasting God for the obedience of faith)

27 To God, *I say*, onely wile, be praise through Iesus Christ for ever, Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by
Phebe, servant of the Church, which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 10 which in effect is an exhortation,
12 hee reprehendeth the Corinthians sects and divisions, 17 and
calleth them from pride to humilitie: 20 For, overthrowing all
worldly wisdoms, 23, 25 hee advanceth onely the preaching of
the Croise.



PAUL called to be an Apostle of Iesus Christ, through the will of God, and our brother Sothanes,

2 Unto the Church of God which is at Corinthus, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus, * Saints by calling, * with all that call on the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, in every place both their Lord and ours:

3 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe for the grace of God, which is given you in Iesus Christ.

5 That in all things you are made rich in him, in all kinde of speech, and in all knowledg:

6 As the testimonie of Iesus Christ hath bene confirmed in you:

7 So that ye are not destitute of any gift: * waiting for the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.

8 * Who shall also confirme you vnto the ende, that ye may

*Eph. 3. 3.
20.
Eph. 3. 9
Col. 1. 26.
2. Tim. 1.
10. Titus
1. 2.*

*Act. 13. 9.
1. Th. 1. 4. 7.
Rom. 1. 7.
1. Cor. 1. 1.
Col. 1. 22.
1. Tim. 1. 9.
Titus 2. 3.
2. Tim. 1.
22.*

*Phil. 3. 20.
1. Th. 1. 5.
13.*

bc

I CORINTHIANS.

be blamelesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ.

1. Theſ. 5. 9 * God is faithfull, by whom yee are called vnto the fellowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.

24. 10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that yee shall speake one thing and that there be no dissensions among you: but be yee knit together in one minde, and in one iudgement.

11 For it hath bene declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the house of Clie, that there are contentions among you.

1. 1. 18. 12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am Pauls, and I am * Apollos, and I am Cephas, and I am Christs.

24. 13 Is Christ diuiced? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the Name of Paul?

1. Cor. 16. 8 14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus, and Gaius,

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized into mine owne name.

16 I baptized also the household of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whether I baptized any other.

1. Cor. 2. 13 17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel, not with * wisdom of words, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect.

2. Cor. 1. 16 18 For that preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saved, it is the * power of God.

16. 19 For it is written, * I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will cast away the vnderstanding of the prudent.

1. Cor. 29. 14 20 Where is the wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made the wisdom of this world foolishnesse?

21 For seeing the world by wisdom knewe not God in the wisdom of God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching to save them that beleeue:

1. Cor. 12. 28. 22 * Seeing also that the Iewes require a signe, and the Grecians seeke after wisdom.

23 But we preach Christ crucified: vnto the Iewes, euens a stumbling block, and vnto the Grecians, foolishnesse:

24 But vnto them which are called, both of the Iewes and Grecians, we preach Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

25 For the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men, and the weaknesse of God is stronger then men.

26 For

C H A P. II.

26 For brethren, you see your calling, how that not many wise-
men after the flesh, not many mighty, nor many noble *are chosen*.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to
confound the wise, and God hath chosen the weak things of the
world, to confound the mighty things.

28 And vile things of the world, and things which are despised,
hath God chosen, and things which are not, to bring to nought
things that are,

29 That no flesh should reioyce in his presence.

30 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto
vs wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption,

31 That, according as it is written, * Hee that reioiceth, let
him reioyce in the Lord.

*Jer. 9. 24
2 Cor. 10*

C H A P. III.

1 Hee setteth downe a *platforme* of his preaching, 4. which was
laye in *revelation* and wisdom, 7. 13 but made in respect of
the *spirituall* power and efficacy, 14 and so concludeth that
flesh and blood cannot rightly iudge thereof.

And I brethren, when I came to you, came not with * excellen-
cie of wordes, or of wisdom, shewing vnto you the testimo-
nie of God.

Cha. 1. 17

2 For I esteemed not to know any thing among you, save Ie-
sus Christ, and him crucified.

3 * And I was among you in weaknesse, and in feare, and in
much trembling.

1 Cor. 13. 1

4 Neither stood my worde and my preaching in the * intising
speech of mans wisdom, but in plaine evidence of the Spirit and
of power,

*Cha. 1. 17
2 Pet. 1. 16*

5 That your faith should not bee in the wis. dome of men, but
in the power of God.

6 And we speake wisdom among them that are perfect:
not the wisdom of this worlde, neither of the princes of this
world, which come to nought.

7 But we speake the wisdom of God in a mysterie, *even* the
hid wisdom, which God had determined before the world, vnto
our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this worlde hath knowen:
for had they knowen it, they would not haue crucified the Lord
of glory.

9 But as it is written, * The things which eye hath not scene,
neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans heart, *are*, which
God hath prepared for them that loue him,

1 Cor. 13. 1

I. CORINTHIANS.

10 But God hath reuealed *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, (saue the spirit of man, which is in him?) euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we haue receiued not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is of God, that we might know the things that are giuen to vs of God.

Chap. i. 17
2 pet. i. 16

13 Which things also wee speake, not in the * words which mans wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spirituall things with spirituall things.

14 But the naturall man perceiweth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse vnto him: neither can hee know *them*, because they are spirituallly discerned.

15 But he that is spirituall, discerneth all things: yet hee himselfe is iudged of no man.

1 Cor. ii. 15
1 Cor. ii. 11

16 * For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, that hee might instruct him? but we haue the mind of Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 He reueleth a reason why he preaches (small matters) vnto *them*.

4 He sheweth how the right to effeme of ministers: 6 The ministers affect. 10 A word forme of easyness. 16 He warneth the Corinthians that they be not an enuay to pre. plane things.

18 He teacheth the proud not to come of the flesh.

AND would not I speake vnto you, brethren, as vnto spirituall men, but as vnto carnall, *even* as vnto babes in Christ.

2 I gaue you milke to drinke, and not meate: for ye were not yet able to receiue it: neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas *there is* among you enuying, and frowning, and diuisions, are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

4 For when one sayth, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnall?

5 Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos, but the ministers by whom ye believed, and as the Lord gaue to euery man?

6 I haue planted, Apollos watered, but God gaue the increase.

7 So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth, but God that giueth the increase.

1 Cor. iii. 6
12. ca. at.
65

8 And he that planteth, and hee that watereth are one, * and euery man shall receiue his wages, according to his labour.

9 For we together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandrie, and Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God giuen to mee, as a skilfull maister

maister builder, I have laide the foundation, and another buildeth thereon: but let every man take heed how he buildeth vpon it.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that which is laid, which is Iesus Christ.

12 And if any builde on this foundation, golde, siluer, precious stones, timber, lay, or stubble,

13 Every mans worke shalbe made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be reueiled by the fire: and the fire shall trie every mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke, that hee hath built vpon, abide, he shall receiue wages.

15 If any mans worke burne, he shall lose, but he shall be saued himselfe: neuertheless yet as it were by the fire.

16 * Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

Chap. 6. 19
2 cor. 6. 15

17 If any man destroy the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: if any man among you seeme to be wise in this world let him be a foole, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, * He catcheth the wise in their owne craftinesse.

Iob 5. 13

20 * And againe, The Lord knoweth that the thoughts of the wise be vaine.

Psal. 44
11.

21 Therefore let no man reioyce in men: for all things are yours

22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they be things present, or things to come, euen all are yours,

23 And ye Christs, and Christ Gods.

C H A P. IIII.

1 *Bringin in the definition of a true Apostle, 7 how sheweth that hee sheweth rather to see an honour then a shame vnto him.*

9 *He bringeth him in prooffe, whereby it may evidently appeare,* 10 *that he neither had care of glory,* 11 *nor of his bellie.* 17 *Hee commendeth Timothee.*

L Et a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God:

2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that every man be found faithfull.

3 As touching me, I passe very little to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement, no, I iudge not mine owne sel'e.

4 For I knowe nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified.

I. CORINTHIANS.

justified: but he that judgeth me, is the Lord.

Mat. 7. 1.

5 Therefore * iudge nothing before the time, vntill the Lorde come, who will lighten things that are hid in darknesse, and make the counsels of the hearts manifest: and then shall every man haue praise of God.

6 Now these things brethren, I haue figuratively applied vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that yee might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is written, that one swell not against another for any mans cause.

7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receiued it?

8 Now ye are full: now ye are made rich: yee reigne as Kings without vs, and would to God yee did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

9 For I thinke that God hath set forth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for we are made a gazing stocke vnto the world, and to the Angels, and to men.

10 We are fooles for Christes sake, and ye are wise in Christ: we are weake, and ye are strong: yee are honourable, and wee are despised.

11 Vnto this houre we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling place,

Acts 20

34. 12 bes.

1. 9.

2. bes. 13 8.

Mat. 5. 44.

Mat. 23. 34.

Acts 7. 60.

12 * And labour, working with our owne hands: wee are reuelled, and yet we blesse: we are persecuted, and suffer it.

13 * We are euill spoken of, and we pray: wee are made as the filth of the world, the offscouring of all things, vnto this time.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved children I admonish you.

15 For though yee haue ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel:

16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloved sonne, and faithfull in the Lorde, which shall put you in remembrance of my wayes in Christ, as I teach every where in euery Church.

18 Some are puffed vp, as though I would not come vnto you.

Acts 19

21. 40.

4 15.

19 But I will come to you shortly, * if the Lord will, and will knowe, not the wordes of them which are puffed vp, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What

CHAP. V.

11 What will yee? Shall I come vnto you with a rod, or with love, and in the Spirit of meeknesse?

CHAP. V.

1 That they haue winked at him, who committed incest with his mother in law, 2. 6 he sheweth should cause them rather to be ashamed, then to reioice. 10 Such kind of wickednesse was to be punished with excommunication, 12 least ether be infected with it.

IT is heard certainly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not rather forewed, that he which had done this dedde, might be put from among you.

3 For I verely was absent in body, but present in spirit, haue determined already as though I were present, that he that hath thus done this thing,

4 When ye are gathered together, and my spirit, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that each one, / *ay*, by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your reioicing is not good: Know ye not that a little leaven leauenth the whole lump?

7 Purge out therefore the olde leaven, that yee may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened: for Christ our Pasche is sacrificed for vs.

8 Therefore let vs keepe the feast, not with olde leaven, neither in the leaven of maliciousnesse, and wickednesse: but with the unleavened bread of sinceritie and truth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should not company with fornicators,

10 And not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or with extortioners or with idolaters; for then ye must goe out of the world.

11 But now I haue writt en vnto you, that ye company not together: if any that is called a brother, be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a rayler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such one eate not.

12 For what haue I to doe, to iudge them also which are without? doe ye not iudge them that are within?

13 But God iudgeth them that are without. Put away therefore from among your selves that wicked man.

II. CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. VI.

2 He *museth* against their contentions in law matters, & where-
in they vexed one another under iudges that were infidels, to
the reproch of the Gospel, 9 and then sharply threatneth for-
nicators.

DAre any of you, having businesse as we are ther, bee iudged
vnder the vniust, and not vnder the Saints?

2 Doe ye not know, that the Saints shall iudge the world? if
the world then shall be iudged by you, are yee vnworthy to iudge
the smallest matters?

3 Know yee not that wee shall iudge the Angels? how much
more things that pertaine to this life?

4 If then ye haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life,
set vp them which are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man
among you? no not one, that can iudge betweene his brethren?

6 But a brother goeth to law with a brother, and that vnder
the infidels.

7 Now therefore there is altogether infirmitie in you, in that
ye go to law one with another: * why rather suffer ye not wrong?
why rather sustaine ye not harme?

8 * Nay, ye your selues doe wrong, and doe harme, and that
to your brethren,

9 Knowe yee not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the
kingdome of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicators, nor ido-
laters, nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor buggers,

10 Nor thennes, nor contentious, nor drunkards, nor raylers, nor
extortioners shall inherite the kingdome of God.

11 And such were * some of you: but ye are washed, but yee
are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus,
and by the Spirit of our God.

12 * All things are lawfull vnto mee: but all things are not
profitable. I may doe all things, but I will not be brought vnder
the power of any thing.

13 Meates are *ordained* for the belly, and the belly for the
meates, but God shall destroy both it, and them: Now the body is
not for fornication, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath also raised vp the Lord, and * shall raise vs
vp by his power.

15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ?
Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the mem-
bers of an harlot? God forbid.

Mat. 5. 39

Luke 6. 29

Rom. 12

19.

2 Thes. 4

6.

Titus 3. 3.

Chap. 10.

13.

Rom. 6. 3

CHAP. VII.

16 Doe yee not know, that hee which completh himselfe with an harlot, is one body? * for two, aith he, shalbe one flesh.

17 But he that is toynd vnto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication: every sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but hee that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body.

19 Know yee not, that your * body is the Temple of the holy Ghost, which is in you, whom yee haue of God? and yee are not your owne.

20 * For yee are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit: for they are Gods.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Entreating here of marriage, 4 which is a reme. it against fornication. 10 and more not be broken, 18 20 he will shew every man to his content with his tit. 25 Hee sheweth what the end of virginity should be, 35 and who want to marrie.

NOW concerning the things, wherof yee wrote vnto mee, it was good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheless to avoid fornication, let every man haue his wife, and let every woman haue her owne husband.

3 * Let the husband giue vnto the wife due beneuolence, and likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body: but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Desaule not one another, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and againe come together, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, not by commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe am: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 Therefore I saue vnto the vnmarried, and vnto the widowes, it is good for them if they abide euen as I doe.

9 But if they cannot abstaine, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burne.

10 * And vnto the married I commaund, not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband.

11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the remnant I speake, and not the Lord, If any brother haue a wife, that belongeth not, if shee will content to dwell

Gen. 2.

24. mat

19. 5.

mar. 10. 8.

ephe. 3. 31.

Chap. 3.

17. 2. cor.

6. 16.

Chap. 7.

23. 1. pet.

2. 18.

1. Pet. 3. 7.

Mat. 5.

32. 2. 19

2. mar. 10

11. 12

luk. 16. 18

I. CORINTHIANS.

with him, let him not forsake her.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, if he be content to dwell with her, let her not forsake him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified to the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified to the husband, els were your children vnclean, but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in subiection in such things: but God hath called vs in peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thine husband? Or what knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walke: & to ordaine I in all Churches,

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not gather his *uncircumcision*: is any called vncircumcised: let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

2. Tim. 6. 1

20 * Let every man abide in the same vocation wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if yet thou mayest be free, use it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord *being* a servant, is the Lords free man: likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christs servant.

Chap. 6.

20. 1. per.

1. 18, 19.

23 * Ye are bought with a price: be not the servants of man.

24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he was called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: but I give mine advise, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose then, this to be good for the present necessitie: I *mean* that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But if thou takest a wife, thou sinnest not: and if a virgine marry, she sinneth not: neuerthelesse, such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 And this I say, brethren, because the time is short, hereafter that both they which have wives, be as though they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that

C H A P. VIII.

that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this world, as though they vsed it not: for the fashion of this world goeth away.

32 And I would haue you without care. The vnmarried careth for the things of the Lord, how he may please the Lord.

33 But she that is married careth for the things of the worlde, how he may please *his* wife.

34 There is difference also betwene a virgine and a wife: the vnmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that shee may be holy both in body and spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your owne commedite, not to tangle you in a snare, but that ye follow that, which is honest, and that ye may cleaue fast vnto the Lord without separation.

36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomeely for his virgine, if she passe the flowre of *her* age, and neede so require, let him doe what he will, he sinneth not, let them be married.

37 Neuertheless, he that standeth firme in his heart, that he hath no need, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keepe his virgine, he doeth well.

38 So then hee that giueth her to mariage, doeth well, but hee that giueth her not to mariage, doeth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Law, as long as her husband *li- ueth*: but if her husband be dead, shee is at libertie to marry with whome she will, onely in the Lord.

40 But shee is more blessed, if shee so abide, in my iudgement: and I thinke that I haue also the Spirit of God.

C H A P. VIII.

1 From this place vnto the ende of the tenth Chapter, hee willesh them not to be as the Gentiles prophane & lawless. 2 Hee restraineth the abuse of Christian libertie, & sheweth that knowledge must be tempered with charitie.

AND as touching things sacrificed vnto idoles, wee knowe that wee all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth.

2 Nowe if any man thinke that hee knoweth any thing, hee knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen of him.

4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto idoles, wee knowe that an idole is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

Rom. 7.1.

1. The 4. 2.

I. CORINTHIANS.

5 For though there bee that are called gods, whether in hea-
uen, or in earth, (as there be many gods and many lords)

Chap. 12. 3
1oh. 13. 13.

6 Yet vnto vs there is but one God, *whi h* is the Father, of
whom are all things, and we in him: and * one Lord Iesus Christ,
by whom *are* all things, and we by him.

7 But euery man hath not that knowledge: for many having
conscience of the idole, vntill this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed
vnto the idole, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meat maketh vs not acceptable to God, for neither if we
eate, haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue we the lesse.

9 But take heede least by any meanes this power of yours be
an occasion of falling, to them that are weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at table
in the idol temple, shal not the conscience of him which is weake,
be boldened to eate those things which are sacrificed to idoles?

Rom. 14.
15.

11 And through thy knowledge shall the * weake brother pe-
rish, for whom Christ died.

12 Now when yee sinke so against the brethren, and wound
their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ.

Rom. 14
21.

13 * Wherefore if meate offend my brother, I wil eate no flesh
while the world standeth, that I may not offend my brother.

CHAP. IX.

1 He declareth, that from the libertie w^{ch} the Lord gave him,
15 he willingly abstained. 18. 22 least in things indifferents
he should offend any. 23 He sheweth that our life is like vnto
a race.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus
Christ our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto other, yet do beleeue I am vnto
you: for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the Lord.

3 My defence to them that examine me, is this,

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Or haue we not power to lead about a wife being a sister, as
well as the rest of the Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord,
and Cephas?

6 Or I only and Barnabas, haue not we power not to worke?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne cost? who plan-
teth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruite thereof? or who see-
deth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

1. Tim. 2: 4.
1. Tim. 5.
18.

8 Say I these things according to man? saith not the Law the
same also?

9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moses, * Thou shalt not
murther

CHAP. IX.

rousell the mouth of the ox, that treadeth out the cornes doeth God take care for oxen?

10 Eirhet sayeth hee it not altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doubt it is written, That he which eareth, should care in hope, and hee that thralleth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 * If wee haue giuen vnto you spiritall things, is it a great thing if we scape your carnall things? Rom. 15. 27.

12 If others with you be partakers of this power, are not we rather necessitate, wee haue not vied this power; but suffer all things that we should not hinder the Gospel of Christ.

13 Doe ye not know, that they which minister about the holily things eate of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar? Deu. 18. 2

14 So also hath the Lord ordeined, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel.

15 But I haue vied none of these things: neither wrote I these things, that it should be so done vnto me; for it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my reioicing vaine.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is laid vpon me, and wee is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel.

17 For if I doe it willingly, I haue a reward, but if I doe it against my will, notwithstanding the dispensation is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verely that when I preach the Gospel, I make the Gospel of Christ free, that I abuse not mine authoritie in the Gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men yet haue I made my selfe seruant vnto all men, that I might winne the more.

20 * And vnto the Iewes, I become as a Iewe, that I may winne the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Lawe, as though I were vnder the Lawe, that I might win them that are vnder the Lawe: Gal. 2. 3

21 To them that are without Lawe, as though I were without Lawe (when I am not without Lawe as pertaining to God, but am in the Lawe through Christ) that I may winne them that are without Lawe:

22 To the weake I become as weake, that I may winne the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some.

23 And this I do for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

I. CORINTHIANS.

24 Know yee not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiveth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine.

25 And every man that prooveth himselfe absteineth from all things: and they doe it to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but wee for an vncorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as uncerteinly: so fight I, not as one that beatech the aire.

27 But I beate downe my body, and bring it into subiection, lest by any meanes after that I have preached to other, I my selfe should be reproovd.

CHAP. X.

1 If God spared not the Iewes, neither wil hee spare those who are of like condition, 34 touching the outward signes of his grace. 14 That it is assured that such should be partakers of the table of death, who are partakers of the Lords supper. 34 To have consideration of our right in things indifferent.

Moreover, brethren, I would not that yee should be ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder that cloud, and all passed through that sea,

2 And were all baptized vnto Moses, in that cloude, and in that sea,

3 And did all eate the same spirituall meate.

4 And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke (for they dranke of the spirituall Rocke that followed them; and the Rocke was Christ)

5 But with many of them God was not pleased: for they were overthrowen in the wilderness.

6 Now these things are our ensamples, to the intent that wee should not lust after euill things as they also lusted.

7 Neither be yee idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, The people sate downe to eat and drinke, and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed fornication, and fell in one day thre and twentie thousand.

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted him, and were destroyed of serpents

10 Neither murmure wee as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things came vnto them for ensamples, and were written to admonish vs, vpon whome the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

13 There

Exod. 15.

21 Num.

9 18.

Exod. 14.

22.

Exod. 16.

15.

Exo. 17.

Num. 20.

10. and

31 16

Num. 26

69.

Num. 11.

4. and 26.

64. p. al.

106 14.

Exo. 5. 6.

Num. 25

5.

Num. 21.

6. psal.

106. 14.

Num. 14.

37. iudg.

8. 24.

C H A P. X.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as appertaineth to man: and God is faithfull, which will not suffer you to be tempted above that you be able, and will euen giue the issue with the temptation, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my beloved, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as vnto them which haue vnderstanding: iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, because we are all partakers of ore bread.

18 Behold Israel *which* after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing?

20 Nay, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not vnto God: and I would not that ye should haue fellowship with the devils.

21 Ye cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of the devils, Ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.

22 Doe we prouoke the Lorde to anger? are wee stronger then hee?

23 * All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not. 1 Cor. 6. 12

24 Iet no man seeke his own, but every man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is sold in the shambles, eate ye, and aske no question for conscience sake.

26 * For the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is. Psal. 24. 1.

27 If any of them which beleeeue not, call you to a feast, and if ye will goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idoles, eate it not, because of him that shewed it. and for the conscience (for the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is)

29 And the conscience I say, not thine, but of that other: for why should my libertie bee condemned of another mans conscience?

30 For if I through Gods benefit bee partaker, why am I euill spoken of for that wherefore I giue thanks?

31 * Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye Col. 3. 17.
doe,

I. CORINTHIANS.

doe, doe all to the glory of God.

52 Give none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of God:

53 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they might be saved.

CHAP. XI.

2 He blameth the Corinethians for that in their hol. assemblies, 4 men do pray, having their heads covered, 6 and women bare headed, and because their meetings tended to tumult. 21 who minoled prophane banquets with the holy Supper of the Lord, 23 which he remonstrateth to be celebrated according to Christs institution.

2. The. 9. **B**E ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ.

2 Now brethren I commend you, that yee remember all my things & keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.

Ephes 5.

3 But I will that ye knowe, that Christ is the * head of every man: and the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head.

23.

4 Every man praying or prophesying having any thing on his head, dishonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth bare headed, dishonoureth her head: for it is euen one very thing, as though she were shauen.

6 Therefore if the woman bee not covered, let her also bee shorne: and if it be shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be covered.

Gen. 1. 26
and 5. 1.

7 For a man ought not to couer his head: forasmuch as hee is the * image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

and 9. 6.

8 For the man is not of the woman but the woman of the man.

col. 3. 10.

9 * For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake.

Gen. 2. 22.

10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on her head, because of the Angels.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things are of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncovered?

14 Doth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, it is a shame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a praise vnto her: for her haire is giuen her for a covering.

16 But

CHAP. XI.

16 But if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 ¶ Now in this that I declare, I praise you not, that you come together, not with profit, but with hurt.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissensions among you: and I beleue it to be true in some part.

19 For there must bee heresies euen among you, that they which are approved among you, might be knowne.

20 When ye come together therefore in one place, this is not to eate the Lords Supper.

21 For euery man when they should eate, taketh his owne supper afore, and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 Haue ye not houses to eate and drinke in? despise yee the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? what shall I say to you: shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, to wit, that the Lord Iesus in the night that hee was betrayed, tooke bread:

24 * And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it and said, Take, eate: this is my body, which is broken for you: this doe ye in remembrance of me.

25 After the same maner also he took the cup, when hee had supped, saying, This cup is the new Testament in my blood: this doe as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye shall eate this bread, and drinke this cup, ye shew the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore whosoever shall eate this bread, and drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shalbe guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

28 * Let euery man therefore examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, because he discerneth not the Lords bodie.

30 For this cause many are weake, and sicke among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we would iudge our selues, wee should not bee iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, rary one for another.

Mat. 26.
16. mar.

14. 22.
luke 22.
19.

2. cor. 13.
5.

34 And

L CORINTHIANS.

84 And if any man be hungry, let him eat at home, that yee come not together to condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

C H A P. XII

1 To draw away the Corinthians from contention and pride, bre sheweth that spirituall giftes are therefore diversly bestowed, 7 that the same beare jointly to eche other employed, 12 we may grow up together into one body of Christ in such equall proportion and measure, 20 as the members of mans body doe.

Nowe concerning spirituall giftes, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye knowe that ye were Gentiles, and were caried away vnto the dumme idoles, as ye were led.

3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no man * speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus * execrable: also no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are diversities of giftes, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are diversities of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man, to profit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit the worde of wisdom: and to another the word of knowledge, by the same Spirit:

9 And to another is given faith by the same Spirit: and to another, the gift of healing, by the same Spirit:

10 And to another the operations of great workes: and to another, prophecie: and to another, the discerning of Spirits: and to another diversities of tongues: and to another, the interpretation of tongues.

11 * And all these things worketh one, and the selfe same Spirit, distributing to every man severally as he will.

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of the body, which is one, though they be many, yet are but one body: even so is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Iewes, or Grecians, whether we be bond, or free, and have bene all made to drinke in one Spirit.

14 For the body also is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot would say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

16 And

Mar 9:35
Chap. 8 &
Job. 13:13
Phil 2, 11

Rom. 12:3
Eph 4 7.

C H A P. XIII.

16 And if the eare would say, Because I am not the eye, I am nor of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath God disposed the members every one of them in the body, at his owne pleasure.

19 For if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But now are there many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the feete. I haue no need of you.

22 Yea, much rather those members of the body, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessarie.

23 And vpon those members of the body, which wee thinke most vnhonnest, put wee more honellie on: and our vnicomely parts haue more comelinesse on.

24 For our comely parts neede it not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath giuen the more honour to that part which lacked,

25 Lest there should be any diuision in the body: but that the members should haue the same care one for another.

26 Therefore if one member suffer, all suffer with it; if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members for your part.

28 * And God hath ordeined some in the Church: as first, Apostles, secondly Prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the giftes of healing, helpers, gouernours, diuersitie of tongues. Eph. 4. 11

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all teachers?

30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the giftes of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interpret?

31 But desire you the best giftes, and I will yet shewe you a more excellent way.

C H A P. XIII.

1 *Hee saith that there are no giftes so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if charitie be away: 4. and therefore hee directeth vs into the commendation of it.*

THough I speake with the tongues of men & Angels, and haue not loue, I am as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I had the gift of prophecie and knew all secrets and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could remooue mountaines, and had not loue, I were nothing.

3 And though I feede the poore with all my goods, and Mat. 17.
though

I CORINTHIANS.

though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Lone suffereth long : it is bountifull : loue ennieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe : it is not puffed vp :

5 It doth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things: it is not prouoked to anger : it thinketh not euill :

6 It reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the trueth :

7 It suffereth all things : it beleueth all things : it hopeth all things: it endureth all things.

8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecyings bee abolished: or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away.

9 For we know in part and we propheticke in part.

10 But when that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shalbe abolished.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a child, I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For now we see through a glasse darkely: but then *shall we see face to face*. Now I know in part: but then shall I knowe euen as I am knowne.

13 And now abideth faith, hope and loue, *euen these three*: but the chiefest of these is loue.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He commendeth the gift of prophesie: 7 and by a similitude taken out of brass, all instruments, 12 he teacheth the true vse of interpreting the Scriptures: 17 hee taketh away the abuse: 34 and forbiddeth women to speake in the Congregation.

Follow after loue, and conser spirituall gifts, and rather that yee may propheticke.

2 For hee that speaketh a *strange* tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh secret things.

3 But he that prophetickeith, speaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.

4 He that speaketh *strange* languages, edifieth himselfe: but he that prophetickeith, edifieth the Church.

5 I would that ye all spake *strange* languages, but rather that ye propheticke for greater is he that prophetickeith, then he that speaketh *strange* tongues, except hee expound it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And nowe, brethren, if I come vnto yon speaking *strange* tongues, what shall I profite you, except I speake to you, either by reuelation,

revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreover, things without life which give a sound, whether it be a pipe or an harp, except they make a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?

8 And also if the trumpet give an uncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to battel?

9 So likewise you, by the tongue, except yee utter words that have signification, how shall it be vnderstand what is spoken? for ye shall speake in the ayre.

10 There are so many kinds of voices (as it commeth to passe) in the world, and none of them is dumbe.

11 Except I know then the power of the voice, I shall bee vnto him that speaketh a barbarian, and he that speaketh, shall bee a barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen so, forasmuch as ye couet spiritual gifts, seeke that yee may excell vnto the edifying of the Church.

13 Wherefore, let him that speaketh a *strange* tongue, pray, that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in a *strange* tongue, my spirit prayeth; but mine vnderstanding is without fruit.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, but I will pray with the vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, but I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Els when thou blestest with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the roume of the vnlearned say, Amen, at thy giuing of thanks, seeing he knoweth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verely giuest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God. I speake languages more then ye all.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake five words with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then tenne thousand words in a *strange* tongue.

20 Brethren, bee not * children in vnderstanding, but as concerning maliciousnesse bee children, but in vnderstanding bee of a ripe age. Mat. 18. 4

22 In the Law it is written, * By men of other tongues, and by other languages will I speake vnto this people: yet so shall they not heare me, sayth the Lord. Isa. 28. 11

20 Wherefore *strange* tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleue, but to them that beleue not: but prophecying serueth not for them that beleue not, but for them which beleue.

23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in

I. CORINTHIANS.

one, and all speake *strange* tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned or they which beleeue not, will they not say, that ye are out of your wits?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged of all,

25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall downe on his face, and worship God, and say plainely that God is in you in deede.

26 What is to be done then brethren? when ye come together, according as euery one of you hath a Psalm, or hath doctrine, or hath a tongue, or hath reuelation, or hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake a *strange* tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, which speaketh languages, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three & let the other iudge.

30 And if any thing be reuealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as we see in all the Churches of the Saints.

1 Tim.

2. 12.

1 Cor. 3. 16.

34 * Let your women keepe silence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but they ought to bee subiect, as also * the Law saith.

35 And if they will learne any thing let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 Came the word of God out from you? either came it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge, that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandments of the Lord.

38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophesie, and forbid not to speake languages.

40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. XV.

1 The Gospel that Paul preached. 3 The death and resurrection of

C H A P. XV.

of Christ. 8 Paul saw Christ. 9 He had persecuted that Church, whereof afterward he was made a minister. 12 Christ first rose againe: and wee all shall rise by him. 26 The last enemy death. 29 To bee baptised for dead. 32 At Ephesus Paul fought with beasts. 35 How the dead are raised. 45 The first Adam. The last Adam. 47 The first and second man. 51 We shall all bee changed, we shall not all sleepe. 55 Deaths sting. 57 Victorie. 58 Constance and steadfastnesse.

Moreouer, * brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which yee haue also receiued, and where-
in yee contione,

Gal. 1. 12.

2 And whereby yee are saved, if yee keepe in memorie, after what manner I preached it vnto you, except yee haue beleueed in vaine.

3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I receiued, how that Christ died for our finnes, according to the * Scriptures,

Isa 53. 5.

4 And that he was buried, and that hee rose the third day according to the * Scriptures,

1. pet. 2. 24

5 * And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue,

John 2. 1.

6 After that, he was seene of more then five hundred brethren at once: whereof many remaine vnto this present, and some also are asleepe.

1. Cor. 15. 6.

7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all the Apostles.

8 * And last of all he was seene also of me, as of one borne out of due time.

1. Cor. 9. 5.

9 * For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not meete to be called an Apostle because I persecuted the Church of God.

Eph. 3. 8.

10 * But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which is with me.

Eph. 3. 7.

11 Wherefore, whether it were I, or they, so wee preach, and so haue yee beleueed

12 ¶ Now if it be preached, that Christ is risen from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 For if there bee no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen:

14 And if Christ bee not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15 And we are found also false witnesses of God: for wee haue testified of God, that hee hath raised vp Christ, whom he hath not raised vp, if so be the dead be not raised.

L CORINTHIANS.

16 For if the dead be not raised, then is Christ not raised.

17 And if Christ bee not raised, your faith is vaine: yee are yet in your sinnes.

18 And so they which are asleepe in Christ, are perished.

19 It in this life onely wee haue hope in Christ, wee are of all men the most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and was made the * first frutes of them that slepe.

21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all bee made alive,

23 But every man in his * owne order: the first frutes in Christ, alterward, they that are of Christ, at his comming *shall rise againe.*

24 Then *shall bee* the end when he hath deliuered vp the kingdom to God, euen the Father, when hee hath put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power.

25 For he must reigne * till hee hath put all his enemies vnder his feete.

26 The last enemy that shalbe destroyed is death.

27 * For hee hath put downe all things vnder his feete (And when hee saith that all things are subdued *to him*, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put downe all things vnder him)

28 And when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then shall the Sonne also himselfe bee subiect vnto him, that did subdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for dead?

30 Why are we also in ieopardie every houre?

31 By our reioycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die dayly.

32 If I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus after the manner of men, what aduantage hath it me, if the dead bee not raised vp? * let vs eate and drinke: for to morrow we shall die.

33 Be not decciued: euill speakings corrupt good maners.

34 Awake to *live* righteously, and sune not: for some haue not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised vp, and with what body come they forth?

36 O foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickned, except it die:

Col. 1. 12.

1. 5.

1. Thes.

4. 13.

Psa. 110.

1. 34.

heb. 1. 13.

and 10. 13.

Psal. 8. 6.

heb. 2. 8.

1. Cor. 15. 13.

CHAP. XV.

37 And that which thou lowest, thou lowest not that body that shalbe, but bare corne, as it falleth, of wheate, or of some other.

38 But God giueth it a body at his pleasure, even to every seede his owne body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beastes, and another of fishes, and another of birdes.

40 There are also heavenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory of the heavenly is one, and the glory of the earthly is another.

41 There is another glory of the Sunne, and another glory of the moone, and another glory of the starres: for one starre differeth from another starre in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. The body is sown in corruption, and is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sown in dishonour, and is raised in glory: it is sown in weaknesse, and is raised in power.

44 It is sown a naturall body, and is raised a spirituall body: there is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body.

45 As it is also written, The first man ^{Gen. 2.7.} Adam was made a living soule: and the last man Adam was made a quickning Spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward that which is spirituall.

47 The first man is of the earth, earthly: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthly, such are they that are earthly: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have borne the image of the earthly, so shall wee beare the image of the heavenly.

50 This say I, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherite the kingdome of God, neither doeth corruption inherite incorruption.

51 Behold. I shew you a secret thing, wee shall not all sleepe, but wee shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye at the last ^{1. Cor. 15.52.} trumpet: for the trumpet shall blow, and the dead shall be raised vp incorruptible and we shalbe changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortallitie

54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put on immortallitie, then shall bee brought to passe the saying that is written, ^{1. Cor. 15.54.} Death is swallowed vp into victorie. ^{1. Cor. 15.55.}

I. CORINTHIANS,

55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

56 The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of sinne is the Lawe.

1. Job. 5.

57 * But thanks bee vnto God which hath given vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, vnmoueable, abundant alwayes in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as yee know, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Hee exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem:

10 Then hee commendeth Timothee: 13 and so with a friendly exhortation, 19 and commendations, endeth the Epistle.

CONCERNING the gathering for the Saints, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, so doe yee also.

2 Every first day of the weeke, let every one of you put aside by himselfe, and lay vp as God hath prospered him, that then there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I am come, whomsoever yee shall allow by letters, them will I send to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it be meete that I goe also, they shall goe with mee.

5 Now I will come vnto you, after I haue gone thorow Macedonia (for I will passe thorow Macedonia)

6 And it may bee that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way whither soeuer I goe.

7 For I wil not see you now in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I will tarry at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuali is opened vnto mee: and there are many aduersaries.

10 ¶ Now if Timothee come, see that hee be without seme with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him, but conuey him forth in peace, that hee may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos I greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren: but his kinde was not all to come at this time: howbeit he will come when he shall haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watch yee: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, and be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Now brethren, I beseech you (yee knowe the house of Stephanas,

C H A P. I.

Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselves to minister vnto the Saints)

16 That ye be obedient vnto such, and to all that helpe with vs and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men,

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lords.

20 All the brethren greete you. Greete ye one another with an
Rom 16

• holy kisse,

21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him bee had
16. 2. cor. 13. 12. 1. pet. 5. 14

in excommunication maran atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you.

24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first Epistle to the Corinthians, written from Philip-
 pi, and sent by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus,
 and Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL to the Corinthians.

C H A P. I.

1 He beginneth with the praise of afflictions. 8 declaring what hee hath suffered in Asia, 10 and how happily God afflicted him. 17 He saith it was not wth any tightnesse, that hee came not according to his promise.



PAUL an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, by the will of God, and our brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 * Blessed be God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,
Eph. 1. 3 1. pet. 1. 3

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that wee may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction, by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth through Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation, and
saluation,

II. CORINTHIANS.

saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *is* *us* for your consolation and saluation.

7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as wee know that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For brethren, wee would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, how wee were pressed out of measure passing strength, so that wee altogether doubted euen of life.

9 Yea, wee receiued the sentence of death in our selues, because we should not trust in our selues, but in God which raiseth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, & doth deliuer vs: in whom we trust, that yet hereafter he will deliuer vs.

11 *So* that yee labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *bestowed* vpon vs for many, thanks may be given by many persons for vs.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly purenesse, *and* not in fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, wee haue had our conuersation in the world, and most of all to youwards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that ye reade, or elie that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vnto the ende.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in the day of our Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence was I minded first to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace,

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnesse? or minde I those things which I minde, according to the flesh? that with me should be Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our word toward you was not Yea, and Nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, *that is*, by me, and Sylanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was Yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glory of God through vs.

C H A P. II.

21 And it is God which established vs with you in Christ, and hath anointed vs.

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and hath given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Now, I call God for a record vnto my soule, that to spare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus.

24 Not that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but wee are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye stand.

C H A P. II.

1 He excuseth his not coming vnto them, 2 and mildly reprehendeth them: 4 hee sheweth that such is his affliction towards them, 5 that hee neuer reioyceth but when they are merie. 6 Perceiving the adulterer (whom he commanded to be deliuered vnto Satan) to repent, 7 hee requesteth that they forgive him, 8 He mentioneth his going into Macedonia.

BUt I determined thus in my selfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauinesse.

2 For if I make you sory, who is he then that should make me glad, but the same which is made sory by me?

3 And I wrote this same thing vnto you, lest when I came, I should take heauinesse of them, of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence haue I in you all, that my ioy is the ioy of you all.

4 For in great affliction, and anguish of heart I wrote vnto you with many teares: not that ye should be made sory, but that ye might perceine the loue which I haue specially vnto you.

5 And if any hath caused sorow, the same hath not mad mee sory, but partly (lest I should more charge *him*) you all.

6 It is sufficient vnto the same man, that hee was rebuked of many.

7 So that now contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive *him*, and comfort *him*, lest the same should be swallowed vp with ouermuch heauinesse.

8 Wherefore I pray you, that ye would confirme your loue towards him.

9 For this cause also did I write, that I might know the proofe of you, whether you would be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for verely if I forgane any thing, to whom I forgane it, for your sakes *for gave I* it in the sight of Christ,

11 Lest Satan should circumuent vs: for wee are not ignorant of his enterprises.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christes Gospel,

II. CORINTHIANS.

Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but tooke my leaue of them, and went away into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be vnto God which alwayes maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the fauour of his knowledge by vs in every place.

15 For we are vnto God the sweete fauour of Christ in them that are saved and in them which perish:

16 To the one we are the fauour of death vnto death, and to the other the fauour of life vnto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

Chap. 4.3

17 *For wee are not as many, which make merchandise of the word of God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God in the sight of God, speake we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 Hee desireth no other commendation, 3 then their continuing in the faith. 6 Hee is a minister, not of the letter, but of the Spirit. 8 He sheweth the difference of the Law and the Gospel, 13 that the brightness of the Law doth rather dimme the light then lighten it: 18 But the Gospel doeth make manifest Gods countenance vnto vs.

DOe we begin to praise our selues againe? or neede we as soner other Epistles of commendation vnto you, or letters of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, which is vnderstand, and read of all men,

3 In that ye are made manifest. to be the epistle of Christ, ministered by vs, and written, not with ynce, but with the Spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart,

4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues to thinke any thing, as of our selues, but our sufficiencie is of God,

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the New Testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giueth life.

7 If then the ministracion of death written with letters and ingrauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, (which glory is done away)

8 How shal not the ministracion of y Spirit be more glorious?

9 For

C H A P. IIII.

9 For if the ministration of condemnation *is* glorious, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceede in glorie.

10 For even that which was glorified, was not glorified in this point, *as it is*, as touching the exceeding glorie :

11 For it that which should bee abolished, *was* glorious, much more shall that which remaineth be glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue such trust, wee vse great boldnesse of speech.

13 * And we are not as Moyses, which put a vail vpon his face, Exod. 34.
that the children of Israel should not looke vnto the ende of that which should be abolished. 34.

14 Therefore their minds are hardened : for vntill this day remaineth the same couering vntaken away in the reading of the old Testament, which *vaine* in Christ is put away.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moyses is read, the vail is laide ouer their hearts.

16 Notwithelasse when their hearts shall be turned to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is libertie. John 4. 24.

18 But wee all behold *as* in a mirrour the glory of the Lord with open face, and are changed vnto the same image, from glory to glory, *as* by the Spirit of the Lord.

C H A P. IIIII.

1 Hee sheweth that hee hath so laboured in preaching the Gospel,

4 that hee is euen blinded of Satan, who doe not perceiue the brightness thereof, 7 that the same is varied in earthen vessels,

10 who are subiect to many necessities, 16 and therefore hee exhorteth them by his owne example to be couragious 17 and contented with their present life.

Therefore, seeing that wee haue this ministration, as wee haue received mercie, wee faint not,

2 But haue cast froin vs the clothes of shame, and walke not in craftinesse, neither handle we the word of God deceitfully : but in declaration of the trueth we approue our selues to every mans conscience in the sight of God.

3 If our Gospel be then hid, it is hid to them that are lost,

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the mindes, *that is*, of the infidels, that the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, which is the image of God, should not shine vnto them.

5 For wee preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.

6 For

II. CORINTHIANS.

Gen. 1. 3.

6 For God * that commanded the light to shine out of darkness, is he which hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glorie of God, in the face of Iesus Christ.

7 But wee haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of that power might be of God, and not of vs.

8 We are afflicted on every side, yet are we not in distresse; we are in doubt, but yet we despaire not.

9 We are persecuted, but not forsaken: cast downe, but wee perish not.

10 Every where wee beate about in our body the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life of Iesus might also bee made manifest in our bodies.

11 For we which live, are alwayes deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might bee made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, and life in you.

*Psal. 116.
10.*

13 And because we haue the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleued, and therefore haue I spoken, we also beleue, and therefore speake,

14 Knowing that he which hath raised vp the Lord Iesus, shall raise vs vp also by Iesus, and shall set vs with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that that most plenteous grace by thanksgiuing of many, may redound to the prayle of God.

16 Therefore wee faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed daily.

17 For our light affliction which is but for a moment, causeth vnto vs a faite most excellent and an eternall weight of glory:

18 Whiles we looke not on the things which are seene, but on the things which are not seene: for the things which are seene, are temporall; but the things which are not seene, are eternall,

C H A P. V.

1 Hee continueth in the same argument, 6 touching the certaine hope of saluation 8 through faith, 12 not to praise himselfe, 14 seeing hee hath God and his Church before his eyes, 17 and esteemeth not in himselfe newnesse of life in Christ.

FOr we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle be destroyed we haue a building euen of God, that is, an house not made with hands, but eternall in the heauens.

*Zeuel. 1. 6
5.*

2 For therefore we sigh, desiring to be clothed with our house, which is from heauen:

3 Because that if we be clothed, we shall not be found * naked.

C H A P. V.

4 For in deede we that are in this tabernacle, sigh and are burdened, because we would not be vnclouthed, but would bee clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be swallowed vp of life,

5 And he that hath created vs for this thing, is God, who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alway bold, though we know that whiles we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, and not by sight.)

8 Neuerthelisse, we are bold, and loue rather to remooue out of the body, and to dwell with the Lord.

9 Wherefore also we couet, that both dwelling at home, and remoouing from home, we may be acceptable to him.

10 * For wee must all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ, that euesy man may receiue the things which are done in his body, according to *he* hath done, whether *it be* good or euill. Rom. 14.
10.

11 Knowing therefore that terrour of the Lord, wee perswade men, and we are made manifest vnto God, and trust also that wee are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we praise not our selues againe vnto you, but giue yon an occasion to reioyce of vs, that yee may haue *an* *answere* against them, which reioyce in the face, and not in the heart.

13 For whether wee be out of our wit, *wee are it* to God, or whether we be in our right minde *we are it* vnto you.

14 For that loue of Christ constraineth vs,

15 Because we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all, then were all dead and he died for all, that they which liue, should not henceforth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh, yea though we had knowen Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *let him be* a new creature.

* Oldethings are passed away: behold all things are become new. 1/a. 43 19

18 And all things *are* of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto himselfe by Iesus Christ, and hath giuen vnto vs the ministerie of reconciliation. 1/a. 21. 5.

19 For God was in Christ, and reconciled the world to himselfe, not imputing their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed to vs the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then are we ambassadors for Christ: as though God did beseech *you* through vs, we pray you in Christ stead, that ye be reconciled to God.

II. CORINTHIANS.

31 For hee hath made him *to be sinne* for vs, which knewe no sinne, that we should be made the righteouinesse of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 He exhorteth them to leade their liues as it becommeth Christians, 5 neither to bee dismayde in tribulacions, 9 not puffed up with glory, 14 to auoide all vnclennesse, 16 considering that they are the temples of the liuing God.

SO we therefore as workers together beseech you, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

Isa. 45. 8

2 For he saith, * I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I inccoured thee: behold now the accepted time, behold now the day of saluation.

3 We giue no occasion of offence in any thing, that our ministerie should not be reprehended.

1. Cor. 4. 1

4 But in all things we appoyne our selues as the ministers of God in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in prisons, in tumults, in labours,

6 By watchings, by fastings, by puritie, by knowledge, by long sufferings, by kindnesse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfaigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteounesse on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour, and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers, and yet true:

9 As vnknownen, and yet knownen, as dying, and behold, we liue: as chastened, and yet not killed:

10 As sorrowing, and yet alwayes reioycing: as poore, and yet make many rich: as hauing nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our heart is made large.

12 Yee are not kept strait in vs, but ye are kept strait in your owne bowels.

13 Now for the same recompence, I speake as to my children, Be you also enlarged.

Eccle. 13.

18.

14 Bee not vnequally yoked with the infidels: for what fellowship hath righteounesse with vnrigheteounesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath the beleeuer with the infidel?

1. Cor. 3.

26 and 6.

19.

Leuit. 26.

22.

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idols?

* for ye are the Temple of the liuing God: as God hath said, * I will dwell among them, and walke there; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17. * Where.

C H A P. VII.

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and separate your selues, sayth the Lord, and touch none vncleane thing, and I will receiue you. 72. 52. 11.

18 * And I will bee a Father vnto you, and yee shall bee my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. Ier. 32. 1.

C H A P. VII.

1 *Left by our much urging shew hee should dismay their tender minde, 2 hee prooueth that all that he sayd, 4 proceeded of the great good will he bare vnto them: 8 And therefore they should not be offended, that he made them ioynt, 10 and brought them to repentance not to be reprinted of.*

Seeing then wee haue these promises, dearly beloved, let vs scienie our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, and finish our sanctification in the care of God.

2 Receiue vs t we haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake it not to your condemnation: for I haue sayd before, that ye are in our hearts to die and liue together.

4 I vse great boldnesse of speech toward you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, and am exceeding ioyous in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no sell, but we were troubled on euery side, fightings without, and errours within.

6 But God, that comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at the coming of Titus:

7 And not by his coming onely, but also by the consolation wherewith he was comforted of you, when he tolde vs your great desire, your mourning, your seruent mind to me ward, so that I reioiced much more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the same Epistle made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 I now reioice, not that yee were sorry, but that ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorowed godly, so that in nothing yee were hurt by vs.

10 For godly sorow causeth repentance vnto saluation, not to be repented of: but the worldly sorow causeth death.

11 For behold, this thing that ye haue been godly sorry, what great care it hath wrought in you: yea, what clearing of your selues: yea, what indignation: yea, what feare: yea, how great desire: yea, what a zeale: yea, what reuenge: in all things ye haue shewed your
your

II. CORINTHIANS.

your felues, that ye are pure in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, neither for his cause that had the iniury, but that our care toward you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted, because ye were comforted: but rather we reioyced much more for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if that I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue not been ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you all things in truth, even so our boasting vnto Titus was true.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, when he remembereth the obedience of you all, and howe with leare and trenbling ye received him.

16 I reioice therefore that I may put my confidence in you in all things,

C H A P. VIII.

3 He exhorteth them, by the example of the Macedonians, 9 and also enen of Christ himselfe, 14 so be liberal towards the Saints: 16 For which purpose, he sheweth that Titus 18 and another brother came vnto them.

WE doe you also to wit, brethren, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia,

2 Because in great triall of affliction their ioy abounded, and their most extreme paueritie abounded vnto their rich liberalitie.

3 For to their power (I beate record) yea, and beyond their power they were willing,

4 And prayed vs with great instances that we would receive the grace and fellowship of the ministring which is toward the Saints,

5 And thus they did, not as we looked for: but gaue their own felues first to the Lord, & after vnto vs by the will of God,

6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begonne, so hee would also accomplish the same grace among you also.

7 Therefore as yee abound in every thing, in faith, and worde, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue toward vs, *even so* see that ye abound in this grace also.

8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the diligence of others: therefore proue I the naturalnesse of your loue.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that he being rich, for your sakes became poore, that ye through his paueritie might be made rich.

10 And I shewe my mind herein: for this is expedient for you, which

CHAP. IX.

which haue begun not to doe onely, but also to will, a yeere agoe.
 11 Now therefore performe to doe it also, that as *there was* a readinesse to will, euen so yee may performe it of that which yee haue.

12 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 Neither *is it* that other men should be eased, and you grieved: but vpon like *com*on, at this time your abundance *suppl*eth their lacke:

14 That also their abundance may be for your lacke, that there may be equalitie:

15 As it is written, *He that *gathered* much, had nothing ouer, *Exod. 26*
 and he that *gathered* little, had not the lesse. 18.

16 And thanks be vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you,

17 Because he accepted the exhortation, yea, hee was so carefull that of his owne accord he went vnto you.

18 And we haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise is in the Gospel throughout all the Churches,

19 (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to be a fellow in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glory of the same Lorde, and *declaration* of your prompt mind)

20 Auoiding this, that no man should blame vs in this abundance that is ministred by vs.

21 *Prouiding for honest things, not onely before the Lorde, *Rom. 2 a*
 but also before men. 7.

22 And we haue sent with them our brother, whome wee haue oft times proued to be diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, for the great confidence, which *I haue* in you.

23 Whether any doe enquire of Titus, he is my fellow and helper to you ward: or of our brethren, they are messengers of the Churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shewe toward them, and before the Church the prooue of your loue, and of the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Why*, albeit he thinke well of their readyness, 3 yet earnestly exhorteth them, 4 he yeldeth a reason: 6 He compareth a man to seedesowing, 10 which God doeth repay with great gaines.

For as touching the ministring to the Saints it is superfluous for me to write vnto you.

2 For I know your readinesse of minde, *whereof I boast myselfe
 Z. tell

II. CORINTHIANS.

selfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, *and say,* that Achaia was prepared a yeere agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked many.

3 Now haue I sent the brethren, least our reioicing over you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that ye (as I haue said) be ready.

4 Least if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you vnprepared, we (that we may not say, you) should be ashamed in this my constant boasting.

5 Wherefore I thought it necessarie to exhort the brethren to come before vnto you, and to finish your beneuolence appointed afore, that it might be ready, *and come* as of beneuolence, and not as of nigardlinesse.

6 This yet remember, that hee which soweth sparingly, shall reape also sparingly, and hee that soweth liberally, shall reape also liberally.

2 Cor. 12.8

7 As every man wisheth in his heart, *so let him giue* not *grudgingly, or of necessitie: *for God loveth a cheerefull giuer.

Ac. 11.5.

10.

8 And God is able to make all grace to abound toward you, that ye alwayes hauing all sufficiency in all things, may abound in euery good worke,

Psal. 112.

9.

9 (* As it is written, He hath sparfed abroad and hath giuen to the poore: his beneuolence remaineth for ever.

10 Also he that findeth seed to the sower will minister likewise bread for food, and multiply your seede, and increase the fruits of your beneuolence)

11 That on all parts ye may be made rich w^to all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thanksgiuing vnto God.

12 For the ministration of this seruice not onely supplieth the necessitie of the Saints, but also abundantly caueth many to giue thanks to God,

13 (Which by the experiment of this ministration praise God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men)

14 And in their prayer for you, to long after you greatly, for the abundant grace of God in you,

15 Thanks therefore be vnto God for his vnspokeable gift.

C H A P. X.

Hee sheweth with what confidence, 4 with what weapons, 6 and with what reuenge he is armed, against the caualations of the wicked, 7 and that, when hee is present, his deuides haue no lesse power, 11 then his words haue force, when he is absent.

NOW I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenesse, and gentlenesse of Christ, which when I am present among you, *am* base

C H A P. X.

bale, but am bold toward you being absent:

2 And *this* I require you, that I neede not to be bold when I am present, with that same confidence, wherewith I thinke to be bold against some, which esteeme vs as though wee walked according to the flesh.

3 Neuerthelesse, though we walke in the flesh, yet we doe not warre after the flesh,

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mightie through God, to cast downe holds)

5 Casting downe the imaginations, and euery high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie every thought to the obedience of Christ,

6 And hauing ready the vengeance against all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Looke ye on things after the appearance? If any man trust in himselfe that he is Christs, let him consider this againe of himselfe, that as he is Christs, even so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction, I should haue no shame.

9 *This* *is* that I may not seeme as *it were* to feare you with letters:

10 For the letters, saith he, are sore and strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speech is of no value.

11 Let such one thinke this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be* also in deede, when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selues of the number, or to compare our selues to them, which praise themselues: but they vnderstand not that they measure themselues with themselues, and compare themselues with themselues.

13 But we will not reioyce of things, which are not within *our* measure, * but according to the measure of the line, whereof God *Ephe* 4.7. hath distributed vnto vs a measure to attaine euen vnto you.

14 For we stretch not our selues beyond *our* measure as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you also haue we come in *preaching* the Gospel of Christ,

15 Not boasting of things which are without *our* measure: *that is*, of other mens labours: and we hope, when your faith shall increase, to be magnified by you, according to our line abundantly.

16 And to preach the Gospel in those *regions* which are beyond

II. CORINTHIAN S.

beyond you : not to reioyce in another mans line , *that is* , in the things that are prepared already.

Jerr. 9. 24

17 * But let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord.

1. cor. 1. 13

18 For he that prayseth himselfe, is not allowed, but he whom the Lord praieth.

C H A P. X I.

2 He testifieth, that for the great loues sake he beareth to the Corinthians, he is compelled 5 to utter his owne praises : 9 and that he bestowed his labour on them without any reward, 13 that the false apostles should not surpasse him in anything, 22 whom he farre excelled in those things which are praise worthy in deed.

Would to God ye could suffer a little my foolishnesse, and in dede, ye suffer me.

2 For I am ielous ouer you, with godly ielousie : for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you as a pure virgine to Christ.

Gm 3. 4.

3 But I feare least as the * serpent beguiled Eue through his subtiltie, so your minds should be corrupt from the simplicitie that is in Christ.

4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Iesus whom we haue not preached : or if ye receiue another spirit whom ye haue not receiued : either another Gospel which yee haue not receiued, ye might well haue suffered him.

5 Verely I suppose that I was not inferiour to the very chiefe Apostles.

6 And though I be rude in speaking, yet I am not so in knowledge, but among you we haue bene made manifest to the vtmost in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence, because I abased my selfe, that ye might be exalted, and because I preached vnto you the Gospel of God freely ?

8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages of them to doe you seruice.

*Chap. 12.
13.*

9 And when I was present with you, and had neede, * I was not sloathfull to the hinderance of any man : for that which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied, and in all things I kept and will keepe my selfe, that I should not be grieuous to you.

10 The trueth of Christ is in me, that this reioycing shall not be shut vp against me in the regions of Achaia :

11 Wherefore? because I loue you not ? God knoweth.

12 But what I do; that will I do : that I may cut away occasion from

CHAP. XI.

from them which vsue occasion, that they might bee found like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce.

13 For such false apostles are deceitful workers, and transforme themselves into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no maruaile: for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his ministers transforme themselves, as though *they were* the ministers of righteousness, whose ende shall be according to their workes.

16 I say againe, let no man thinke, that I am foolish, or els take me euen as a foole, that I also may boast my selfe a little.

17 That I speake, I speake it not after the Lord: but *as it were* foolishly, in this *my* great boasting.

18 Seeing that many reioyce after the flesh, I will reioyce also.

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, because that ye are wise.

20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take *your goods*, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning the reproch: as though that we had bene weake: but wherein any man is bold (I speake foolishly) I am bold also.

22 They are Hebrewes, * so am I: they are Israelites, so am I: *Phil. 3. 5.* they are the seede of Abraham, so am I:

23 They are the ministers of Christ (I speake as a foole) I am more: in labours more abundant: in stripes above measure: in prison more plentifully: in death oft.

24 Of the Iewes five times receined I foure *stripes* saue one.

25 I was thrise * beaten with rods: I was * once stoned: I suffe- *Actes 16* red thrise * shipwracke: night and day I am in the deep sea. *23.*

26 In iourneying I was often in perils of waters, in perils of *Actes 14* robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gen- *19.* tiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in wilderness, in perils in the *Actes 27.* sea, in perils among false brethren, *14.*

27 In wearinesse, and painefulnesse, in watching often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednesse.

28 Beside the things which are outward, I am combed daily, *and haue* the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needs reioyce, I will reioyce of mine infirmities.

31 The God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not.

II. CORINTHIANS,

Al 9.24

32 In * Damascus the gouernour of the people vnder King Aretas, layd watch in the citie of the Damascenes, and would haue caught me.

33 But at a windowe was I let downe in a basket through the wall, and escaped his hands.

C H A P. XII.

1 He doeth euen vntill he make rebearfall 3 of the beautifull vision, 4 that were reuelled vnto him: 6 for which though he might in deede glory, yet he will not, 10 being priue of his owne infirmities: 11 but they arise him to this kind of foile, 20 so that they giue eare to certaine vniuersal glorious persons, who drawe them from Christ.

IT is not expedient for me no doubt to reioyce: for I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I know a man in Christ about foureteene yeeres agoe, (whether he were in the bodie, I cannot tell, or out of the body I cannot tell; God knoweth) which was taken vp into the third heauen.

3 And I know such a man (whether in the body, er out of the body, I cannot tell; God knoweth)

4 How that hee was taken vp into paradise, and heard wordes which cannot be spoken, which are not possible for man to utter.

5 Of such a man will I reioyce: of my selfe will I not reioyce, except it be of mine infirmities

6 For though I would reioyce I should not be a foole, for I will say the trueth: but I restraife, least any man should thinke of me above that he seeth in me, or that he heareth of me.

7 And least I should be exalted out of measure through the abundance of reuelations, there was giuen vnto me a pricke in the flesh, t^e messenger of Satan to buffet me, because I should not be exalted out of measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord I thirst, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weakenesse. Very gladly therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christs sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I was a foole to boast my selfe: ye haue compelled mee, or
lought

C H A P. XIII.

I ought to haue bene commended of you: for in nothing was I inferiour vnto the very chiefe Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 The signes of an Apostle were wrought among you with all patience, with signes and wonders, and great workes.

13 For what is it, wherein ye were inferiours vnto other Churches, *except that I haue not bene slothfull to your hinderance? for-Chap. 11.9give me this wrong.

14 Beholde, the third time I am readie to come vnto you, and yet will I not be slothfull to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the fathers, but the fathers for the children.

15 And I will most gladly bestow, and will bee bestowed for your soules: though the more I loue you, the lesse I am loved.

16 But bee it that I charged you not: yet forasmuch as I was craftie I tooke you with guile,

17 Did I pill you by any of them whom I sent vnto you?

18 I haue desired Titus, and with him I haue sent a brother: did Titus pill you of any thing? walked wee not in the selfe same spitt? walked wee not in the same steppes?

19 Again, thinke ye that we excuse our selues vnto you? wee speake before God in Christ. But we doe all things dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I feare, least when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would: and that I shal be found vnto you such as ye would not, and least *there be* thine, enuie, wrath, contentions, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, and discord.

21 *I feare* least when I come againe, my God abase me among you, and I shall bewaile many of them which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanesse, and fornication, and wantonnesse, which they haue committed.

C H A P. XIII.

1 *Cometh the third time.* 2 *he denounceth the sharper vengeance toward them.* 3 *who haue a perfect triall of the power of Christ in his apostleships.* 4 *As teacheth his prayer for their repentance.* 5 *and wisheth them prosperitie.*

Let this be the third time that I come vnto you, *In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word stand.

2 I told you before, and tell you before: as though I had bene present the second time, so write I now being absent to them, which heretofore haue sinned, and to all others, that if I come againe, I will not spare,

3 Seeing that yee seeke experience of Christ, that speaketh in

Deut. 19.
15. Mat.
18. 16.
John 8. 17.
Heb. 10. 28

TO THE GALATIANS.

me, which toward you is not weake, but is mightie in you.

4 For though he was crucified concerning his infirmities, yet liueth he through the power of God. And we no doubt are weake in him, but we shall liue with him, through the power of God toward you.

1. Cor. 11
28.

5 * Prove your selues whether yee are in the faith: examine your selues: know ye not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray vnto God that ye doe none euill, nor that we should seeme approued, but that ye should doe that which is honest: though we be as reprobates.

8 For we cannot doe any thing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weake, and that ye are strong: this also we wish for, *even* your perfection.

10 Therefore write I these things being absent, least when I am present, I should vse shapenesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally brethren, fare ye well: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one mind: liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace shall be with you.

1. Cor. 16
20.

12 Greete one another with an * holy kisse. All the Saints salute you.

13 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all, Amen.

¶ The second Epistle to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a citie in Macedonia, and sent by Titus and Lucas.

THE EPISTLE OF THE APO- STLE Paul to the Galatians.

CHAP. I.

1 Strabo after the salutation, 6 Hee reprehendeth the Galatians for renouling 9 from his Gospell, 15 which he received from God 17 before he had communicated with any of the Apostles.

Thus 1. 3.



AVL an Apostle (not of men, neither by man, * but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead)

2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 GRACE

C H A P. I.

3 Grace bee with you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ,

4 Which gaue him selfe for our sinnes, that hee might deliuer vs * from this present euill world, according to the will of God euen our Father, Luk. 1.74

5 To whom be glorie for ever and ever, Amen.

6 I marvaile that ye are so soone remoned away vnto another Gospel from him that had called you in the grace of Christ,

7 Which is not another Gospel, saue that there be some which trouble you and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which wee haue preached vnto you, let him be accused.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach vnto you other wise, then that yee haue receiued, let him bee accused.

10 For now preach I mans I. *flrime*, or Gods? or goe I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ.

11 * Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, was not after man. 1. Cor. 15

12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For yee haue heard of my conuersation in time past, in the Iewish religion, how that * I persecuted the Church of God extremely, and wasted it, Acts 9. 1

14 And profited in the Iewish religion aboue many of my companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God (which had separated mee from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace)

16 To reuile his sonne in me, that I should preach him * among the Gentils, immediatly I communicated not with flesh and blood: Ephe. 3. 8

17 Neither came I againe to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe into Damascus.

18 Then after three yeeres I came againe to Hierusalem, to visite Peter, and abode with him fiftene dayes.

19 And none other of the Apostles saw I, saue Iames the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, behold, I write before

TO THE GALATIANS.

before God, that I be not.

21 After that, I went into the coasts of Syria, and Cilicia: for I was unknowne by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ.

22 But they had heard onely *from far*, He which persecuted vs in time past, now preacheth the faith which before he destroyed.

23 And they glorified God for me.

C H A P. II.

1 *That the Apostles did nothing disagree from the Gospel, 2 hee declareth by the ex- p- e of Titus being uncircumcised, 11 and also b, his a- nouncing the same against Peters assimulation: 17 And so hee passeth to the banding of our free iustification by Christ, &c.*

Then fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Hierusalem, with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus also.

2 And I went vp by revelation, and declared vnto them that Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but particularly to them that were the chiefe, least by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine:

3 But neither yet Titus which was with me, though hee were a Circian, was compelled to be circumcised,

4 To wit, for the sake brethren which were craftily sent in, and seet in priuily to spie out our libertie which we haue in Christ lesse, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whome wee gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you.

6 But by them which seemed to bee great, I was not taught, (whatsoever they were in time past), I am nothing the better: & God accepteth no mans person) for they that are the chiefe, did add nothing to me *above that I had*.

7 But contrariwise, when they sawe that the Gospel ouer the vncircumcision was committed vnto mee, as *the Gospel* ouer the Circumcision, was vnto Peter:

8 (For he that was mightie by Peter in the Apostleship ouer the Circumcision, was also mightie by me toward the Gentiles)

9 And when James, and Cephas, and Iohn, knewe of the grace that was given vnto mee, which are counted to bee pillars, they gaue to mee and to Barnabas the right handes of fellowship, that wee should preach vnto the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumcision.

10 *Warning onely that wee should remember the poore, which thing also I was diligent to doe,*

*Deu. 10.
17. 2. chro.
19. 7.
1. ch. 34. 10.
act. 10. 34.
epht. 6. 9.
roma 2. 11.
col. 3. 25.
1. pet. 1. 17*

C H A P. III.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstood him to his face: for he was to be condemned.

12 For before that certaine came from Iames, hee ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision,

13 And the other Iewes played the hypocrites likewise with him, inasmuch that Barnabas was ledde away with them by that their hypocrisie

14 But when I sawe that they went not the right way to the trueth of the Gospel, I sayd vnto Peter before all men, If thou, being a Iewe, liuist as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes?

15 We which are Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we, if we haue belieued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ and not by the workes of the Law, because that by the workes of the Law no flesh shall be iustified.

17 *If then while we seeke to bee made righteous by Christ, we our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build againe the things that I haue destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser.

19 For I through the Lawe am dead to the Lawe, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, yet not I any more, but Christ liueth in me: and in that that I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me.

21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousness be by the Law, then Christ died without a cause.

C H A P. III.

1 He rebuketh them for suffering themselues to be drawn from the grace of free iustification through Christ, most liuely set out vnto them. 6 Hee bringeth in Ananias example, to declaring the effect. 21 and causes of the giuing of the Law.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that yee should not obey the trueth, to whome Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, and among you crucified?

2 This onely would I learne of you, Received yee the Spirit by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith preached?

TO THE GALATIANS.

3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye have begun in the Spirit, ye would now be made perfect by the flesh?

4 Have ye suffered so many things in vaine? if so be it be even in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministrerh to you the Spirit and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* through the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith, *preached?*

Gen. 15.6

6 *Yea rather* as Abraham beleued God, and it was * imputed to him for righteousnesse.

Rom. 4.5.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

1 Jan. 2.25.

8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would iustifie the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham, *saying,* * In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed.

Gen. 12.3

Acts 3.25.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

Deut. 27.

26.

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Law, are vnder the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is every man that continueth not in all things, which are written in the booke of the Law, to doe them.

Itaba. 2.4

Rom. 1.17.

Gal. 10.28

Leu. 18.5

Deut. 11.

23.

11 And that no man is iustified by the Law in the sight of God, it is euident: * for the iust shall live by faith.

12 And the Law is not of faith: but * the man that shall do those things, shall live in them.

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Law, made a curse for vs (for it is written, * Cursed is every one that hangeth on tre:)

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus, that we might receiue the promise of the spirit through faith.

Heb 9.17.

15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: * Though it be but a mans covenant, when it is confirmed, yet no man doeth abrogate it, or addeth any thing thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He saith not, And to the seedes, as *speaking* of many: but, And to thy seede, as of one, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the covenant that was confirmed afore of God in respect of Christ, the Law which was foure hundredth and thirty yeeres after, cannot disanul that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the Law, it is no more by the promise, but God gaue it freely vnto Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore

C H A P. I I I I.

19 Wherefore then *serueth* the Law? it was added because of the transgressions, till the seed came vnto the which the promise was made: and it was ordeined by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not a *Mediatour* of one: but God is one.

21 *Is* the Law then against the promises of God? God forbids: for if there had bene a Law giuen which could haue giuen life, surely righteousness should haue bene by the Law.

22 But the Scripture hath * concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ should bee giuen to them that beleue. Rom. 3. 9.

23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the Law, *as vnder* a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, which should afterward be reucaled.

24 Wherefore the Law was our schoolemaster *to bring vs* to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a schoolemaster.

26 For ye are all the sonnes of God by faith in Christ Iesus:

27 For all yee that are baptized into Christ, haue put on Christ.

28 There is neither Iewe nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seede, and heires by promise.

C H A P. I I I I.

1 *Bring deliuered from the bondage of the Law, 4 by Christs coming, who is the end thereof, 9 it is very absurd to slide backe to beggerly ceremonies: 13 He calleth them againe therefore to the pursue of the doctrine of the Gospell, 21 confirming his discourse with a fine allegorie.*

Then I say, that the heire, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all,

2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours, vntill the time appointed of the father.

3 Euen so, we when we were children, were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the world.

4 But when the fulnesse of time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, and made vnder the Law,

5 That he might redeeme them which were vnder the Law, that

TO THE GALATIANS.

Rom. 8 15

that we * might receiue the adoption of the sonnes.

6 And because ye are sennes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, which crieth, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: now if thou be a sonne, thou art also the heire of God through Christ.

8 But euen then, when ye knew not God, ye did seruice vnto them, which by nature are not gods:

9 But now seeing ye know God, yea, rather are known of God, howe turne yee againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments, whereunto as from the beginning, ye will be in bondage againe?

10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

11 I am in feare of you, least I haue bestowed on you labour in vaine.

12 Be ye as I: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beseech you: ye haue not hurt me at all.

13 And ye know, how through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And the triall of me which was in my flesh, ye despised not, neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an Angel of God, yea as Christ Iesus.

15 What was then your felicitie? for I heare you record, that if it had bene possible, ye would haue plucked out your own eyes, and haue giuen them vnto me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They are ielous ouer you and misse yea, they would exclude you, that ye should altogether loue them.

18 But it is a good thing to loue earnestly alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you,

19 My little children, of whom I trauaile in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you,

20 And I would I were with you now, that I might change my voice: for I am in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, yee that will be vnder the Law, doe ye not heare the Law?

Gen. 16.

15.

Gen. 21.1

22 For it is written that Abraham had two sonnes, * one by a seruant, and * one by free woman.

23 But he which was of the seruant, was borne after the flesh, and he which was of the free woman, was borne by promise.

24 By the which things another thing is meant: for these two are two Testaments, the one which is Agar of mount Sinai

C H A P. V.

which pendereth vnto bondage.

25 (For Agar or Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it answe-
reth to Hierusalem which now is) and thee is in bondage with her
children.

26 But Ierusalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother
of vs all.

27 For it is written, * Reioyce thou barren that bearest no child- Jsa 54.1
dren, breake forth, and cry, thou that trauailest not: for the desolate
hath many more children then she which hath an husband.

28 * Therefore brethren, we are after the manner of Isaac, chil- Rom. 8.9
dren of the promise.

29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him
that was borne after the spirit, even so it is now.

30 But what sayth the Scripture? * Put out the seruant and her Gen. 21
sonne: for the sonne of the seruant shall not bee heire with the 10.
sonne of the free woman.

31 Then brethren, wee are not children of the seruant, but of
the free woman.

C H A P. V.

1 *Having declared that wee came of the free woman, her freewill
the price of that freewill, 13 and how we shuld use the same,
16 that we may obey the spirit, 19 and resist the flesh.*

Stand still therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made
vs free, and bee not intangled againe with the yoke of bon-
dage.

2 * Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ Gal. 5.2
shall profite you nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to euery man, which is circumcised, that
he is bound to keepe the whole Law.

4 Ye are * abolished from Christ: whosoever are iustified by 1. Cor. 1
the Law, ye are fallen from grace. 17.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness
through faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision auaieth any thing,
neither uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did runne well: who did let you, that yee did not obey
the truth?

8 It is not the perswasion of him that calleth you.

9 * A little leauen doeth leauen the whole lump.

1. Cor. 5. 6.

10 I have trust in you through the Lord, that yee will be none
otherwise minded: but hee that troubleth you, shall beare his con-
demnation whosoever he be.

11 And

TO THE GALATIANS.

11 And brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of the crosse abolished.

12 Would to God they were euen cut off, which doe disquiet you.

13 For brethren, yee haue bene called vnto libertie: onely vnto our libertie as an occasion vnto the flesh, but by loue serue one another.

14 For all the Law is fulfilled in one word, which is this, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed lest ye be consumed one of another.

16 Then I say, *Walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lustes of the flesh.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary one to another, so that ye cannot doe the same things that ye would.

18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the Law.

19 Moreover the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are adulterie, fornication, vncleannesse, wantonnesse,

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate, emulations, wiath, contentions, seditions, heresies,

21 Enuie, murders, drunkennesse, gluttonie, and such like, whereof I tell you before, as I also haue told you before, that they which doe such things, shall not inherite the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruite of the Spirit is loue, ioy, peace, long suffering, gentlenes, goodnes, faith,

23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no Law.

24 For they that are Christes, haue crucified the flesh with the affections and the lustes.

25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit.

26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

C H A P. VI.

2 Now he entreateth particularly of charitie toward such as offend, 6 toward the ministers of the word, 19 and those that are of the household of faith: Not like vnto such who haue a counterfeite zeale of the Lawe, 13 glorying in the mangining of the flesh, 14 not in the crosse of Christ.

Brethren, if a man be suddenly taken in any offence, ye which are spirituall, restore such one with the spirit of meekenesse, considering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted.

CHAP. VI.

2 Beare yee one anothers burden, and so fulfill the Lawe of Christ.

3 For if any man seeme to himselfe, that he is somewhat, when he is nothing, he deceiueth himselfe in his imagination.

4 But let every man proue his owne worke: and then shal he haue reioicing in himselfe only, and not in another.

5 * For every man shall beare his owne burden.

1. Cor. 3. 8

6 Let him that is taught in the worde, make him that hath taught him partaker of all *his* * goods.

2. Cor. 9. 7

7 Bee not deceived: God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life everlasting.

9 * Let vs not therefore bee weary of well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.

2. Thes. 3. 3.

10 While wee haue therefore time, let vs doe good vnto all men, but specially vnto them, which are of the houlholde of faith.

11 ¶ Yee see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised, onely because they would not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For they themselues which are circumcised, keepe not the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioice in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should reioice, but in the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified vnto mee, and I vnto the world.

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaieth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace shall be vpon them, and mercie, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man put mee to businesse: for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ bee with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL

to the Ephesians.

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 4 he entreateth of the free election of God
5 and adoption. 7. 13 from whence mans salvation floweth, as
from the true and naturall fountaine: and because so high a my-
stery cannot be understood, 6 he prayeth that the said 20 know-
ledge of Christ may by God be reuealed vnto the Ephesians.

1. Cor. 1. 2.



Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God,
to the * Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the
faithfull in Christ Iesus:

1. Cor. 1. 3

2. Pet. 1. 3

2 Grace be with you, and peace from God our
Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 * Blessed be God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
which hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessing in heavenly things
in Christ,

4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the
world, that we should bee holy, and without blame before him
in loue.

5 Who hath predestinate vs, to bee adopted through Iesus
Christ in himselfe according to the good pleasure of his wil,

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherewith he hath
made vs freely accepted in his beloved,

7 By whom we haue redemption through his blood, euen the
forgiuenesse of finnes according to his rich grace:

8 Whereby hee hath been abundant toward vs in all wise-
dome and vnderstanding,

9 And hath opened vnto vs the mystery of his wil according
to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of the times, hee
might gather together in one all things, both which are in hea-
uen, and which are in earth, euen in Christ:

11 In whom also we are chosen when we were predestinate ac-
cording to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the
counsell of his owne will,

12 That we, which first trusted in Christ, should be vnto the
praise of his glory:

13 In whom also ye haue trusted, after that yee heard the word
of truth, euen the Gospel of your salvation, wherein also after that
youe cleereyed, yewere sealed with the holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the redemption
of that libertie purchased vnto the praise of his glory.

C H A P. II.

15 Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in the Lord Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints,

16 I cease not to giue thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ, the father of glory, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisdom, and reuelation through the knowledging of him,

18 That at the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lightened, that yee may know what the hope is of his calling, and what the riches of his glorious inheritance is in the Saints,

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward vs, which belittle, * according to the working of his mightie power,

20 Which hee wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heauenly places,

21 Farre above all principallitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and every Name that is named, not in this world onely, but also in that that is to come,

22 And hath made all things subiect vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things to be the head to the Church,

23 Which is his body, *even* the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all things.

C H A P. II.

1 The letter to set out the grace of Christ, hee vseth a comparison, calling them to minde, 5 that they were altogether castawayes and sinners: 8 That they are saved by grace, 13 and brought were, 16 by reconciliation through Christ, 17 published by the Gospel.

AND * you haue been quickened, that were dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 Wherein in times past yee walked, according to the course of this world, and after the prince that ruleth in the ayre, *even* the spirit, that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whom we also had our conuersation in time past, in the lusts of our flesh, in fulfilling the will of the flesh, and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath, as well as others.

4 But God which is rich in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickened vs together in Christ, by whose grace yee are saved,

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in the heauenly places, in Christ Iesus,

Chap. 3. 7.
Col. 2. 12.

Col. 2. 13.

TO THE EPHESIANS.

7 That he might shew in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace, through his kindnesse towards vs in Christ Iesus,

8 For by grace are yee saued through faith, and that not of your selues: *it is* the gift of God,

9 Not of workes, lest any man should boast himselfe.

10 For wee are his workmanship created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath ordeined, that we should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember, that yee being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, *and* called vncircumcision of them, which are called circumcision in the flesh, made with hands,

Rom. 9. 4. 12 That yee were, *7 say,* at that time without Christ, and were *** strangers aliens from the Common wealth of Israel, and were *** strangers from the covenants of promise, and had no hope, and were without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, yee which once were farre off, are made neere by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, which hath made of both one, and hath broken the stoppe of the partition wall,

Col. 2. 14. 15 ***In abrogating through his flesh the hatred, *that is,* the Law of commandements *which standeth* in ordinances, for to make of twaive one new man in himselfe so making peace,

16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by his crosse, and slay hatred thereby,

17 And came, and preached peace to you which were a farre off, and to them that were neere.

18 For through him we both haue an entrance vnto the Father by one Spirit.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners: but citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God,

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone,

21 In whom all the building coupled together groweth vnto an holy Temple of the Lord,

22 In whom yee also are built together, to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

2 Hee declareth that therefore hee suffered many things of the Jewes, *3* because he preached the myserie touching the saluation of the Gentiles, *8* as Gods commandment. *13* After, be desired the Ephesians not to sleepe for his afflictions: *14* And for

C H A P. III.

for this cause he praiesh vnto God, 18 that they may vnderstand the great loue of Christ.

FOr this cause, I Paul am a prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If yee haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you ward,

3 That is, that God by reuelation hath shewed this myserie vnto me (as I wrote aboue in few words,

4 Whereby when ye read, ye may know mine vnderstanding in the myserie of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is now reueiled vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles should be inherisers also, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel,

7 Whereof I am made a minister by the gift of the grace of God given vnto mee through the effectuall working of his power.

8 Euen vnto mee the least of all Saints is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ,

9 And to make cleare vnto all men what the fellowship of the myserie is, which from the beginning of the world hath beene hid in God who hath created all things by Iesus Christ,

10 To the intent, that now vnto principalities and powers in heavenly places, might bee knowne by the Church the manifolde wisdom of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose, which hee wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord:

12 By whom we haue boldnesse and entrance with confidence by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I desire that yee faint not at my tribulations for your sakes, which is your glorie.

14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 (Of whom is named the whole family in heauen & in earth)

16 That hee might graunt you according to the riches of his glory, that yee may be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith:

18 That ye, being rooted and grounded in loue, may bee able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length and depth, and height:

19 And to know the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge,

that

TO THE EPHESIANS.

Iudge, that yee may be filled with all fulnesse of God

20 Vnto him therefore that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that wee aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 Be prayse in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for ever, Amen.

C H A P. IIII.

These three last Chapters containe precepts of manners. 1 He exhorteth them to mutuall loue. 7 vniuersities are therefore bestowed of God, 16 that the Church may be built vp. 18 He calleth them from the wantis of the Infidels, 25 from hyng, 29 and from fleshe talke.

ITherefore, being prisoner in the Lord, pray you that yee walke worthy of the vocation wherunto yee are called,

2 With all humblenesse of minde, and meekenesse, with long suffering, supporting one another through loue,

3 Endeavouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body, and one Spirit, euen as yee are called in one hope of your vocatiō.

5 There is one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God, and Father of all, which is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto every one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended vp on high, hee led captiuitie captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men.

9 (Now, in that he ascended what is it but that hee had also descended first into the lowest parts of the earth)

10 Hee that descended, is euen the same that ascended, farre above all heauens, that he might fill all things)

11 He therefore gaue some to be Ap. stles, and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, and some Pastours, and Teachers,

12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of the ministration, and for the edification of the body of Christ,

13 Till we all meet together (in the vnitie of faith and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfite man, and vnto the measure of the age of the fulnesse of Christ,

14 That we henceforth bee no more children, wavering and carried about with euery winde of doctrine, by the deceite of men, and with craftinesse, whereby they lay in waite to deceiue,

15 But let vs follow the truth in loue, and in all things growe
vp

C H A P. I I I I.

vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ,

16 By whom all the body being coupled and knlt together by euery ioint, for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effectuall power, *which is* in the measure of euery part) receiuerth increaste of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in lone.

17 This I say therefore and tellise in the Lord, that yee henceforth walke not as * other Gentiles walke, in vanitie of their minde, Rom. 1.21

18 Hauing their vnderstanding darkened, and being strangers from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardnesse of their heart,

19 Which being past feeling, haue given themselves vnto wantonnes, to worke all vncleannes, *euē* with greedinesse.

20 But ye haue not to learned Christ,

21 It to be ye haue heard him, and haue been taught by him, as the trueth is in Ies,

22 * *That is*, that ye cast off, concerning the conuersation in time past, that olde man which is corrupt through the deceivable lulles, Col. 3.8

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde,

24 And put on the new man, which after God is created vnto righteousnesse and true hēlness.

25 Wherefore cast off lying, and speake every man trueth vnto his neighbour: for we are members one of another,

26 Be angry, but sinne not: let not the Sunne goe downe vpon your wrath,

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour and worke with his hands the thing which is good, that hee may haue to giue vnto him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communicatō proceed out of your mouthes: but that which is good, to the vſe of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by whom yee are sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness, and anger, and wrath, crying, and euil speaking be put away from you with all maliciousnesse.

32 Be yee courteous one to another, and tender hearted, freely forgiving one another, euē as God for Christs sake freely forgane you.

C H A P. V.

3 *Lesi in those vices which he reprehended, they should see light by his*

TO THE EPHESIANS.

in admonition, 5 be terrifieth them by denouncing severe iudgements, 8 and stirreth them forward: 15 when bee descendeth from generall lessons of maners, 21 to the particular duties of wives 25 and husbands.

BE ye therefore followers of God as deare children.

1oh. 13. 34 and 15. 12 2 *And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, and hath given himselfe for vs, *1. 1oh. 3. 2* to bee an offering & a sacrifice of a sweete smelling fauour to God.

Chap. 4. 29 3 *But fornication, and all vncleannesse, or couetousnesse, let it not be once namad among you, as it becommeth Saints.

eccl. 3. 5 4 Neither filthinesse, neither foolish talking, neither iesting, *2. 1. 1oh. 2. 17.* which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whoresonger, neither vncleane person, nor couetous person, which is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

Mat. 24. 4 6 *Let no man deceiue you with vaine wordes: for, for such things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience. *mar. 3. 5*

luke 21. 8 7 Be not therefore companions with them. *2. 1. 1oh. 2. 3.*

8 For ye were once darknesse, but are now light in the Lord: walke as children of light,

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousness, and truth)

10 Approning that which is pleasing to the Lord.

11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workes of darknesse, but euen reprove them rather.

12 For it is a shame euen to speake the things, which are done, of them in secret.

13 But all things when they are reproofed of the light, are manifest: for it is light that maketh all things manifest.

14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and stand vp from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light.

15 Take heede therefore that ye walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as * wise.

16 Redeeming the season: for the dayes are euill.

Col. 4. 3 17 *Wherefore, bee yee not vniwise, but vnderstand what the will of the Lord is. *Rom. 12. 3*

2. 1. 1oh. 4. 3 18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is excessse: but bee fulfilled with the Spirit,

19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes, and hymnes, & spiritual songs, singing, and making melody to the Lord in your hearts,

20 Giuing thanks alwayes for all things vnto God, euen the Father,

CHAP. VI.

Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ,

21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God,

22 ¶ * Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as vnto the Lord.

Col. 3. 18
titus 2. 5

23 * For the husband is the wiues head, even as Christ is the head of the Church, and the same is the sauour of his body.

1 pet. 3. 1
1. Cor. 11

24 Therefore, as the Church is in subiection to Christ, euen so let the wiues be to their husbands in every thing.

3.

25 ¶ * Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ loned the Church, and gaue himselfe for it,

Col. 3. 19

26 That he might sanctifie it, and cleanse it by the washing of water through the word,

27 That hee might make it vnto himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blame.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nourisheth and cheriseth it, euen as the Lord doeth the Church.

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 * For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleaue to his wife, and they twaine shalbe one flesh.

Gen. 2. 24
mat. 19. 5

32 This is a great secrete, but I speake concerning Christ, and concerning the Church.

mark. 10. 7
1. cor. 6. 16

33 Therefore every one of you, do ye so: let every one lone his wife, euen as himselfe, & let the wife see that she feare her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 He sheweth the duties of children, 5 seruants, 6 and master.

10 Then he speaketh of the fierce bassell that the faithfull haue.

12 and what weapons we must v'se in the same: 21 In the end he commendeth Tycheus.

Children, * obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. 2 * Honour thy father and mother (which is the first commandement with promise)

Col. 3. 20
Eph. 6. 1, 2
deut. 5. 16

3 That it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest liue long on earth.

eccl. 3. 9
mat. 15. 4

4 And ye fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lord.

mar. 7. 10

5 * Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are your masters, according to the flesh, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your hearts as vnto Christ,

Col. 3. 22
titus 2. 9
1. pet. 3. 18

TO THE EPHESIANS.

6 Not with service to the eye, as men please, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart,

7 With good will, fearing the Lord, and not men.

8 And knowe ye that whatloener good thing any man doth,
that same shall hee receiue of the Lord, whether hee bee bond or
free.

9 And ye masters, doe the same things vnto them, putting away threatening: and know that euen your master also is in heauen, neither is there * respec^t of person with him.

15 ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might,

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the assaults of the devil.

12 For wee wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against
*principalities, against powers, *and* against the worldly power,
nomis, *the* ~~princes~~ *princes* of the darkenisse of this world, against spirituall
wickednesses, *which are* in the high places.

13 For this cause take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the evil day, and having finished all things, stand fast.

14 Stand therefore, and your loynes girded about with veritie,
and haping on the breast plate of righteousness,

15 And you fed them with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

16 About all take the shield of faith, wherewith ye may quench
all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sworde of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 And pray alwayes, with all manner prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watch thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all Saints,

19 And for mee, that utterance may bee given vnto mee, that I may open my mouth boldly to publish the secret of the Gospel,

20 Whereof I am the ambassadour in bonds, that therein
may speake boldly as I ought to speake.

21 ¶ But that ye may also know mine affaires, and what I doe,
Tychicus my deare brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall
shew you of all things.

22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that yee might know mine affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace *be* with the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHAP. I.

23 Grace be with all them which loue our Lord Iesus Christ, to
 then immortalitie, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians, and sent by
 Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to the Philippians.

CHAP. I.

7 *Heauen testified his costly and tender affection towards the Philippians, 12 his entreaties of himselfe, and his bonds: 22 And proueth these forward by his owne example, 27 and exhorteth them to visite 28 and patience.*

PAUL and Timotheus the seruants of IESVS
 CHRIST, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus which
 are at Philippi, with the Bishops, and deacons:

Grace be with you, and peace from God our
 Father and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God *hauing* you in perfect memorie,

4 (Alwayes in all my prayers for all you, praying with glad-
 nesse)

5 Because of the fellowship which ye haue in the Gospel, from
 the first day vnto now.

6 And I am perswaded of this same thing, that hee that hath
 begun this good worke in you, will performe it vntill the day of
 Iesus Christ.

7 As it becommeth me so to iudge of you all, because I haue
 you in remembrance, that both in my bands, and in my defence, and
 confirmation of the Gospel you all were partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how I long after you all from the
 very heart roote in Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound, yet more and
 more in knowledge, and in all iudgement,

10 That yee may allow those things which are best, that yee
 may be pure, and without offence vnto the day of Christ,

11 Filled with the fruites of rightconnesse, which are by Iesus
 Christ vnto the glorie and praise of God.

12 ¶ I would ye vnderstood, brethren, that the things which *haue*
come vnto me, are turned rather to the furthering of the Gospel,

13 So that my bands in Christ are famous throughout all the
 iudgement hall, and in all other places,

14 Inasmuch that many of the brethren in the Lord are bold-
 ned

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

ned through my bands, and dare more frankly speake the word.

15 Some preach Christ even through enuie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one part preacheth Christ of contention and not purely, supposing to add more affliction to my bands.

17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? yet Christ is preached al manner of wayes, whether *it be* vnder a pretence, or sincerely: and I therein ioy: yea, and will ioy.

19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Iesus Christ,

20 As I seruently looked for, and hope, that in nothing I shalbe ashamed, but that with all confidence, as alwayes, so now Christ shalbe magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life, or by death.

21 For Christ *is* to me both in life, and in death aduantage.

22 And whether to liue in the flesh were profitable for me, and what to chuse I know not.

23 For I am distressed betweene both, desiring to bee loosed and to be with Christ, which is best of all.

24 Neuerthelesse to abide in the flesh, *is* more needfull for you.

25 And this I am sure of, that I shall abide, and with you all continue, for your furtherance and ioy of *your* faith,

26 That yee may more abundantly reioyce in Iesus Christ for me, by my coming to you againe.

27 Onely let your conuersation be, as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may heare of your matters that yee continue in one Spirit, and in one minde fighting together through the faith of the Gospel.

28 And in nothing feare your aduersaries, which is to them a token of perdition, and to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Christ, that not onely ye should beleene in him but also suffer for his sake,

30 Hauing the same fight, which yee saw in me, and now heare to be in me.

CHAP. II.

1 *Hee exhorteth them aboute all things 3 to humiliate, 6 and that by the example of Christ. 19 Hee promieth to send Timotheus shortly vnto them, 26 and excuseth the long tarrying of Epaphroditus.*

IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any compassion and mercy
a Fulfill

CHAP. II.

2 Fulfill my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accord, and of one iudgement,

3 That nothing *be done* through contention, or vaine glorie, but that in meekenesse of minde euery man esteeme other better then himselfe.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man alio on the things of other men.

5 Let the same mind bee in you that was euen in Christ Iesus,

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robbery to be equall with God:

7 But hee made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke on him the forme of a seruant, and was made like vnto men, & was found in shape as a man.

8 He humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the Crosse.

9 Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name aboue euery Name,

10 That at the Name of Iesus should euery knee bow, both of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth,

11 And that euery tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ is the Lord, vnto the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed me, not as in my preience onely, but now much more in mine absence, so make an ende of your owne saluation with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the will and the deede, *euen* of his good pleasure.

14 Doe all things without * murmuring and reasonings,

1. Pet. 4.9

15 That ye may be blamelesse, and pure, *and* the sonnes of God without rebuke in the middes of a naughtie and crooked nation, among whom ye shine as * lights in the world,

Mat. 5. 14.

16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vpon the sacrifice, and ser- uice of your faith, I am glad, and reioyce with you all.

18 For the same cause alio bee yee glad, and reioyce with mee.

19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send * Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I alio may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

2 Tim. 1. 6. 1

20 For I haue no man ke minded, who will faithfully care for your matters.

21 * For

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

1. Cor. 10.
24.

21 * For all seeke their owne, & not t^e at which is Iesus Christ
22 But yee know the prooffe of him, that as a sonne with the
father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send alioone as I know how it will
goe with me.

24 And I trust in y^e Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.

25 But I supposed it necessarie to send ~~me~~ brother Epaphro-
ditus vnto y^e u, my companion in labour, and fellow souldier,
euen your messenger, and he that ministered vnto me such things as
I wanted.

26 For hee longed after all you, and was full of heauinesse, be-
cause yee had heard that he had beene sicke.

27 And no doubt he was sicke, very neere vnto death but God
had mercie on him, and not on him onely, but on mee also, lest I
should haue sorrow vpon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more diligently, that when yee
should see him againe, yee might reioyce, and I might bee the lesse
forrowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and
make much of such.

30 Beca^use that for the worke of Christ hee was neere vnto
death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill the seruice which was
lacking on your part toward me.

CHAP. III.

2 *He refuteth the vaine boasting of the false Apostles, 7 and set-
teth Christ against them. 10 He setteth out the force and nature
of faith, 15 that laying all things aside, they may be partakers of
the crosse of Christ, 18 the enemies wherof he n^e tesh out.*

Moreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. It grieveth mee
not to write the same things to you, and for you it is a sure
thing.

1 Beware of dogges: beware of euill workes: beware of the
concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spi-
rit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh:

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any
other man thinketh that hee hath wherof hee might trust in the
flesh, much more I,

5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe
1. Cor. 11. of Benjamin, * an Ebrew of the Ebrewes, * by the Law a Pharise.

22. 6 Concerning zeale, I persecuted the Church: touching the
A. 23 6 righteousness which is in the Law, I was blameable.

7 But

C H A P. III.

7 But the things that were vantage vnto me, the same I counted losse for Chrisses sake.

8 Yea, doubtlesse I thinke all things but losse for the excellenc knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue counted all things losse, and do iudge *them* to be doing, that I might winne Christ,

9 And might be found in him, *that is*, not hauing mine owne righteou'snesse, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, *euen* the righteou'snesse which is of God through faith,

10 That I may know him, and the verue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made conformable vnto his death,

11 It by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained *to it*, either were already perfect: but I follow, if that I might comprehend *that* for whose sake also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained *to it*, but one thing I *doe*: I forget that which is behind, and endeavour my selfe vnto that which is before,

14 And follow hard toward the marke, for the price of the hic calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shall reueile euen the same vnto you.

16 Neuerthelesse, *in that* whereunto wee are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing.

17 Brethren, bee followers of me, and looke on them, which walke so as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 *For many walke, of whome I haue tolde you often, and now tell you weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the Crosse of Christ.

Rom. 16
17.

19 Whose ende is damnation, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is to their shame, which mind earthly things.

20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also wee looke for the ^aSauion *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ,

1. Cor. 1. 7
titus 2 13

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

C H A P. IIII.

3 From particular exhortations, 4 he commeth to general. 10 Hee saith

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

saith that he tooke such joy in their readinesse to liberallitie, 12 that he will patiently leave she want.

THerefore, my brethren, beloued and longed for, my ioy and my crowne, so continue in the Lord, ye beloued.

2 I pray Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of one accord in the Lord.

3 Yea, and I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow, helpe those women, which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow labourers, whose names are in the *booke of life.

4 Reioice in the Lord alway, againe I say reioyce.

5 Let your patient mind be knowen vnto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Bee nothing carefull, but in all things let your requests be shewed vnto God in prayer, and supplication with giuing of thanks.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, shall priuerue your hearts and minds in Christ Iesus.

8 Furthermore, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are iust, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are worthy loue, whatsoever things are of good report, if there be any vertue, or if there be any praise, thinke on these things,

9 Which yee haue both learned and receined, and heard, and seene in me: those things doe, and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 Now I reioice also in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care for mee springeth afresh, wherein notwithstanding yee were carefull, but ye lacked opportunitee.

11 I speake not because of want: for I haue learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

12 And I can be abased, and I can abound: euery where in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungry, and to abound, and to haue want.

13 I am able to doe all things through the helpe of Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding yee haue well done, that yee did communicate to mine affliction.

15 And ye Philippians know also that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, concerning the matter of giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

Reu. 3. 5
and 10. 8
and 21. 27

C H A P. I.

16 For *even when I was* in Thessalonica, ye sent once, and afterward againe for my necessitie,

17 Not that I desire a giste: but I desire the fruite which may further your reckoning.

18 Now I haue receiued all, and haue plenty: I was *even filled*, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which *came* from you, an odour that smelleth sweete, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasant to God.

19 And my God shall fulfill all your necessities through his riches with glory in Iesus Christ.

20 Vnto God *even* our Father. *be* praise for euermore, Amen.

21 Salute all the Saints in Christ Ie us. The brethren, which are with me, greete you.

22 All the Saints salute you, and most of all they which are of Cæsars household.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Philippians from Rome, and sent by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL

to the Colossians.

C H A P. I.

1 *After the salutation,* 4 *he praiseth them the more to make them attentive vnto him.* 7 *Hee reporteth the testimonie of the doctrine which they heard of Epaphras.* 13 *Hee magnifieth Gods grace towards them,* 20 *and sheweth that all the parts of our salvation consist in Christ alone.*

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

2 To them which are at Colosse, Saints and faithfull brethren in Christ: Grace *bee* with you, and peace from GOD our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 We giue thanks to God *even* the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, alwayes praying for you:

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of *your* loue toward all Saints,

5 For the hopes sake, which is laid vp for you in heaven, whereof ye haue heard before by the word of truth, *which* is the Gospel,

6 Which is come vnto you, *even as it is* vnto all the world, and is fruitfull, *as it is* also among you from the day that ye heard and truly knew the grace of God,

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare fellowe servant, which is for you a faithfull minister of Christ :

8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard of it, cease not to pray for you, & to desire that yee might be fulfilled with knowledge of his will, in all wisdom, and spirituall vnderstanding,

10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord, and please him in all things, being fruitfull in all good workes, and increasing in the knowledge of God,

11 Strengthened with all might through his glorious power, vnto all patience, and long suffering with ioyfulness,

12 Gining that kes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light,

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome * of his deare Sonne.

Mat. 3. 17
and 17. 5.
2. pet. 1. 17
Heb. 1. 3.
John 1. 3.
14 In whom wee haue redemption through his blood, that is, the forgiuenesse of sinnes,

15 Who is the * image of the inuisible God, the first begotten of euerie creature.

16 * For by him were all things created, which are in heauen, and which are in earth, things visible and inuisible: whether they be Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers, all things were created by him and for him,

17 And he is before all things, and in him all things consist.

Keut. 1. 5.
1. cor. 15.
20.
1. ioh. 2. 9.
John 1. 14.
18 And he is the head of the body of the Church: he is the beginning, * and the first begotten of the dead, that in all things he might haue the preeminence.

19 * For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell,

20 And through peace made by that blood of that his crosse, to reconcile to himselfe through him, through him, / *in* / all things, both which are in earth, and which are in heauen.

21 And you which were in times past strangers and enemies, because your minds were / *in* / euill workes, hath lice now also reconciled,

22 In that body of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and vblameable, and without fault in his sight,

23 If ye continue grounded and stablished in the faith, and bee not moved away from the hope of the Gospel, whereof yee haue heard, and which hath bene preached to euerie creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am a minister.

24 Now reioyce I in my sufferings for you, and fulfill the rest of

C H A P. II.

of the affections of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof I am a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is given me vnto youward, to fulfill the word of God,

26 *Which is the mystery hid since the world began, and from all ages, but now is made manifest to his Saints,*

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles, which riches is Christ in you, the hope of glory,

28 Whom we preach, admonishing every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Iesus,

29 Whereunto I also labour and strue, according to his working which worketh in me mightily.

C H A P. II.

4 He condemneth, as vaine, what seuer is without Christ, 11 in treating specially of circumcision, 16 of abstinence from meates, 18 and of worshipping of Angels. 20 That wee are delivered from the traditions of the Law through Christ.

FOR I would ye knew what great fighting I haue for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh,

2 That their hearts might be comforted, and they knit together in love, and in all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to know the mystery of God, even the Father, and of Christ:

3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom, & knowledge.

4 And this I say, least any man should beguile you with enticing words:

5 * For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, reioicing, and beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ,

6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke in him,

7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the faith, as yee haue bene taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

8 Beware least there be any man that speake you through philosophie, and vaine deceit, through the traditions of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principallitie and power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with * circumcision made

Rom. 16:

25. ephes.

3.9.

2. Tim. 2.

10 titus 1.

2. 1 pet.

1. 30.

1. Cor. 5.

Rom. 2. 29

TO THE COLOSSIANS,

without hands, by putting off the sinfull body of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ,

*Rom. 6. 4.
ephe. 1. 19*

12 In that ye are * buried with him through Baptisme, in whom ye are also raised vp together through the faith of the operation of God, which raised him from the dead,

Ephe. 2. 1.

13 * And you which were dead in sinnes, and in the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, forgiving you all your trespasses,

*Ephe. 2.
15.*

14 And putting out the * hand writing of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, he hath taken it out of the way, and fastened it vpon the crosse,

15 And hath spoyled the Principalities, and powers, and hath made a shew of them openly, and hath triumphed ouer them in the same crosse,

16 Let not man therefore condemne you in meat and drinke or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moone, or of the Sabbath *days*,

17 Which are but a shadow of things to come: but the body is in Christ,

18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer you by humblenes of mind, and worshipping of Angels, aduancing himselfe in those things which he seer saw, rashly pult vp with his fleshly mind,

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the body furnished and knit together by ioynts and bands, increaseth with the increasing of God,

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the ordinances of the world, why as though ye liued in the world, are ye burdened with traditions?

21 *As*, Touch not, Taste not, Handle not,

22 Which all perish with the vsing, *and are* after the commandments, and doctrines of men,

23 Which things haue in deede a shew of wisdom in voluntary religion and humblenesse of mind, and in not sparing the body, which are things of no value, *(shew they)* pertaine to the filling of the flesh,

C H A P. III.

1 *A sinfull carnall exercises, wherby the false apostles wrought, 2 he seereth heauen: 5 And bequeth with the mortifying of the flesh, 8 whence he draweth particular exhortations, 18 and particular duties which depend on each mans calling.*

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are above, where Christ sitteth at the right hand of God.

CHAP. IUL

2 Set your affections on things which are aboue, *and* not on things which are on the earth.

3 For ye are dead and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glory.

5 * Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, *Ephes. 3. 3.* for: ication, vncleannesse, the inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couerousnesse which is idolatry.

6 For the which things sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye lived in them.

8 But now put ye away euen all these things: wrath, anger, malicioulnesse, euill speaking, filthy speaking out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye haue put off the old man with is workes,

10 And haue put on the new, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him,

11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iew, circumcision nor vncircumcision Barbarian, Scythian, bond, free: but Christ is all, and in all things.

12 Now therefore as the elect of God holy and beloved, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse of mind, meeknesse, long suffering:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man haue a quarrell to another: euen as Christ forgane, euen so doe ye.

14 And about all these things, put on loue, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which ye are called in one body and be ye thankesfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you plenteously in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing your owne selues, in Psalmes, and Hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with a grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 * And whatsoever ye shal doe, in word or deede, doe all in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giving thanks to God euen the Father by him. *1 Cor. 10. 31.*

18 ¶ * Wines, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as it is comely in the Lord. *Ephes. 3. 22*

19 * Husbands loue your wines, and be not bitter vnto them. *1. Pet. 3. 1.*

20 ¶ * Children, obey your parents in all things: for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord. *Ephes. 6. 1.*

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

*Eph. 6. 5.
titus 2. 9.
1 pet. 2.
18.*

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, least they bee discouraged.

22 ¶ *Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh in all things, not with eye service as men pleasers, but in singlereffe of heart, fearing God.*

23 And whatsoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men,

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receive for the wrong that he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

C H A P. IIIII.

2 *He reneweth 10 generall exhortations, 3 touching praier, & gracious speech, ~ and so endeth with greetings and commendations.*

Ye masters, doe vnto your seruants, that which is iust, and equal, knowing that ye also haue a master in heauen.

*Task 18.
1. 1. 1. 1. 5
17.*

2 ¶ *Continue in praier, & watch in the same with thanksgiving,*

*2. 1. 1. 1. 5
18. 2. 1. 1. 5
3. 1.*

3 ¶ *Praying also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the doore of viterance, to speake the mystery of Christ: wherefore I am also in bonds,*

Eph. 5. 15

4 That I may vter it, as it becommeth me to speake,

5 ¶ *Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season.*

6 *Let your speech be gracious alwayes, and powdered with salt, that ye may know how to answer euery man.*

7 ¶ *Tychicus our beloved brother & faithful minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord, shall declare vnto you my whole state.*

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that he might know your state, and might comfort your hearts,

9 With Onesimus a faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall shew you of all things here.

10 Aristarchus my prison fellow saluteth you, and Marcus Barnabas cousin (touching whom ye receiued commandements, if he come vnto you, receiue him)

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision. The'se onely are my worke fellowes vnto the kingdome of God, which haue bene vi to my consolation.

12 Epaphras the seruant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, and alwayes striveth for you in prayers, that yee may stande perfect, and full in all the will of God.

13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and them of Nicapopolis.

14 ¶ *Luke*

CHAP. I.

- 14 * Luke the beloued Physician greeteth you, and Demas.
- 15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.
- 16 And when this Epistle is read of you, cause that it bee read in the Church of the Laodiceans also, and that yee likewise read the Epistle ~~written~~ from Laodicea.
- 17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry, that thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.
- 18 The salutation by the hande of mee Paul. Remember my bands. Grace be with you. AMEN.

2. TIM. 4.
21.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, and sent by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

Hee therefore beginneth with thanksgiving, & so put them in mind that whatsoever was praise worthy in them, it came of Gods goodness, and that they are examples vnto others.



Paul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

1 We giue God thanks alwayes for you al, making mention of you in our prayers

2 Without ceasing, remembreing your effectual faith, and diligent loue, and the patience of your hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God, even our Father,

3 Knowing, beloved brethren, that ye are elect of God.

4 For our Gospel was not vnto you in word onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know after what manner we were among you for your sakes,

5 And ye became followers of vs and of the Lord, and receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost,

6 So that ye were as examples to all that beleue in Macedonia and in Achaia.

7 For from you sounded out the word of the Lorde, not in Macedonia and in Achaia onely: but your faith also which is toward God, spread abroad in all quarters, that we need not to speake any thing.

8 For they themselves shewe of vs what manner of entering in

I. T H E S S A L O N I A N S.

we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God,

10 And to looke for his Sonne from heaven, whome he raised from the dead, *euem* Iesus which delinereth vs from that wrath to come.

C H A P. II.

1 *Hee* declareth how faithfully hee preached the Gospel vnto them, 5 seeking neither game, 6 nor praise of men: 10 and hee proueth the same by their owne testimonies: 14 that they did con-
trariouſly beare persecutions of their countrey men: 17 that hee desireth very much to see them.

FOr ye your selues knowe, brethren, that our entrance in vnto you was not in vaine,

*Acts 16
12.*

2 But euen after that we had suffered before, and were shame-
fully intreated at * Philippi (as ye knowe) wee were bold in our
God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much boasting.

3 For our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by craftinesse,
nor by guile,

4 But as we were allowed of God, that the Gospel should be
committed vnto vs, so we speake not as they that please men, but
God, which approueth our hearts.

5 Neither yet did we euer vse flattering words, as yee knowe,
nor coloured countenance, God is record.

6 Neither sought wee praise of men, neither of you, nor of o-
thers, when we might haue ben chargeable, as § Apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, euem as a nourse cherisheth
her children.

8 Thus being affectioned toward you, our good will was to
haue dealt vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely, but also our
owne soules, because yewe were deare vnto vs.

Acts 20

34. 1 cor.

4 12

2. 1 thes 5 8.

9 For yee remember, brethren, *our labour and travell: for we
laboured day and night, because we woulde not be chargeable vnto
any of you, and preached vnto you the Gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and iustly, and
vblameably we behaued our selues among you that beleue.

11 As ye know how that we exhorted you, and comforted, and
besought euery one of you (as a father his children)

Ephes. 4. 1

phil. 1. 27

col. 1. 10

12 That ye would * walke worthy of God, who hath called you
vnto his kingdom, and glory.

13 For this cause also thankewe God without ceasing, that
when ye received the word of God, which ye heard of vs, yee re-
ceived it not as the word of men, but as it is indeede, the word of
God.

C H A P. III.

God, which also worketh in you that beleue.

14 For brethren, ye are become followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because ye have also suffered the same things of your owne countrey men, euen as they haue of the Iewes.

15 Which both killed the Lord Iesus and their owne Prophets, and haue persecuted vs away, and God they please not, and are contrary to all men.

16 And hee led vs to preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fulfill their finnes alwayes: for the wrath of God is come on them, to the vtmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for a season, concerning fight, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to see your face with great desire.

18 Therefore we would haue come vnto you, (I Paul at least once or twice) but Satan hindered vs.

19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing? are not euen you it in the presence of our Lorde Iesus Christ at his coming?

20 Yes ye are our glory and ioy.

C H A P. III.

1 Timothy his affliction towards them, hee sendeth Timothy vnto them: 6 He is moved by the report of his prosperous estate, 9 that hee and the sufficiency of thanks, 11 and therefore hee breaketh out into a prayer.

Wherfore since wee could no longer forbear, we thought it good I to remaine at Athens alone,

2 *And haue sent Timothy our brother & minister of God, 2 Tim. 1:6. and our labour fellow in the Gospel of Christ, to eilate with you, and to comfort you touching your faith.

3 That no man should be moued with these afflictions: for ye your selues know, that we are appointed thereto.

4 For verely when wee were with you, wee tolde you before that we should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to passe, and yee know it.

5 Euen for this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent Iust that I might know of your faith, least the tempter had tempted you in any sort, and that our labour had bene in vaine.

6 But now lately when Timothy came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and loue, and that yee haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring to see vs, as wee also doe you,

7 There-

I. T H E S S A L O N I A N S.

7 Therefore brethren, we had consolation in you in all our affliction and necessitie through your faith.

8 For now are we alive, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can wee recompense to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith wee reioyce for your sakes before our God,

Rom. 1. 10
Eph. 1. 5. 23. 10 Night & day, * praying exceedingly that we might see your face and might accomplish that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Nowe God himselfe, euen our Father, and our Lorde Iesus Christ guide our iourney vnto you,

12 And the Lord increase you, & make you abound in loue one toward another, and toward all men, euen as we do toward you:

2. Cor. 1. 3. 22. 1. Cor. 1. 8. 13 * To make your hearts stable, and vnblameable in holinesse before God euen our Father, at the coming of our Lorde Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

C H A P. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them 3 to holinesse, 9 and brotherly loue. 13 He forsaileth them to follow after the manner of infants. 15 He setteth out the history of our resurrection.

ANd furthermore wee beseech you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lorde Iesus, that ye increase more and more, as yee haue receiued of vs, how ye ought to walke, and to please God.

2 For yee knowe what commandments we gaue you by the Lorde Iesus.

Rom. 12. 2. Eph. 5. 27. 3 * For this is the wil of God, euen your sanctification, that ye should absteine from fornication,

4 That eury one of you should knowe, how to possesse his vessell in holinesse and honour,

5 And not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:

1. Cor. 6. 8. 6 * That no man oppresse or defraud his brother in any matter: for the Lord is anenger of all such things, as we also haue told you before time, and testified.

1. Cor. 1. 2. 7 * For God hath not called vs vnto uncleannesse, but vnto holinesse.

8 He therefore that despiseth these things, despiseth not man, but God who hath euen given you his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, yee neede not that I write vnto you: * for ye are taught of God to loue one another.

2. Cor. 13. 7. 4. and 1. 5. 12. 1. 2. Cor. 2. 8. and 4. 21. 10 Yea, and that thing verily ye do vnto all the brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia: but wee beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more,

11 And

CHAP. V.

11 And that ye study to be quiet & to meddle wth your own busines and to worke with your own hands, as we commanded you,

12 That ye may behaue your selues honestly toward them that are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you.

13 ¶ I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorow not euen as other which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleue that Iesus is dead, and is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this say we vnto you by the word of the Lord, that we which liue, and are remaining in the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which sleepe:

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descende from heauen with a shoute, and with the voice of the Archangel, and * with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

1. Cor. 15.
52.

17 Then shall we which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the cloudes, to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort your selues one another wth these words.

CHAP. V.

1 *Condemning the euill seeking for the seasons of Corin's coming, & he warneth them to be ready alway to receiue him: 12 and he smeth them wth many good lessons.*

BVt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you.

2 For ye your selues know perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safetie. then shall come vpon them sudden destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkenesse, that that day should come on you, as it were a thiefe.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenesse.

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe other, but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, & they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober, * putting on the breast plate of faith & loue, and of the hope of saluation, for an helmet.

1. Cor. 15.
52.

9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Which

L T H E S S A L O N I A N S.

10 Which died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, wee should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as ye doe.

12 Now we beseech you brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you,

13 That ye haue them in singular loue for their wokes sake. Be at peace among your selues.

14 We desire you, brethren, to admonish them that are out of order: comfort the feeble minded: beare with the weak: be patient toward all men.

Pro. 17. 13. 15 See that none recompence euill for euill vnto any man: but euer follow that which is good: both toward your selues, and toward all men.

Mat. 5. 49. 16 Lett vs see our more.

2. Cor. 12. 17 * Pray continually.

1. Pet. 3. 9. 18 In all things giue thanks: for this is the will of God in
Luke 18. 1. Christ Iesus toward you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophesying.

21 Try all things, and keepe that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 Now the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and
1. Pet. God that your whole spirit & soule and body, may be kept blamelesse vnto the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

1. Cor. 1. 9. 24 * Faithfull is he which calleth you, which will also doe it.

25 Brethren pray for vs.

26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saints.

28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians written from Athens.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE OF Paul to the Thessalonians.

C H A P. I.

5 He commendeth the multitude of faith and charitie, 4 and the patience of the Thessalonians: 6 And describeth Gods vengeance against such as oppress the good: 10 he teacheth the goodly to waite for the last iudgements.

Paul

C H A P. I.



Paul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church
of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God our Father,
and in the Lord Iesus Christ:

1 Grace be with you, and peace from God our
Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 * We ought to thanke God alwayes for you, brethren, as 1. Thes. 2.
it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the
loue of euery one of you toward another, aboundeth.

3 So that we our selues reioice of you in the Churches of God,
because of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and
tribulations that ye suffer.

4 * *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of Iude 6.
God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God,
for the which ye also suffer.

5 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribu-
lation to them that trouble you,

6 And to you which are troubled, rest with vs, * when the 1. Thes. 4.
Lord Iesus shall shewe himselfe from heauen with his mightie 16.
Angels,

7 In flaming fire, tendring vengeance vnto them, that doe not
knowe God, and which obey, not vnto the Gospel of our Lord
Iesus Christ.

8 Which shall be punished with everlasting perdition, from
the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power,

9 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and to be
made marueilous in all them that beleue (because our testimony
toward you was beleued) in that day.

10 Wherefore, wee also pray alwayes for you, that our God
may make you worthy of his calling, and fulfill all the good plea-
sure of his goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power,

11 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may be glorified
in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and of
the Lord Iesus Christ.

C H A P. II.

1 He sheweth that the day of the Lord shall not come, till there be
a departure from the faith, 2 and that Anti-christ be reueiled,

3 whose destruction he setteth out, 15 and thereupon exhorteth
to continen.

NOW we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord
Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him.

1 That ye be not suddenly moved from your mind, nor trou-
bled neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as it were from

II. THESSALONIANS.

vs, as though the day of Christ were at hand.

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come*, except there be a departing first, and that that man of sinne be disclosed, *even* the sonne of perdition,

4 Which is an aduersarie, and exalteth himselfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doeth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when he I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be reueiled in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: only he which now withholdeth, *shall let* till he be taken out of the way.

7/a. 11.4. 8 And then shall that wicked man be reueiled, * whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall abolish with the brightnesse of his coming,

9 *Even he* whose coming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And in all deceiuablenes of vnrightheousnesse among them that perish, because they receiued not the loue of the truth, that they might be saued.

11 And therefore God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleue lies,

12 That all they might bee damned which beleueed not the truth, but had pleasure in vnrightheousnesse.

13 But we ought to giue thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and the faith of truth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospell, to obtaine the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and keepe the instructions which ye haue bene taught, either by word, or by our Epistle.

16 Now the same Iesus Christ our Lord, and our God, *even* the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euermlasting consolation and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery word and good worke.

CHAP. III.

1 *Nee desireth them to further the preaching of the Gospell, with their prayers,* 6 *And to withdrawe themselves from those who through saluance,* 11 *and curiously peruerse good order:*

14 *14/born*

CHAP. III.

14 *Whom he excludeth from the company of the faithfull.*

Furthermore, brethren, * pray for vs, that the word of the Lord *Ephe 6:9*
may haue free passage, and be glorified, even as it is with you. *col. 4.3.*

2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreasonable and euill men: for all men haue not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, which will stablish you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And wee are perswaded of you through the Lord, that yee both doe, and will doe the things which we warne you of.

5 And the Lord guide your hearts to the loue of God, and the waiting for of Christ.

6 Wee warne you, brethren, in the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selues from euery brother that walketh inordinately, and not after the instruction, which he receiued of vs.

7 For ye your selues know, * how ye ought to follow vs: * for *1. Cor. 11.*
we behaued not our selues inordinately among you. *1.*

8 Neither tooke wee bread of any man for nought: but wee *1. Thes.*
wrought with labour and trauaile night & day, because we would *4. 11.*
not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because wee haue not authoritie, but that wee might make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when we were with you, this we warned you of, That if there were any which would not worke, that hee should not eate.

11 For we heare, that there are some which walke among you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are busie bodies.

12 Therefore them that are such, we warne and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quietnesse, and eate their owne bread.

13 And ye brethren, be not wearie in well doing.

14 If any man obey not this our saying in this letter, note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed:

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lorde himselfe of peace give you peace alwayes by all meanes. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

* The second *Epistle* to the Thetislonians, written from Athens.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE of Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I.

Setting forth a perfect patterne of a true Pastor, whose office especially consisteth in teaching, 4 he wroneth him, that vaine questions set apart, he teacheth these things, 5 which further charitie and faith: 12 and that his authoritie be not condemned, 14 he sheweth what an one he is made throughe the grace of God.

For prayer
purpose.



AVL an Apollie o Iesus Christ, by the commandement of God our Saviour, and our Lorde Iesus Christ our hope,

2 Vnto Timotheus my naturall sonne in the faith, Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, and from Christ Iesus our Lord.

3 As I belought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, *scilicet*, that thou mayest warne some, that they teach none other doctrine,

4 Neither that they give heed to fables and genealogies which are endlesse, which breede questions rather then godly edifying which is by faith.

Rom. 13
10.

5 For the end of the commandement is loue out of a pure heart and of a good conscience, and of faith vnained.

6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling

7 They would bee doctours of the Lawe, and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neither where of they asserme.

8 And we know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully:

9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient, to the vngodly and to sinners, to the vnholie and to the profane, to murderers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers,

10 To whoremongers, to biggers, to men stealers, to liars, to the perjured, and if there bee any other thing that is contrarie to wholesome doctrine,

11 Which is according to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which is committed vnto me.

12 Therefore I thanke him which hath made me strong, that is, Christ Iesus our Lorde: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in his seruice:

13 When before I was a blasphemour, and a persecuter, and an oppressor: but I was receiued to mercie: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeleefe.

14 But

CHAP. II.

14 But the grace of the Lord was exceeding abundant with faith and love, which is in Christ Iesus.

15 This is a true saying and by all meanes worthy to be received, that * Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe.

Mat. 9. 13.
Mat. 2. 17.

16 Notwithstanding, for this cause I was received to mercie, that Iesus Christ should first shew on me all long suffering vnto the ensample of them, which shall in time to come beleeue in him vnto eternall life.

17 Now vnto the King eternall, immortall, inuisible, vnto God onely wise, be honour and glory, for euer and euer. Amen.

18 This commandment cominit I vnto thee, sonne Timotheus, according to the propheties, which went before vpon thee, that thou by them shouldest fight a good fight,

19 Having faith and a good conscience, which some have put away, and as concerning faith, haue made thipwracke.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, * whom I haue deli- uered vnto Satan, that they might learne not to blasphem.

1. Cor. 5. 5.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to make publike prayers for all men, 4. 5 and that for women: 8 & therefore he willeth all men in all places to pray: 9 and are ord^d in what apparell 11 and with what ma- nifest women ought to haue themselues in hol. assemlies.

I Exhort therefore, that first of all applications prayers, interces- sions, or giving of thanks be made for all men.

2 For kings, and for all that are in authoritie, that wee may leade a quiet and a peaceable life in all godlines, and honestie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sa- uiour,

4 Who will that all men shall be saved, and come vnto the acknowledging of the true God.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betwene God and man, who is the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gave him selfe a rancome for all men, to be that testi- monie in due time.

7 * Whence into I am ord^d a preacher and an Apostle (I speake the truth in Christ, and lie not) euen a teacher of the Gen- tiles in faith and veritie.

2. Tim. 1. 11.

8 I will therefore that the men pray, every where lifting vp pure hands without wrath or doubting.

9 * Likewise also the women, that they pray themselves in comely apparell, with shamefastnesse & modestie, not with boy-

2. Tim. 3. 2

I. TIMOTHEVS.

ded haire, or gold, or pearles, or costly apparell,

10 But (as becommeth women that professe the feare of God) with good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection.

12 * I permit not a woman to teach, neither to vnrpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence,

13 For * Adam was first formed, then Eue.

14 * And Adam was not decciued, but the woman was decciued, and was in the transgression

15 Notwithstanding, through bearing of children she shalbe saued, if they continue in faith, and loue & holinede with modestie.

C H A P. III.

2 He setteth out Bishops, & Antichristian Deacons, with their mines,

12 children and families: 13 He callith the Church the house of God.

THis is a true saying, If any man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a worthy worke.

2 * A Bishop therefore must be vnreprochable, the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, sober, apt to teach,

3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous,

4 One that can rule his owne house honestly, having children vnder obedience with all honesty.

5 For if any cannot rule his owne house, how shall he care for the Church of God?

6 He may not be a yong scholler, lest he being pulled vp fall into the condemnation of the deuill.

7 He must also bee well reported of, even of them which are without, lest he fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuill.

8 Likewise must Deacons be graue, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthy lucre,

9 * Having the mystery of the faith in pure conscience.

10 And let them first be proued: then let them minister, if they be found blamelesse.

11 Likewise their wives must be honest, not euill speakers, but sober and faithfull in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, & such as can rule their children well, and their owne households:

13 For they that haue ministered well, yet themselves a good degree, and great libertie in the faith which is in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vnto thee.

1. Cor. 14

54.

Gen. 1. 27

Gen. 1. 27,

21.

Gen. 2. 6

Titus 2. 3

Chap. 1. 19

C H A P. III.

15 But if I tarie long, that thou mayest yet know, how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of trueth.

16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of godlines, which is, God is manifested in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleued on in the world, and receiued vp in glorie.

C H A P. IIII.

1 He conuinceth as well false doctrine 3 of marriage as the choice of meats, 7 as also prophane fables: 8 And commendeth the good exercise, 13 and the dayly reading of the Scripture.

NOW the Spirit speaketh evidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue heede vnto spirits of error, and doctrines of demils,

2 Which speak lies through hypocrisie, and haue their consciences burned with an hote yron,

3 Forbidding to marrie, and commanding to abstaine from meates which God hath created to be receiued with giuing thanks of them, which beleene and know the trueth.

4 For euery creature of God is good, and nothing ought to be reioiced if it be receiued with thankesgiuing.

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put thy brethien in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which hath bin nourished vp in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, which thou hast continually followed.

7 But cast away prophane, and olde wiues fables, and exercise thy selfe vnto godlinesse.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godlinesse is profitable vnto all things, which hath the promise of the life present, and of that that is to come.

9 This is a true saying and by al meanes worthy to be receiued.

10 For therefore we labour and are rebuked, because we trust in the liuing God, which is the Saniour of all men, specially of those that beleene.

11 These things warne and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but bee vnto them that beleene an example, in word, in conuersation, in loue, in spirit, in faith and in purenesse.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, and to doctrine.

14 Despise not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by

I. TIMOTHEVS.

prophetic with the laying on of the hands of the companie of the
deribip.

15 These things exercise, and giue thy selfe vnto them, that it
may be seene how thou prouest among all men.

16 Take heede vnto thy selfe, and vnto learning, continue ther-
in: for in doing this thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that
heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 Having set downe a manner how to rebuke all degrees, 5 he entrea-
teth of widowes, who then were chosen for the service of the
Church: 17 Then he commeth to Elders, 23 and speaketh of me-
what toucheth the health of the Church.

Rebuke not an Elder, but exhort him as a father, and the you-
nger men as brethren,

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all
purenesse.

3 Honour widowes, which are widowes indeede.

4 But if any widow haue children or nephewes let them learn
first to thew godlinesse toward their owne house, and to recom-
pense their kinreds for that is an honest thing, and acceptable be-
fore God.

5 And she that is a widow indeede, and left alone, trusteth in
God, and continueth in supplications and prayers day and day.

6 But she that liueth in pleasure is dead while she liueth.

7 These things therefore warning them of, that they may bee
blamelesse.

8 If there be any that promiseeth not for his owne and name-
ly for them of his household, hee denieth the faith, and is worse
then an infidell.

9 Let not a widow be taken in to the number vnder threescore
yeere olde, that hath bene the wife of one husband,

10 And well reported of for good workes: if shee haue nou-
rished her children, if shee haue lodged the strangers, if shee haue
washed the Saints feete, if shee haue ministered vnto them which
were in affliction, if shee were continually giuen vnto euery good
worke.

11 But refuse the younger widowes: for when they haue begun
to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marie,

12 Having damnation, because they haue broken the first faith.

13 And likewise all being idle they learne to goe about from
house to house: yea, they are not onely idle, but also praters, and
busibodies, speaking things which are not comely.

14 I will

C H A P. VI.

14 I will therefore that the younger women marrie, and beare children, and gouerne the house, and giue no occasion to the aduersarie to speake euill.

15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan.

16 If any faithfull man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnto them, and let not the Church be charged, that there may be sufficient for them that are widowes indeede.

17 ¶ The Elders that rule well, let them bee had in double honour, specially they which labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith,* Thou shalt not mousel the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne, and,* The labourer is wor-
Deu. 25. 4
1. Cor. 9. 9.
Mat. 10.
10. luke
10. 7.

thy of his wages.

19 Against an Elder receiue none accusation, but vnder two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may feare.

21 * I charge thee before God and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one to another, and doe nothing partially.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither bee partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little wine for thy stomackes sake, and thine oiten infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, and goe before vnto iudgements, but some mens follow after.

25 Likewise also the good workes are manifest beforchand, and they that are otherwise, cannot behid.

* C H A P. VI.

1 He sheweth the duttie of seruants, to and what a wischieouse will countenance in: 13 and hauing spoken somewhat of rich men, ore once againe forbiddeth Timothie 20 to comber himselfe with vaine babblings.

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their masters worthy of all honour, that the Name of God, and his doctrine be not euill spoken of.

2 And they which haue beleeuing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather do seruice, because they are faithfull, and beloued, and partakers of the benefite. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, & consenteth not to the wholesome words of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrine, which is according to godlinesse,

4 Hee is pait vp and knoweth nothing, but doteth about
C c 3 questions

L. TIMOTHEVS.

questions and strife of words, wherof commeth enuie, strife, ray-
lings, and euill surmisings,

5 Forward disputations of men of corrupt mindes and destitute of the truth, which thinke that gaine is godlinesse: from such separate thy selfe.

6 But godlinesse is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath.

7 For we brought nothing into the world, *and* it is certaine, that we can carie nothing out.

8 Therefore when wee haue foode and rayment, let vs there with be content.

9 For they that will be rich, fall into temptation and snares, and into many foolish and noysome luits, which do ouercome men in perdition and destruction.

10 For the desire of money is the roote of all euil, which while some lusted after, they erred from the faith, and perced themselves through with many sorrowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after
righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, love, patience, and meeknesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eternall life wherunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

12 I charge thee in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things,
and before Iesus Christ which vnder Pontius Pilate * witnessed a
good confession.

59. 14 That thou keepe this commandment without spot, and vn-
rebukeable vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ,

Chas. II. 15 Which in due time he shall shew that is bleſſed and Prince
reul. 12. 14 onely, the King of kings, and Lord of Lords,

16 Who onely hath immortallitie, and dwelleth in the light
that none can attaine vnto, * whom neuer man saw, neither can see,
vnto whom be honour and power euerslasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they bee not
 Mat 4. 19 his minded, and that they * trust not in uncertaine riches, but in
 Luk 12. 15 the living God (which giveth vs abundantly all things to enjoy).

18 That they doe good, and be rich in good workes, and ready
to distribute, and communicate,

19 * Laying vp in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come that they may obtain eternal life.

20 O Timothy, keepe that which is committed vnto thee, and
avoids prophane ~~and~~ vaine babblings, and oppositions of science
fally so called.

CHAP. I.

21 Which while some professe they haue erred concerning the
sa th. Grace be with thee. Amen.

* The first Epistle to Timotheus written from Laodicea, which
is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacatiana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

Paul to Timotheus,

CHAP. I.

5 He commendeth Timotheus faith, 6 and exhorteth him to go on
faithfull in the charge committed unto him: 8 and that neither
for his bowels, 15 nor the reuelation of others, he faint. 11 He tri-
umpheth of his Apostleship. 14 Hee willetth him to haue care of
the thing committed unto him, 16 and praiseth Onesiphorus.



A V I. an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the wil of God,
according to the promise of life which is in Christ
Iesus,

2 To Timotheus my beloved sonne: Grace,
mercie and peace from God the Father, and from Ie-
sus Christ our Lord.

3 I thanke God, * whom I serue from mine elders with pure
conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my
prayers night and day,

Acts 22.3

4 Desiring to see thee, mindfull of thy teares, that I may bee
filled with ioy:

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in
thee, which dwelt first in thy grands other Tois, and in thy mother
Tunice and am assured that it dwelleth in thee also.

6 Wherefore, I put thee in remembrance that thou stire vp
the gift of God, which is in thee, by the putting on of mine hands.

7 For God hath not given to vs the spirit of feare, but of po-
wer and of loue, and of a sound mind.

8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord: ei-
ther of me his prisoner: but bee partaker of the afflictions of the
Gospel according to the power of God,

9 Who hath saved vs, and called vs with an * holy calling,
not according to our * workes, but according to his owne purpose
and grace, which was given vs through Christ Iesus before the
* world was,

1. Cor. 1.2

Titus 2.5

Rom. 16

25.

10 But is now made manifest by that appearing of our Saui-
our Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life
and immortality through the Gospel,

ephos. 1.4

colos. 1.26

titus 1.2

11 * Wherunto I am appointed a preacher, & Apostle, and a

1 Tim. 2.7

II. TIMOTHEVS.

teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things, but I am not ashamed: for I know whom I haue beleened, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed to him against that day.

13 Keepe the true paterne of the wholesome words, which thou hast heard of me in faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus,

14 That worthy thing which was committed to thee, keepe through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs,

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia bee turned from me: of which sort are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercie vnto the house of Onesiphorus: for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine.

17 But when he was at Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant vnto him, that he may finde mercie with the Lord at that day: and in how many things he hath ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

2 The better to set out *perseuerance in the Christian warfare, 3 he taketh similitudes 4 from soldiers, 6 and from husbandmen.*

10 He sheweth that our bonds are for the profit of the Saints:

15 Then he warneth Timothy to studie the word of scripture right,

17 to beware of the examples of the wicked, 22 and to doe all things in a fit.

THou therefore, my sonne, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

2 And what things thou hast heard of me by many witnesses, the same deliuer to faithfull men, which shal be able to teach other also.

3 Thou therefore suffer affliction as a good souldier of I. Ius Christ.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life, because hee would please him that hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if any man also strine for a martiall, hee is not crowned except he strine as he ought to doe.

6 The husbandman must labour before he receiue the fruits.

7 Consider what I say: and the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ made of the seede of David was raised againe from the dead, according to my Gospel.

C H A P. II.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, even vnto bonds, but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I suffer all things for the elects sake, that they might also obtaine the saluation which is in Christ Iesus, & eternal glory.

11 It is a true saying, For if wee be * dead together with him, we also shall liue together with him.

12 If we suffer, we shall also reigne together with him: * If wee denie him, he also will denie vs.

13 If * wee beleue not, yet abideth hee faithfull: hee cannot denie himselfe.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, and protest before the Lord, that they strine not about wordes, which is to no profite, *as* to the peruerting of the hearers.

15 Studie to shew thy selfe approoued vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to be ashamed, diuiding the word of truth aright.

16 Stay prophane and vaine babblings: for they shall increase vnto more vngodlines.

17 And their word shall fret as a canker: of which sort is Hymeneus and Philetus,

18 Which as concerning the truth haue erred from the mark, saying that the resurrection is past already, and doe destroy the faith of some.

19 But the foundation of God remaineth sure, and hath this seale, The Lord knoweth who are his: and, Let every one that cal- leth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie.

20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not onely vessels of gold and siluer, but also of wood and of earth, and * some for hon- our, and some for dishonour.

21 If any man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shall bee a vessel vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Lord, and pre- pared vnto every good worke.

22 Flee also from the lutes of youth, and follow after righte- ousnesse, faith, loue, and peace, with them that * cal on the Lord with pure heart,

23 * And put away foolish and vnlearned questions, knowing that they ingender strife.

24 But the seruant of the Lord must not strive, but *must* be gentle toward all men, apt to teach, suffering the euill,

25 Instructing them with meekenesse that are contrary minded, *proouing* if God at any time will giue them repentance, that they may acknowledge the truth,

Rom 6. 5

Mat. 10.

33. mar. 8

38.

Rom. 3. 3

and 9. 6

Rom. 9,
21.

1. Cor. 1. 2

1. Tim. 1. 4
and 4. 7

Titus 3. 5

26 And

11. TIMOTHEVS.

26 And come to amendment out of that snare of the deuill of whom they are taken prisoners, to doe his will.

CHAP. III.

1 He sae that the dangerous times that are to ensue: 9 but with the certaine hope of victorie, 10 he encourageth him to the combat, 14 setting out vnto him the triall of long suffering.

1. Tim 4
2. pet 3
Iac 18

This knowe also, that in the * last dayes shall come perilous times.

2 For men shall bee louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proud, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, vnthankfull, vnholie,

3 Without naturall affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, without love at all of them which are good.

4 Traitors, headie, he minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of god.

5 Having a shew of godlinesse, but haue denied the power thereof: turne away therefore from such.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and leaue captiue simple women, laden with foules, and led with diuers lusts,

7 Which women are ever learning, and are neuer able to come to the acknowledging of the truth.

Exo. 7. 11

8 * And as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses: so do the also resist the truth, men of corrupt mindes, reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But they shall preuaile no longer: for their madness shall be euident vnto all men, as theirs also was.

10 ¶ But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering, loue patience,

11 Persecutions, and afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lystra, which persecutions I suffered: but from them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea and all that will lue godly in Christ Iesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But the evil men and deceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou hast learned them:

1. Pet. 1.
20.

15 And that thou hast known the holy Scriptures of a child, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through the faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 * For the whole Scripture is giuen by inspiration of God, and

C H A P. IIII.

And is profitable to teach, to counsell, to correct, and to instruct in righteous liue,

17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

C H A P. IIIII.

1 He chargeth *his* to preach the Gospel with all diligence, 3 in that ioyntable time; 6 That his deach is layd at hand. 8 as for that as a conqueror, he maketh haste to a glorious triumph: 10 Hee sheweth the cause why he sendeth for Timothy, 11 euen by reason of his present state.

I Charge thee therefore Before God, and before the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdom,

2 Preach the word: be instant, in season and out of season; importune rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine,

3 For the time wil come, when they will not suffer wholesome doctrine: but having their eares itching, that after their owne hilles get them on heape of teachers,

4 And shall turne their eares from the truth, and shal be giuen vnto fables,

5 But watch thou in all things: suffer aduersities: do the worke of an Evangelist: cause thy ministry to be thoroughly liked of,

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departing is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, and haue finished my course: I haue kept the faith,

8 Therefore hath I layd vp for mee the crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous will be shall giue mee at that day: and not to me onely, but vnto all them also that loue that I am appearing.

9 Marke speed to come vnto me a once:

10 For Demas hath forsaken mee, and hath embraced this present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica. Crescens is gone to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 ^{Coloss.} Only Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable vnto me to minister.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith hath done mee much euill: the Lord reward him according to his workes.

TO TITVS.

15 Of whom be thou ware also: for he withstood our preaching more.

16 At my first answering no man assisted me, but all forsooke me: *7* *pro* God, that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, and strengthened me, that tyme the preaching might be fully beleueed, and that all the Gentiles should heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord will deliuer mee from euery euill worke, and will preserve me vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whom be praise for euer and euer, Amen

Chap. x. 16

19 Salute Prisca, and Aquila, and the *householde of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum sick.

21 Make speede to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace bee with you. AMEN.

¶ The second Epistle written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the first Bishop elected of the Church of Ephesus, when Paul was presented the second time before the Emperour Nero.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to Titus.

CHAP. I.

¶ Nice sheweth what kinde of men ought to bee chosen Ministers,
10 how many labours they should bee sloped: 12 and
through this occasion he toucheth the nature of the Gentians,
14 and the leues who put holinesse in outward things.



PAUL a servant of God, and an Apostle of IESUS CHRIST, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the knowledge of the trueth, which is according to godliuesse,

2 Vnto the hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie hath promised before the * world began:

3 But hath made his word manifest in due tyme through the preaching which is * committed vnto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus my naturall sonne according to the common faith, Grace, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from the

Rom. 16.

27.

ephes. 3. 9.

colos. 1. 26.

2. tim. 1. 9.

1. pet. 1. 20.

Gala. 1. 1.

C H A P. II.

the Lord Iesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest continue to redresse the things that remaine, and shouldest ordeine Elders in euery citie, as I appointed thee,

6 * If any be vnreprochable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of ryot, neither are disobedient, 1.Tim.3.2

7 For a Bishop must be vnreprochable, as Gods steward, not forward, not angrie, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre,

8 But harborous, one that loueth goodnesse, wise, righteous, holy, temperate,

9 Holding fast that faithfull word according to doctrine, that he also may be able to exhort with wholesome doctrine, and conuince them that say against it.

10 For there are many disobedient and vaine talkers and decei-ners of minds, chiefly they of the circumcision,

11 Whose mouthes must bee stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching things, which they ought not, for filthy lucre sake.

12 One of these felars, each one of their owne prophets said, The Cretians are alwayes liars, euill beasties, slow belies.

13 This witness is true, wherefore conuince them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith,

14 And not taking heed to the * Jewish fables and commandments of men that turne a way from the truth. 1.Tim.1.

15 Vnto the pure * are all things pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vncleane, nothing pure, but euen their mindes and consciences are defiled. 4.
Th. 2. 14.
20.

16 They professe that they know God, but by workes they deny him, and are abominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

C H A P. II.

2 He setteth out the duties of laic persons and estates, 6 and setteth out to instruct the Church in manners. 11 He draweth an argument from the end of our redemption, 12 which is, that we may be good and upright.

But speake thou the things which become wholesome doctrine. 2 That the elder men be watchful, graue, temperate, sound in the faith, in loue, and in patience:

3 The elder women likewise that they bee in such behauiour as becometh holinesse, not false accusers, not subject to much wine, but teachers of honest things,

4 That

TO TITVS.

Ephes. 5.
23.

4 That they may instruct the yong women to bee sober minded, that they loue their husbands, that they loue their children.

5 *That they be temperate.* chaste, keeping at home, good and * subiect vnto their husbands, that the word of God bee not euill spoken of.

6 Exhort yong men likewise, that they be sober minded.

7 In all things shew thy selfe an ensample of good workes, with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integritie,

8 *And* with the wholesome word, which cannot be condemned, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing nothing concerning you to speake euill of.

Ephes. 6. 5.
coloss. 3.
22.
1. pet. 2.
18.
1. Cor. 1. 2.
coloss. 1.
22.

9 * Let seruants be subiect to their masters, and please them in all things, not answering againe,

10 Neither pykers, but that they shew all good faithfulness, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

11 * For that grace of God, that bringeth saluation vnto all men, hath appeared,

12 And teacheth vs that wee should denie vngodlinesse and worldly lusts, and that we should liue soberly and righteously and godly in this present world.

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of that glorie of that mightie God, and our Saviour Iesus Christ,

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs to see a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake, and exhort, and conuince with all aueritie. See that no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

1 He willeth that all generall be put in minde to reuerence such as be in authority: 2 That they remember their former life, and attribute all iustification to grace: 3 *And if any trabbler withstand these things,* 4 he willeth that he be troubled.

Rom. 13. 1.
1. pet. 2. 13.

Put them in remembrance that they * bee subiect to the Principalities and powers, and that they bee obedient, and ready to euerie good worke,

2 That they speake euill of no man, that they bee no fighters, but softe, shewing all meeknesse vnto all men.

1. Cor. 6.
22.

3 * For wee our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceiued, seruing the lustes and diuers pleasures, liuing in maliciouseesse, and enuie hatefull, and hating one another.

4 But when that beautilfullie and that loue of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 * Not

TO PHILEMON.

5 *Not by the workes of righteousness, which we had done, 2.Tim.1.9
but according to his mercie bee saued vs, by the walhing of the
new birth and the reneuing of the holy Ghost,

6 Which he shed ou vs abundantly, through Iesus Christ our
Saviour,

7 That we, being iustified by his grace, should be made heires
according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This is a true saying, and these things I will thou shouldst
asfrme, that they which haue beleueed God, might bee carefull to
shew forth good workes. These things are good and profitable
vnto men.

9 *But stay foolish questions, & genealogies and contentions, 2.Tim.1.4
and braulings about the Law: for they are vnprofitable and vaine. and 4.7

10 Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twise admonitio, 2.Tim.2.23

11 Knowing that he that is such, is peruered, and sinneth, being
damned of his owne kse.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, bee di-
ligent to come to mee vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined
there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Lawe, and Apollos on
their iourney diligently, that they lacke nothing.

14 And let ours also learne to shew forth good workes for
necessary vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are wi h me, salute thee. Greete them that loue vs
in the faith. Grace be with you all, Amen.

¶ To Titus, elect the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians,
written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF PAYL

to Philemon.

1 Paul handling a base and small matter, yet according to his ma-
ner mounteth aloft vnto God. 8 Sending againe to Philemon
his va;abond and sheeuish seruant, he intreateth pardon for him,
and ver; greatly preacheth of Christian equitie.



AVL a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and our brother
Timotheus, vnto Philemon our deare friend, and
fellow-helper,

2 And to our deare s;ster Apphia, and to Ar-
chippus our fellow souldier, and to the Church that
is in thine house:

3 Grace be with you, and peace from God our Father, and
from the Lord Iesus Christ,

a I * give

TO PHILEMON.

1. Thes. 1. 2.
2. thes. 1. 3.

4 I * giue thanks to my God, making mention alwayes of thee in my prayers,

5 (When I heare of thy loue and faith which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saints)

6 That the fellowship of thy faith may be made effectual, and that what euer good thing is in you through Christ Iesus, may be known.

7 For we haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because by thee, brother, the Saints bowels are comforted.

8 Wherefore, though I be very hold in Christ to commend thee that which is conuenient,

9 Yet for Ioues sake I rather beseech thee, though I bee as I am, euen Paul aged and euen now a prisoner for Iesus Christ.

Colos. 4. 9.

10 I beseech thee for my Ioune * Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable, but now profitable both to thee and to me.

12 Whom I haue sent againe; thou therefore receive him, that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would haue retained with mee, that in thy stead he might haue ministered vnto me in the bonds of the Gospel.

14 But without thy mind would I doe nothing: that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessitie, out willingly.

15 It may be that he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldst receive him for ever,

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant. *turne as* a brother beloued peculiarly to mee: show much more then vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If therefore thou count our things common, receive him as my selfe.

18 If he hath hurt thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine accounts.

19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine owne hand: I will recompense it, about I doe not say to thee, that thou owest more: nor vnto me euen thine owne selfe.

20 Yea, rather let me obtaine this pleasure of thee, in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord.

21 Trusting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt doe euen more then I say.

22 Moreover, alio prepare me lodging: for I trust through your prayers I shall be freely giuen vnto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus,

24 Marcus,

C H A P. I.

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas and Luke, my fellow helpers.

25 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ be with your spirit,
AMEN.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, and sent by Onesimus a seruant.

¶ THE EPISTLE TO THE Hebrews.

The drift and end of this Epistle, is to shewe that Iesus Christ the Sonne of God both God and man, is that true eternall and only Prophet, King, and high Priest, that was shadowed by the figures of the old Law, and is now in deed exhibited: of whom the whole Church ought to be taught, gouerned, and sanctified.

C H A P. I.

1 To shewe that the doctrine which Christ brought is most excellent, in that it is the knitting up of all prophecies, 4 hee aduanceth him above the Angels: 10 And proueth by diuers testimonies of Scripture, that he farre passeth all other.



T sundrie times and in diuers maners God spake in the old time to our fathers by the Prophets: in these last dayes he hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne,

2 Whome he hath made heire of all things, by whom also he made the worlds,

3 * Who being the brightnesse of the glory, and the ingraued forme of his person, & bearing vp all things by his mightie word, hath by himselfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie in the highest places, Col. 1. 15

4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as he hath obtained a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels said he at any time, * Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee? and againe, * I will bee his Father, and he shall be my Sonne? Chap. 3. 5.
psal. 2. 7
2. Sam. 7
14. 1. chr.
22. 10
Psal. 97. 7
Psa. 104. 4
Psal. 45. 7

6 And againe, when he bringeth in his first begotten Sonne into the world, he saith, * And let all the Angels of God worship him.

7 And of the Angels he saith, * He maketh the Spirits his messengers, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But vnto the Sonne he sayeth, * O God, thy throne is for euer and euer: the scepter of thy kingdom is a scepter of righteousness.

9 Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God euen thy God, hath anoynted thee with the oyle of gladnesse above thy fellowes.

TO THE HEBREWES.

Psal. 102.
25.

10 And, * Thou, Lorde, in the beginning hast established the earth, and the heauens are the workes of thine hands,

11 They shall perish, but thou doest remaine: and they all shall waxe old as dooth a garment,

12 And as a vesture shalt thou folde them vp, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shall not faile.

Psal. 110.
1. 1. cor.
15. 25.
chap. 10
12, 13.

13 Vnto which also of the Angels said he at any time, * Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole?

14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for their sakes, which shalbe heires of saluation?

CHAP. II.

1 Therefore he intercesseth, that good heede must be giuen to Christs doctrine: 2 And he setteth him out vnto vs euen as our brother in our flesh, that wee may with a good will yeeld vp our selues vnto him.

Wherefore wee ought diligently to giue heede to the thing: which we haue heard, least at any time we runne out.

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast, & euery transgression and disobedience received a iust recompence of reward,

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be preached by the Lord, and afterward was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him,

2. cor. 16
20.

4 * God bearing witness thereto both with signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, and giftes of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will?

5 For he hath not put in subiection vnto the Angels the world to come, whereof we speake.

1. thes. 8. 6.

6 But * one in a certaine place witnessed, saying, What is man, that thou shouldst be mindfull of him? or the sonne of man, that thou wouldst consider him?

7 Thou madest him a little inferior to the Angels: thou crownest him with glory and honour, and hast set him above the workes of thine hands.

1. cor. 15
27.

8 * Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feete, And in that hee hath put all things in subiection vnder him, he left nothing that should not be subiect vnto him. But we yet see not all things subdued vnto him.

1. thes. 2. 8.

9 But we see Iesus crowned with glory and honour, * which was made a little inferior to the Angels, through the suffering of death, that by Gods grace he might taste death for all men.

10 For it became him, for whome are all these things, and by whom are all these things, seeing that hee brought many children vnto

C H A P. III.

vnto glory, that he should consecrate the Prince of their saluation through afflictions.

11 For he that sanctified, and they which are sanctified, are all of one: wherefore he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, * I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the middes of the Church will I sing praises vnto thee. Psal. 12. 25.

13 And againe, * I will put my trust in him. And againe, * Behold here am I, and the children which God hath given me. Psal. 118. 2. & a. 8. 18.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himselfe likewise tooke part with them, that he might destroy * through death, him that had the power of death, that is the deuill, Heb. 2. 13. 14. 1. cor. 15 55.

15 And that he might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For he in no sort tooke on *him* the Angels nature, but he tooke on *him* the seede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behooued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might bee mercifull, and a faithfull high Priest in things concerning God, that he might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that he suffered, and was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

C H A P. III.

1 Now he sheweth how *slow* inferior? Moses is to Christ, 5. 6. *even so much as the seruant to the master and so he bringeth in certain exhortations and sheweth taken out of Dauid, 8. against such as either *slowly* resist, 12. or els are very slow to obey.*

Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly vocation, consider the Apostle and high Priest of our profession Christ Iesus:

2 Who was faithfull to him that hath appointed him, *even as * Moses was in all his house.* Numb. 12. 7.

3 For this man is counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded of some man, and he that hath build all things, is God.

5 Now Moses verily was faithfull in all his house as a seruant, for a witnesse of the things which should be spoken after.

6 But Christ is as the Sonne, ouer his owne house, whose house we are, if we holde fast that confidence and that reioycing of that hope vnto the end.

TO THE HEBREWES.

Chap. 4.
psal. 95. 8

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if yee shall
heare his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts as in the prouocation, according
to the day of the tentation in the wilderness,

9 Where your fathers tempted me, prouoked me, and saw my
workes fourtie yeeres long.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, & said They
were euer in their heart, neither haue they knowen my wayes.

11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, In they that enter into my rest,

12 Take heed, brethren, lest at any time there be in any of you an
euill heart, and vnfaithfull, to depart away from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another dayly, while it is called, To day,
lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfullnesse of saine.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe hure vnto
the end that beginning wherewith we are vnholden,

15 So long as it is said, To day if ye will heare his voyce, har-
den not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they heard prouoked him to anger, how-
beit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moyses.

Nam. 14.
37

17 But with whom was he displeased fourtie yeeres? Was he
not displeased with them that sinned, * whose carkeises fell in the
wildernesse?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his
rest, but vnto them, that obeyed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He toucheth exhortation with threatenings, lest they, euen as their
fathers were, be deprived of the rest offered vnto them, 11 but
that they endeavour to enter into it: 14 And so he beginneth to
intreate of Christs Priesthood.

Let vs feare therefore, lest at any time by forsaking the promise of
entering into his rest, any of you should seeme to be deprived.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them:
but the word that they heard profited not them, because it was not
mixed with faith, in those that heard it.

psal. 95.
11.

3 For we which haue beleueed doe enter into rest, as he said
to the other, * As I haue sworne in my wrath. If they shall enter
into my rest: although the workes were finished from the founda-
tion of the world.

Gen. 2.2.
Gen. 1. 5. 14

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this
wise, * And God did rest the seuenth day from all his workes.

5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing

C H A P. V.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entred not therein for vnbeliefes sake:

7 Again he appointed in David a certaine day, by To day, after so long a time, saying, as it is saide, * This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts. Chap 3.7

8 For if Iesus had given them rest, then would he not after this haue spoken of another day. Mea-
suring Jo-
hanna.

9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath also ceased from his owne workes, as God did from his.

11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, least any man fall after the same example of disobedience.

12 For the word of God is lively, and mighty in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, and cutteth through, even vnto the diuiding asunder of the soule and the spirit, and of the ioynts, and the marow, and is a discerner of the thoughts, and the intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and open vnto his eyes, with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that we haue a great high Priest, which is entred into heauen, *men* let vs the Sonne of God, let vs hold fast our profession.

15 For we haue not an high Priest, which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like out, yet without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore go boldly vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercie, and find grace to helpe in time of neede.

C H A P. V.

1 First he sheweth the doctrine of the high Priest: 5 Secondl, that Christ is appointed of God to be our high Priest, 7 and that he hath fulfilled all things bet wixt them.

For every high Priest is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that hee may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes,

2 Which is able sufficiently to haue compassion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, because that he also is compassed with infirmitie,

3 And for the same sake hee is bound to offer for sinnes, as well for his owne part, as for the peoples. 1. Chr. vi.
13. 10.

4 * And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but hee 23. 13.

TO THE HEBREWS.

that is called of God, as was Aaron.

Chap. 7. 5. 5 So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe this honour, to be made the high Priest, but he that said vnto him, * Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee, *came to him.*

Chap. 7. 17 6 As he also in another place speaketh, * Thou art a Priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec.

psal. 110. 4 7 Who in the daies of his flesh did offer vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying, and teares vnto him, that was able to saue him from death, & was also heard in that which he feared.

8 And though he were the Sonne, yet learned hee obedience, by the things which he suffered,

9 And being consecrate was made the authour of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him :

10 And is called of God an hie Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we haue many things to say, which are hard to be uttered, because ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when as concerning the time ye ought to be teachers, yet haue ye neede againe that we teach you what are the first principles of the word of God : and are become such as haue neede of milke, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milke, is inexpert in the word of righteousness, for he is a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are of age, which through long custome haue their wittes exercised to discerne both good and euill.

C H A P. VI.

1 He bricht toucheth the chaste chastitie of the Hebrewes, 6 and terrifieth them with seuerer threatenings : 10 hee stirreth them vp to labour in time to come for reward : 9 hee is peth well of them. 13 He alleugeth Abrahams example : 17 and compareth such that taketh hold on the word, 19 vnto an aure.

Therefore leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs be led forward vnto perfeccion, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith toward God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and laying on of hands, and of the resurrection from the dead, and of eternall iudgement,

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

Chap. 10. 4 * For it is impossible, that they which were once lightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and we made partakers of the holy Ghost,

26 mal. 5 And haue tasted of the good wordes of God, and of the powers

12 45.
3 ps. 2. 20

CHAP. VII.

powers of the world to come,

6 If they fall away, should be renewed againe by repentance : seeing they crucifie againe to themselues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing of God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and bryers, is reprobated, and is necie vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloned, we haue perswaded our selues better things of you, and such as accompany saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God is not vnrighteous, that hee should forget your worke, and labour of loue, which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministered vnto the Saints, and yet minister.

11 And wee desire that euery one of you shewe the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the end,

12 That yet be not slothfull, but followers of them which through faith and patience inherite the promises.

13 For when God made the promise to Abraham, because hee had no greater to sweare by, he sware by himselfe.

14 Saying * Surely I will abundantly blesse thee, and multiply thee marvellously.

15 And so after that he had taryed patiently, hee enioyed the promise.

16 For men verely sweare by him that is greater *then themselves*, and an othe for confirmation is among them an end of all strife.

17 So God willing more abundantly to shew vnto *us* heires of promise the stablesse of his counsell, bound himselfe by an othe,

18 That by two immutable things wherein it is vnpossible that God should lie, we might haue strong consolation, which haue our refuge to lay hold vpon that hope that is set before vs,

19 Which hope we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and steadfast, and it reacheth into that which is within the vail,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* Iesus, that is made an high Priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

2 He hath hitherto fixed them up to marke diuers what things are to be considered in Melchisedec, 15 wherein he is like vnto Christ. 20 Therefore the Law should give place to the Gospel.

For this Melchisedec * was King of Salem, the Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the

Gen. 12.2
and 17.4
and 22.17

Gen. 14
18.

TO THE HEBREWS.

laughter of the kings, and blessed him :

2 To whome also Abraham gaue the tithes of all things : who first is by interpretation King of righteousness : after that *he is also* King of Salem, that is, King of peace,

3 Without father, without mother, without kinred, and hath neither beginning of *his* dayes, neither end of life : but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer.

4 Now consider how great this man was, vnto whome euen the Patriarch Abraham gaue the tithes of the spoiles.

5 For verily they which are the children of Levi, which receiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a * commandement to take, according to the Law, tithes of the people (that is, of their brethren) though they came out of the loines of Abraham.

6 But hee whose kinred is not counted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of the greater.

8 And here men that die, receiue tithes : but there he receiveth *them*, of whome it is witnessed that he liueth,

9 And to say as the thing is, Levi also which receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loines of his father *Abraham*, when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection had bene by the Priesthood of the Levites (for vnder it the law was established to the people) what needed it furthermore, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not to be called after the order of Aaron ?

12 For if the Priesthood bee changed, then of necessity must there be a change of the Law.

13 For hee of whome these things are spoken, pertaineth vnto another tribe, whereof no man serued at the altar.

14 For it is euident, & our Lord sprung out of Iudah, concerning the which tribe Moses spake nothing touching the Priesthood.

15 And it is yet a more euident thing, because that after the similitude of Melchisedec, there is risen vp another Priest.

16 Which is not made *Priest* after the law of the carnal commandement, but after the power of the endlesse life.

17 For hee testifieth *thus*, *Thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For the commandement that went afore, is disannulled, because of the weakenesse thereof, and vnprofitablenesse.

19 For the Lawe made nothing perfite, but the bringing in of a better

Num. 18
21.

Chap. 5. 3.
Ps. 110. 4

C H A P. VIII.

better hope *made perfect*, whereby we draw neere vnto God.

20 And forasmuch as it is not without an othe (for these are made Priests without an othe:

21 But this is *made* with an othe by him that saide vnto him, *The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest (for *P/2, 11 c. 4* euer, after the order of Melchisedec)

22 By so much is Iesus made a suretie of a better Testament.

23 And among them many were made Priestes, because they were not suffered to endure, by the reason of death.

24 But this man, because hee endureth euer, hath a Priesthood which cannot passe from one to another.

25 Wherefore, he is able also perfectly to saue them that come vnto God by him, seeing hee euer liueth, to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high Priest it became vs to haue, *which is holy, harmlesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heauens:*

27 Which needeth not dayly as those high Priests to offer vp sacrifice, **first for his owne finnes, and then for the peoples: for that* *Leuit. 16* *11.* did he once, when he offered vp himselfe.

28 For the Law maketh men his Priests, which haue infirmity: but the worde of the othe that was since the Lawe, *maketh* the Sonne, who is consecrated for euermore

C H A P. VIII.

1 *To prove more certainly that the ceremonies of the Law are abrogated, he sheweth that they were appointed to serue the heauenly paterne. 8 He bringeth in the place of ieremie, 15 to proue the vaine intent of the old covenant.*

NOW of the things which wee have spoken, *this is the summe,* that we haue such an high Priest, that sitteth at the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in heauens,

2 And is a minister of the Sanctuary, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pigeth, and not man.

3 For every high Priest is ordained to offer both gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessitie, that this man should haue somewhat also to offer.

4 For he were not a Priest, if he were not on the earth, seeing there are Priests that according to the Law offer gifts,

5 Who serue vnto the paterne and shadow of heauenly things, as Moyses was warned by God, when hee was about to finish the Tabernacle. * So, said he, that thou make all things according to *Exo. 29* *40. 27.* the paterne, shewed to thee in the mount. *44.*

TO THE HERREWES.

6 But now our *high Priest* hath obtained a more excellent office, in as much as he is the Mediatour of a better Testament, which is established vpon better promises.

7 For if that first *Testament* had bene vnblameable, no place should haue bene sought for the second.

[*Exp. 10.*
[*10. 10.*
[*10. 10.*
[*10. 10.*
[*10. 10.*
[*10. 10.*

8 For in rebuking them, he saith, *Behold, the daies wil come, saith the Lord, when I shal make with the house of Israel, and with the house of Iuda a new Testament :

9 Not like the Testament that I made with their fathers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand, to leade them out of the land of Egypt: for they continued not in my Testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the Testament that I will make with the house of Israel, After those daies, saith the Lord, I will put my Lawes in their minde and in their heart I will write them, and I wil be their God, and they shal be my people.

11 And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnesse, and I will remember their finnes and their iniquities no more.

13 In this he saith a new *Testament*, he hath abrogate the old, know that which is disannulled and waxed old is ready to vanish away.

C H A P. IX.

10 Comparing the forme of the Tabernacle, 10 to the ceremonies of the Law, 11 vnto the truth set out in Christ, 12 he concludeth that now there is no more neede of another Priest, 24 because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled the duties vnder the new covenent.

Then the first Testament had also ordinances of religion, and a worldly Sanctuary.

2 For the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread, which *Tabernacle* is called the holy places.

3 And after the second vaile was the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all.

[*Exp. 17.*
[*10.*
[*10.*
[*10.*
[*10.*
[*10.*

4 Which had the golden censur, and the Arke of the Testament overlaid round about with golde, wherein the golden pot which had Manna, was and * Aarons rod that had budded, and the * tables of the Testament.

5 * And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seate: of which things we will not now speake particularly.

6 Now

CHAP. IX.

6 Now when these things were thus ordeined, the Priests went alwayes into the first tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice.

7 But into the second went the * hie Priest alone, once euery yeere, not without blood which he offered for himselfe, and for the ignorances of the people.

Exo 30.
10. leuit.
16 2.

8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that the way into the Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first tabernacle was standing.

9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein were offered gifts and sacrifices that could not make holy, concerning the conscience, him that did the seruice.

10 Which onely stood in meates and drinckes, and diuers wa shings, and carnall rites, which were inioyned, vntill the tyme of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an hie Priest of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is not of this building,

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calves: but by his owne blood entred he in once into the holy place, and obtained eternall redemption *for vs.*

13 * For if the blood of bulles and goates, and the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them that are vncleane, sanctifieth as touching the purifying of the flesh,

Leuit. 16.
17. num.
19 4.

14 How much more shal the * blood of Christ, which through the eternall spirit offered himselfe without fault to God, * purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God?

1 Pet. 1.
19. 1. ioh.
1. 7. reuel.

15 And for this cause is hee the Mediatour of the newe Testament, that through * death which was for the redemption of the transgressions that were in the former testament, they which were called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance.

1. 5.
Luke 1. 7.
Rom. 5 8.

16 For where a Testament is, there must be the death of him that made the Testament.

1. pet. 3.
18.

17 * For the Testament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is a liue.

Gal 3. 15.

18 Wherefore neither was the first ordeined without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to the people, according to the Law, he tooke the blood of calves and of goates, with water and purple wooll, and hysope, and sprinkled both the booke, and all the people,

20 * Saying, This is the blood of the Testament, which God hath appointed vnto you.

Exo 24 8.

21 Moreover, hee sprinkled likewise the Tabernacle with blood

blood

TO THE HEBREWES.

blood also and all the ministering vessels.

22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was then necessary, that the similitudes of heavenly things should be purified with such things: but the heavenly things themselves are purified with better sacrifices then are these.

24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places that are made with hands, which are similitudes of the true sanctuary: but is entered into very heauen, to appeare now in the sight of God for vs.

25 Not that he should offer himselfe often, as the high Priest entered into the Holy place every yeere with other blood.

26 (For then must he haue often suffered since the foundation of the world) but now in the end of the world hath he bene made manifest, once to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they shall once die, and after that cometh the iudgment:

Rom. 5.8. 28 So * Christ was once offered to take away the sinnes of many, and vnto them that looke for him, shall he appeare the second time without sinne vnto saluation.

1 pet. 3.18

C H A P. X.

1 He proueth that the sacrifices of the Law were imperfect, 2 because they were yearly renewed: 5 But that the sacrifice of Christ is one, and perpetuall, 6 he proueth by Dauid's testimony: 19 Then he addeth an exhortation, 29 and severely threatneth them that reject the grace of Christ. 36 In the ende he praeseth patience 38 that cometh of faith.

FOR the Law hauing the shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices, which they offer yeere by yeere continually, sanctifie the comers thereunto.

2 For would they not then haue ceased to haue bene offered, because that the offerers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance againe of sinnes every yeere.

4 For it is vnpossible that the blood of bulles and goates should take away sinnes.

Psal. 40.7 5 Wherefore when he cometh into the worlde, he saith, * Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not: but a body hast thou ordained me.

6 In burnt offerings, & sinne offerings thou hast had no pleasure.

7 Then I said, Loe I come (in the beginning of the booke it

C H A P. X.

is written of me) that I should doe thy will, O God.

8 Aboue, when he said, Sacrifice and offering, and burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou wouldest not haue, neither haddest pleasure therein (which are offered by the Law.)

9 Then said he, Loe, I come to doe thy will, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, *even* by the offering of the body of Iesus Christ *once made*.

11 And euery Priest standeth daily ministring, and oft times offereth one maner of offering, which can neuer take away sinnes :

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes, * sitteth for ever at the right hand of God,

13 And from henceforth tarieth, * till his enemies be made his footestoole.

14 For with one offering hath hee consecrated for ever them that are sanctified.

15 For the holy Ghost also beareth vs record, after that he had said before,

16 * This is the Testament that I will make vnto them after those daies, saith the Lord, I will put my lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I will write them,

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these things is, there is no more offering for sinne.

19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bold to enter into the Holy place,

20 By the new and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaille, that is, his flesh :

21 And seeing we haue an high Priest, which is ouer the house of God,

22 Let vs draw neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our hearts being pure from an euill conscience,

23 And washed in our bodies with pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope, without waivering, (for he is faithfull that promised)

24 And let vs consider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes.

25 Not forsaking the fellowship that we haue among our selues, as the maner of some is : but let vs exhort one another, and that so much the more, because ye see that the day draweth neere.

26 * For if we sinne willingly after that we haue received & acknowledged y^e truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes.

27 But

Chap. 1. 13.
Psa. 110. 2.
1. cor. 15.
25.
Chap. 1. 13.

Chap. 8. 8.
Iere. 31. 33.
rom. 11.
27.

Chap. 6. 4.

TO THE HEBREWES.

Dent. 19. 27 But a fearefull looking for of iudgement, and violent fire, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

15. mat. 28 He that despiseth Moses Law, dieth without mercy * vnder two, or three witnessess:

18. 16. 29 Of how much sorer punishment suppose ye shal he be worthy, which treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of God, and counteth the blood of the Testament as an unholy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and doth despite the spirit of grace?

John 8. 17. 30 For we know him that hath said, * Vengeance belongeth vnto me: I will recompence, saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.

2. Cor. 13. 1 31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of y^e liuing God.
32 Now call to remembrance the daies that are passed, in the which after yee had receiued light, yee endured a great fight in afflictions,

33 Partly while ye were made a pazing stocke both by reproches, and afflictions, and partly while yee became companions of them which were so tossed to and fro.

34 For both yee sorowed with me for my bonds, and suffered with ioy the spoyling of our goods: knowing in your selues how that ye haue in heauen a better, and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after ye haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promise.

37 For yet a very litle while, and he that shall come, will come, and will not tarie.

Heb. 2. 4 38 * Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if any withdraw himselfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him.

Rom. 1. 17. 39 But we are not they which withdraw our selues vnto perdition: but follow faith vnto the conseruation of the soule,

C H A P. X I.

1 He declineth in the whole Chapter, that the Fathers which from the beginning of the world were approued of God, attained saluation not other way then by faith, that the Jewes may know that by the same meane, they are knit vnto the Fathers in an holy union.

NOW faith is the ground of things which are hoped for, and the euidence of things which are not seene.

2 For by it our elders were well reported of.

Gen. 1. 1. 3 * Through faith we vnderstand that the world was ordeined by the word of God, so that the things which we see, are not made of things, which did appere,

C H A P. XI.

4 By faith Abel^{*} offered vnto God a greater sacrifice then Cain, by^{*} the which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts : by the which faith also hee beeing dead, yet speaketh. *Gen. 4. 4. Mat. 23 35.*

5 By faith was^{*} Enoch translated, that he should not see death: neither was he found : for God had translated him : for before hee was translated, he was reported of, that he had pleased God. *Gen. 5. 24*

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him : for he that cometh to God, must beleue that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him.

7 By faith ^{*}Noe beeing warned of God of the things which were as yet not seene, moued with reuerence, prepared the Arke to the saving of his household, through the which Arke hee condemned the world, and was made heire of the righteousness which is by faith. *Gen. 6. 19*

8 By faith ^{*}Abraham when he was called, obeyed God, to go out into a place, which he should afterward receive for inheritance, and he went out, not knowing whither he went. *Gen. 12. 4*

9 By faith he abode in the land of the promise, as in a strange country, as one that dwelt in tents with Isaac and Iacob, heires with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a citie having a foundation, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith ^{*}Sara also receiued strength to conceive seed, and was deliuered of a childe when shee was past age, because shee iudged him faithfull which had promised. *Cf. 17. 19. Gen. 21. 2.*

12 And therefore sprang there of one, even of one, which was dead, *for as* as the flakes of the skie in multitude, and as the sand of the sea shote which is innumerable.

13 All these died in faith, & receiued not the promises, but saw them afarre off, and beloued them, and receiued them thankfully, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seeke a country.

15 And if they had bene mindful of that country, from whence they came out, they had leisure to haue returned.

16 But now they desire a better, that is an heavenly : wherefore God is not ashamed of them to be called their God : for hee hath prepared for them a citie. *Gen. 22. 10.*

17 By faith ^{*}Abraham offered vp Isaac, w^{ch} en he was trye^d, & he that had receiued the promises, offered his only begotten sonne, *Gen. 22 12. 17. 18.*

18 (To whom it was said, ^{*}In Isaac shall thy seed be called) *27.*

19 For

TO THE HEBREWS.

19 For he considered that God was able to raise *him* vp even from the dead: from whence he received him also after a sort.

20 By faith * Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau, concerning things to come.

21 By faith * Jacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, and * *leaving* on the end of his laste, worshipped God.

22 By faith * Ioseph when he dyed, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel, & gave commandment of his bones.

23 By faith * Moses when he was borne, was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw he was a proper childe, neither feared they the * Kings commandment.

24 By faith * Moses when hee was come to age, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter,

25 And chose rather to suffer aduersitie with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sinne for a season,

26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ greater riches then the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnto the recompence of the rewarde.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, and feared not the fiercenesse of the king: for he endured, as he that saw him which is invisible.

28 Through faith he ordeined the * Passouer, & the effusion of blood, lest he that destroyed the first borne, should touch them.

29 By faith they * passed through y red sea as by dry land, which when the Egyptians had assayed to doe, they were swallowed vp.

30 By faith the * walles of Iericho fell downe after they were compassed about seven dayes.

31 By faith the harlot * Rahab perished not with them which obeyed not, when * she had received the spies peaceably.

32 And what shall I more say: for the time would be too short for me to tell of * Gedeon, of * Barac, and of * Sampson, and of * Iephth, also of David, and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

33 Which through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousness, obtained the promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weak were made strong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to flight the army of the aliants,

35 The women receiued their dead raised to life: other also were racked, and would not be deliuered, that they might receiue a better resurrection,

36 And others have bene trued by mockings and scourgings, yea, moreouer by bonds and prisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were hewen asunder, they were
tempt. d,

Gen. 27

28, 29.

Gen. 48

15.

Gen. 47

51.

Gen. 50

25.

Exo. 7. 2

alles 7. 20

Exo. 1. 16

Exo. 2. 11

Exo. 12

22.

Exo. 14

22.

7. 11. 6. 20

Josh. 6. 23

Josh. 2. 1

Judg. 6. 21

Judg. 4. 6

Judg. 13

24.

Judg. 11. 2

and 12. 7

C H A P. XII.

tempted, they were slaine with the sword, they wandred vp and downe in sheepes skinner, and in goates skinner, being destitute, afflicted and tormented :

38 Whom the world was not worthy of : they wandered in wildernesses, and mountaines, and denues, and caues of the earth.

39 And these all through faith obtained good report, and received not the promise,

40 God providing a better thing for vs, that they without vs should not be made perfect.

C H A P. XII.

1 He doth not onely by the example of the fathers before recited, exhort them to patience and constancie, 3 but also by the example of Christ. 11 That the chastenings of God cannot bee rightly understood by the outward sense of the flesh.

Wherefore,* let vs also, seeing that we are compassed with so great a cloude of witnesses, cast away euery thing that presseth downe & the sinne that hargeth so fall on, let vs runne with patience the race that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the author & finisher of our faith, who for the ioy that was set before him, endured the crosse, & despised the shame, and is set at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 Consider therefore him that endured such speaking against sinners, least ye should be wearied, and faint in your minds.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, thiuing against sinne,

5 And ye haue forgotten the consolation, which speaketh vnto you as vnto children,* My sonne, despise not the chastening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him,

6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth : and he scourgeth every sonne that he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God offereth himselfe vnto you as vnto sonnes : for what sonne is it whom the father chasteneth not?

8 I. therefore ye be without correction, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes.

9 Moreover we haue had the fathers of our bodies which corrected vs, & we gaue them reuerence : should we not much rather be in subiection vnto the Father of spirits, that we might live?

10 For they verely for a few daies chastened vs after their own pleasure : but he chasteneth vs for our profit, that we might bee partakers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to bee joyous, but grievous : but afterward it bringeth the quiet fruit of righteousness, vnto them which are thereby exercised.

Rom. 6. 4.
Colos. 3. 8.
Ephes. 4. 24
1. pet. 2. 1

Pro. 3. 11

TO THE HERREWES.

Rom. 12
18.

12 Wherefore lift vp *your* hands which hang downe, and *your* weake knees,

13 And make straight stappes vnto your leete. lest that which is halting be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

14 * Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without the which no man shall see the Lord.

15 Take heede that no man fall away from the grace of God: let no roote or bitterness spring vp and trouble *you*, lest thereby many be defiled.

Gen. 25.
35.
Gen. 27.
38.

16 Let there be no fornication, or prophane person: as * Esau, which for one portion of meate sold his birthright.

17 * For ye know how that afterward also when he would have inherited the blessing, he was reiectid: for hee found no place to repentance, though he sought that *with* with teares.

Exod. 19
16.

18 For ye can not come vnto the * mount that might be touched, nor vnto burning fire nor to blacknes & darkness, & tempest,

Exod. 20
19.

19 Neither vnto the sound of a trumpet, & the voice of words which they that heard it, excused themselves, * that the worde should not be spoken to them any more.

Ex. 4. 19
22.

20 For they were not able to abide that which was commanded, * Yet though a beast touch the mountaine, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart:

21 And so terrible was the sight which appeared, that Moses sayd, I feare and quake.)

22 But yee are come vnto mount Sion, and to the citie of the liuing God, the celestia! Hierusalem, and to the company of innumerable Angels,

23 And to the assembly and congregation of the first borne which are written in heauen, and to God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust and perfect men,

24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the newe Testament, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not which refused him, that spake on earth: much more shall we not escape if we turre away from him, that *speakes* from heauen.

1. Pet. 3. 10

26 Whole voice then thooke the earth, & now hath declared, saying, * Yet once more will I shake, not the earth onely, but also heauen.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things which are shaken as of those things, which are made *not* shake, that the things which are not shaken may remaine.

28 Where

C H A P. XIII.

28 Wherefore seeing we receive a kingdome which cannot be shaken, let vs haue grace whereby we may serue God, that we may please him with reuerence and feare.

29 For * euen our God is a consuming fire.

C H A P. XIII.

1 He directeth good. *lesus* is not only for *matters*, 7 but also for *doctrine*.

TEt * brotherly loue continue.

2 * Be not forgetfull to entertaine strangers: for thereby some haue * receiued Angels into their houses vnuwares.

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as though ye were bound with them: and them that are in affliction, as if yee were also afflicted in the body.

4 Mariage is honourable among all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnes, and be content with those things that ye haue, for he hath said,

6 * I will not faile thee, neither forsake thee.

7 So that we may boldly say, * The Lord is my helper, neither will I feare what man can doe vnto me.

8 Remember them which haue the oversight of you, which haue declared vnto you the word of Gods: whose faith follow, considering what hath bene the end of their conuersation. Iesus Christ yestern day, and to day, the same also is for euer.

9 Be not caried about with diuers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing if the heart be stablished with grace, and not with meats, which haue not profited the that haue bin occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar whercof they haue no authoritie to eate which serue in the Tabernacle.

11 * For the bodies of those beasts whose blood is brought vnto holy place by his Priest for sin, are burnt without the campe.

12 Therefore euen Iesus that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs goe forth to him therefore out of the campe, bearing his reproch.

14 * For here haue we no continuing citie: but wee seeke one to come.

15 Let vs therefore by him offer the sacrifice of praise alwayes to God, that is, the * fruite of the lips, which confesse his Name.

16 To doe good, and to distribute forget not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the oversight of you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue

Heb. 12.

Rom. 12.

10.

1. pet. 4. 8.

Gen. 18. 2.

and 19. 2.

Job. 1. 5.

Psal. 118.

6.

Leu. 4. 11.

and 6. 30.

Ex. 26. 27.

Mich. 2.

10.

Heb. 14. 3.

I A M E S.

accounts, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: for wee are assured that we haue a good conscience in all things, desiring to liue honestly.

19 And I desire you somewhat the more earnestly, that yee so doe, that I may be restored to you more quickly.

20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, the great shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting Covenant,

21 Make you perfect in all good works, to do his will, working in you that which is pleasant in his sight through Iesus Christ, to whom be praise for euer and euer, Amen.

22 I beseech you also brethren, suffer the words of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in few words.

23 Know that our brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whom (if he come shortly) I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the oversight of you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all, A M E N.

¶ Written to the Ebrewes from Italy, and sent by Timotheus.

THE GENERALL EPISTLE

of Iames.

CHAP. I.

¶ He entreateth of patience, & of faith, to and of slowlinesse of minde in such men. 13 That tentations come not of God for our euill.

27 because he is the author of all goodnesse. 28 In what manner the word of life must be receiued.



Iames a seruant of God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue Tribes, which are scattered abroad, salutation.

2 My brethren, count it exceeding ioy, when ye fall into diuers tentations,

3 * Knowing that the trying of your faith bringeth forth patience,

4 And let patience haue her perfect worke, that yee may be perfect and entier, lacking nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wiſdome, let him aske of God, which giveth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shall be given him.

6 * But let him aske in faith and waver not: for he that wavereth, is like a wane of the sea, tost of the winde, and caried away.

7 Neither

3. i. 7. 3.

2. i. 7. 7.

2. i. 7. 7.

2. i. 7. 7.

2. i. 7. 7.

2. i. 7. 7.

CHAP. I.

7 Neither let that man thinke that hee shall receiue any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree reioyce in that he is exalted:

10 Again hee that is rich, in that hee is made low: for as the flower of the grasse, shall he * vanish away.

11 For as when the sunne riseth with heat then the grasse withereth, and the flower falleth away, and the goodly shape of it perissheth: euen so shall the rich man wither away in all his wayes.

12 * Blessed is the man that endureth temptation, for when hee is tryed, hee shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with euil, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But every man is tempted, when hee is drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and is enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Erre not, my deare brethren,

17 Every good giuing, and every perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his owne will begate he vs with the word of truth, that we should be as the first fruites of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my deare brethren, * let every man be swift to heare, slowe to speake, and slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man doeth not accomplish the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthines, and superfluitie of malitiousnesse, and receiue with meekenesse the word that is grafted in you, which is able to saue your soules.

22 * And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any heare the word, and doe it not, hee is like vnto a man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glasse.

24 For when he hath considered himselfe, he goeth his way, and forgetteth immediately what manner of one he was.

25 But who so looketh in the perfect Law of libertie, and continueth therein, he not being a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke shall be blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seemeth religious, & refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, that mans religion is vaine.

7/11.40.6.

1. pet. 1. 24

Job. 5. 17.

Pro. 17. 2.

Mat. 7 21.

Rom. 2 13.

I A M E S.

27 Pure religion and vndehtled before God, euen the Father, is this, to visite the fatherlesse, and widowes in their aduersitie, and keepe himselfe vnspotted of the world.

C H A P. II.

1 He saith, that to haue respect of persons is not agreeable to Christi-
an faith. 14 which to professe in words is not enough, vntlesse
15 we shew it also in deeds of mercie and charitie, 21 after the
example of Abraham.

*Leuit. 19.
15. deu. 1
17. and
16. 19.
pro. 24.
23.*

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus
Christ in * respect of persons.

2 For if there come into your companie a man with a golde
ring, and in goodly apparell, and there come also a poore man in
vile raiment,

3 And ye haue respect to him that weareth the gay clothing,
and say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the
poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footstoolle,

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of
euill thoughts?

5 Hearken, my beloned brethren, hath not God chosen the
poore of this world, *that they should be rich in faith,* and heires of
the kingdome which he promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Do not the rich oppresse you
by tyrannie, & doe not they draw you before the iudgement seats?

7 Doe not they blaspheme the worthy Name after which ye
be named?

8 But if ye fulfill the royall Law, according to the Scripture,
which saith, Thou shalt loue thy neighbor as thy selfe, ye doe well.

9 But if ye regarde the persons, ye commit sinne, and are reba-
ked of the Law, as transgressours.

10 For whosoener shall keepe the whole Law, and yet faileth
in one point, he is guiltie of all.

11 For he that said, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, said also,
Thou shalt not kill. Now though thou dost none adulterie, yet if
thou killest, thou art a transgressour of the Law.

12 So speake yee, and so doe, as they that shalbe iudged by the
Law of libertie.

13 For there shalbe condemnation mercilesse to him that shew-
eth not mercie, and mercie reioyceth against condemnation.

14 What auaileth it my brethren, though a man saith hee hath
faith, when he hath no workes? can that faith saue him?

15 For if a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute of dayly
foode,

C H A P. III.

16 And one of you say vnto the, Depart in peace: warme your selues, & fill your bellies: notwithstanding, ye giue them not those things which are needfull to the body, what helpeth it?

17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no workes, is dead in it selfe.

18 But some man might say, Thou hast the faith, and I haue workes: shew me thy faith out of thy workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou believest that there is one God: thou doest wel: the devils also beleue it, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that the faith without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, * when he offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

Gen. 22.

22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought with the workes? and through the workes was the faith made perfect.

10.

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, * Abraham beleued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteounesse: and he was called the friend of God.

Gen. 15. 6.

rom. 4. 3.

Galat. 3. 6

24 Ye see then how that of workes a man is iustified, and not of faith onely.

25 Likewise also was not * Rahab the harlot iustified through workes, when she had receiued the messengers, and sent them out another way?

Ios. 2. 1.

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith without workes is dead.

C H A P. III.

3 To shew that a Christian man must gouerne his tongue with the bridle of faith and charite, 9 he declareth the committes and mischiefs that ensue thercof: 15 and how such mans wife cometh after it from heauen.

Must then, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receiue the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things we sinne all: If any man sinne not in word, he is a perfect man, and able to bridle all the body.

Or, sup-
ble.

3 Beholde, we put bittes into the horses mouthes, that they should obey vs, and we turne about all their body.

4 Behold also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small rudder, whither soeuer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, & boasteth of great things: behold how great a thing a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is fire, ~~yea~~ a world of wickednesse: so is the

tongue

tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole bodie, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For the whole nature of beasts, and of birds, & of creeping things, and things of the sea is tamed, and hath been tamed of the nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame. *It is* an vnruely euil, full of deadly poyson.

9 Therewitha blesse wee God euen the Father, and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountaine send forth at one place sweete water and bitter?

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, bring forth Oliues, either: a vinefigs? so can no fountaine make both salt water and sweete.

13 Who is a wise man and indued with knowledge among you? let him shew by good conuersation his workes in meekenes of wisdom.

14 But if you haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be liars against the truth.

15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensuall and deuillish.

16 For where enuying and strife is, there is sedition, and all manner of euill workes.

17 But the wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be intreated, full of mercie and good suites, without grudging and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He reckoneth vp the mischiefs that procede of the workes of the flesh. 7 He exhorteth to humilitie, 8 and to purge the heart: 9 troupspide, 10 backbiting, 14 and the forgiveness of our wrongs.

FROM whence are waies & contentions among you? are they not hence, *euen* of your pleasures, that fight in your members?

2 Ye lust, and have not: ye enue, & desire inmoderately, & can not obtaine: ye fight & war, and get nothing, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske, & receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures.

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know yee not that the amitie of the world is the enimitie of God? Whosoever therefore will

be

C H A P. V.

be a friend of the world, maketh him selfe the enemy of God.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after euill?

6 But the Scripture offereth more grace, and therefore sayth, * God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

7 * Submit your selues to God: resist the deuill, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw neere to God, and he wil draw neere to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purge your hearts ye double minded.

9 Suffer afflictions, and sorrow ye, and weepe; let your laughter be turned into mourning, and your ioy into heauinesse.

10 * Cast downe your selues before the Lord, and hee will lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another, brethren. He that speaketh euill of his brother, or he that condemneth his brother, speaketh euill of the Law, and condemneth the Law: and if thou condemnest the Law, thou art not an observer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one Lawgiuer, which is able to saue, and to destroy. * Who art thou that iudgest another man?

13 Goe to now, ye that say, To day or to morow we will goe into such a citie, and continue there a yeece, and buy and sell, and get gaine.

14 (And yet yee cannot tell what shall bee to morrow. For what is your life? It is enen a vapour that appeareth a little time, and afterward vanisheth away)

15 For that we ought to say, * If the Lord will, and, If wee live, we will doe this or that.

16 But ye reioice in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore, to him that knoweth how to doe well, and doth it not, to him it is sinne.

C H A P. V.

Hee threatneth the rich with Gods seuerer iudgement for their pride, 7 that the poore hearing the miserable ende of the rich, 8 may patientl: beare afflictions, 11 as Job did, 14 enen in their distresses.

GO to now, ye rich men: weepe and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupt, and your garments are motheaten.

3 Your gold and siluer is cankered, and the rust of them shalbe a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesh, as it were fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped your fields,

Pro. 3. 34.
1. pet. 5. 5
Eph. 4. 27

1. Pet. 5. 6

Rom. 14.

1. Cor. 4.
19.

JAMES.

fields (which is of you kept back by fraud) cryeth, and the cries of them which have reaped, have entred into the ears of the Lord of Hostes.

5 Ye have liued in pleasure on the earth, and in wantonnesse. Ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned ~~and~~ have killed the Iust, and he hath not resisted you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren vnto the coming of the Lord. Beholde, the husbandman waiteth for the precious tyme of the earth, and hath long patience: for it, vntill he receiue the former, and the latter raine.

8 Be yee also patient therefore and settle your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nere.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest yee bee condemned: behold, the iudge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an example of suffering aduersitie, & of long patience, which haue spoken in the Name of the Lord.

11 Behold, we count them blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue knowen what end the Lord ~~was~~ ^{is}. For the Lord is very pitifull and mercifull.

Mat. 5. 34

12 But he, ore all things, my brethren, * sweare not, neither by heauen, nor by earth nor by any other othe: but let your yea, bee yea, and ~~our~~ ^{your} nay nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merry? Let him sing.

Mat. 6. 13

14 Is any sicke among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray for him, and anoint him with * oyle in the Name of the Lord.

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shall bee forgiven him.

16 Acknowledge your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man availeth much, if it be seruent.

1 Kin. 17

1. and 18.

45.

Luke 4. 25.

17 * Elias was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and hee prayed earnestly that it might not raine, and it rained not on the earth for three yeres and sixe moneths

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought forth her fruite.

Mat. 11. 18, 19

19 Brethren, * if any of you haue erred from the truth, and some man hath conuerted him,

CHAP. I.

30 Let him knowethat hee which hath converted the sinners from going astray out of his way, shall save a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of finnes.

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENE.

all of Peter.

CHAP. I.

1 He exhorteth Gods mercie shewed in Christ, 7 which wee say
hath by faith, and possesse through hope: to whom the Prop-
hets foretold. 13 He exhorteth 15 to renounce the world,
23 and their former life, and for wholly yet to encline to G d.

Peter an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, to the
strangers that dwell here & there throughout Pon-
tus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of
God the Father vnto sanctification of the Spirit,
through obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ,
Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you,

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
which according to his abundant mercie hath begotten vs against
vnto a lively hope by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance immortall and undefiled, and that wither-
eth not, reserved in heaven for vs,

5 Which are kept by the power of God through faith vnto
salvation, which is prepared to be shewed in the last time.

6 Wherein ye reioyce, though now for a season (if neede re-
quire) ye are in heavinesse, through manifold tentations,

7 That the trial of your faith, being much more precious then
gold that perisheth (though it be tried wth fire) might be found vnto
your praise, and honour and glory at the appearing of Iesus Christ:

8 Whom ye have not seene, and yet love him, in whom now
though ye see him not yet doe you beleue, and reioyce with ioy
unspeakable and glorious,

9 Receiuing the end of your faith, even the salvation of your
soules. Or, ye-
waril,

10 Of the which salvation the Prophets have inquired and fear-
ed, which prophesied of the grace that should come vnto you,

11 Searching when or what time the Spirit which testified be-
fore of Christ which was in them, should declare the sufferings that
should come vnto Christ, and the glory that should follow,

12 Vnto whom it was reveiled, that not vnto themselves, but
vnto vs they should manifest the things, which are nowe shewed

vnto

I PETER.

vnto you by them which haue preached vnto you the Gospel by the holy Ghost sent downe from heauen, the which things the Angels desire to behold.

13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your minde: bee sober, and trust perfectly on that grace that is brought vnto you, in the reuelation of Iesus Christ,

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues vnto the former lusts of your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you, is holy, so bee yee holy in * all maner of conuersation,

16 Because it is written. * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And if yee call him Father, which without * respect of person iudgeth according to every mans worke, passe the time of your dwelling here in feare,

18 Knowing that yee were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and golde, from your vaine conuersation, receiued by the traditions of the fathers,

19 * But with the precious blood of Christ, as of the Lambe vndefiled, and without spot.

20 Which was ordeined before the foundation of the world, but was declared in the last times for your sakes,

21 Which by his meanes doe beleue in God that raised him from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Having purified your soules in obeying the truth through the spirit, * to loue brotherly without fairing, lone one another with a pure heart feruently,

23 Being borne anew, not of mortall seede, but of immortall, by the word of God, who lueth and endureth for euer.

24 * For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man is as the flower of grasse. The grasse withereth and the flower falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the word which is preached among you.

CHAP. II.

1 Hereafter with the new borne in faith, to leaue their first answere: like to the former: 6. and lest their faith should faile, he bringeth in that which was foretold touching Christ. 11. Then hee willeteth them to be obedient to Magistrates, 21. and that they patiently beare aduersitie after Christs example.

Wherefore * laying aside all maliciousnesse and all guile, and dissimulation and enuie, and all euill speaking,

As new borne babes desire the sweete milke of the word, that

Luk. 1. 75.

Leuit. 11.

44.

and 19. 2.

an 120. 7.

Dint. 10.

17.

70. 2. 11.

galat. 2. 6.

1. Cor. 6.

20.

and 7. 25.

heb. 9. 14.

1. ioh. 1. 7.

1. ioh. 1. 5.

2. ioh. 1. 6.

25.

ephe. 3. 9.

colof. 1. 26.

2. tim. 1.

10.

titus 1. 2.

Cha. 2. 17.

70. 2. 10.

ephe. 4. 2.

1. ioh. 4. 6.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

1. ioh. 1. 10.

CHAP. II.

that yee may growe thereby,

3 Because ye haue tasted that the Lord is bountifull.

4 To whome comming as vnto a liuing stone disallowed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 Yee also as liuely stones be made a spirituall house, an holy * Priesthood to offer vp spirituall sacrifices acceptable to God by Iesus Christ. *Reue. 1. 6*

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the Scriptures, * Behold, I put in Sion a chiefe corner stone elect and precious: and he that belieueth therein, shall not be ashamed. *1sa. 28. 16 Rom. 9. 33.*

7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is precious: but vnto them which be disobedient, * the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, *1sa. 11. 8. 22.*

8 And a * stone to stumble at and a rocke of offence, euen to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, vnto the which thing they were euen ordained. *1sa. 21. 42.*

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall * Priesthood, an holy nation, a people set at libertie, that ye should shew forth the vertues of him that hath called you out of darknesse into his marvellous light. *Acts 4. 11. 7. 14. 9. 33. E. 10. 12. 9.*

10 * Which in time past were not a people, yet are now the people of God: which in time past were not vnder mercie: but now haue obtained mercie. *Hose. 2. 23. Rom. 9. 25.*

11 Dearely beloved, I beseech you, as strangers and pilgrims, * abstaine from fleshly lusts, which fight against the soule, *Rom. 13. 14.*

12 * And haue your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that they which speake euil of you as of euill doers, may by your good workes which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of visitation. *Galat. 3. 8. 1. 16.*

13 * Therefore submit your selues vnto all maner ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it bee vnto the King, as vnto the superiour, *Mat. 4. 16. Rom. 13. 1.*

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent of him, for the punishment of euill doers, and for the prayse of them that doe well.

15 For so is the will of God, that by well doing yee may put to silence the ignorance of the foolish men,

16 As free, and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke of maliciousnesse, but as the seruants of God. *Chap. 1. 22*

17 Honour all men: loue brotherly fellowship: feare God: honour the King. *Rom. 12. 10.*

18 * Seruants, bee subiect to your masters with all feare, not onely to the good and courteous, but also to the froward. *Eph. 5. 6. Col. 3. 22.*

19 For

I P E T E R.

2. Cor. 7.
10.

19 *For this is thanke worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure griefe, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what prayse is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults yee take it patiently: but and if when ye doe well, yee suffer wrong and take it patiently, this is acceptable to God.

21 For herunto ye are called: for Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an ensample that ye should follow his steps.

74. 55. 9.
2. Joh. 5. 5.

22 *Who did no sinne, neither was there guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when hee was reviled, reviled not againe: when hee suffered, he threatned not, but committed it to him that judgeth righteously.

1Pe. 2. 23. 5.
mai 8. 17.

24 *Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the tree, that we being dead to sinne, should live in righteousness: by whose stripes yee were healed.

25 For yee were as sheepe going astray: but are now returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

C H A P. III.

1 That Christian women should not contemne their husbands though they be infidels, 5 bee firm in examples of good women, 8 Generall exhortations, 14 patient. 17 beare persecutions, 15 and boldly to reeld a reason of their faith. 18 Christ's example.

Colof. 3. 18
ephe. 5. 22.

Likewise *let the wines be subiect to their husbands, that even they which obey not the word, may without the worde bee wonne by the conversation of the wines,

2 While they behold your pure conversation, which is wth feare

1. Tim. 2. 9

3 *Whose apparelling let it not bee outward, with broided haire, and gold put about, or in putting on of apparell:

4 But let it bee the hid man of the heart, which consisteth in the incorruption of a mecke and quiet spirit, which is before God a thing much set by.

5 For euen after this maner in time past did the holy women which trusted in God, tire themselves, and were subiect to their husbands.

Gen. 18.
32.

6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, * & called him Sir: whose daughters yee are, whiles yee doe well, not being afraid of any terror.

1. Cor. 7. 3.

7 *Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessell, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not interrupted.

8 Finally, be ye al of one minde: one suffer with another: lone as brethren: be pitifull: be courteous,

9 *Not

C H A P. III.

9 *Not tending euill for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwise blesse, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should be heires of blessing.

10 *For if any man long after life, and to see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his lippes that they speake no guile,

11 *Let himeschew euill, and doe good: let him seeke peace, and follow after it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous, and his eares are open vnto their prayers: and the face of the Lord is against them that doe euill.

13 And who is it that will harme you, if ye follow that which is good?

14 *Notwithstanding blessed are ye, if ye suffer for righteousnesse sake. *Yea, feare not their feare, neither be troubled.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready alwayes to giue an answer to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and reuerence,

16 Having a good conscience, that when they speake euill of you as of euill doers, they may be ashamed, which slander your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better (if the will of God be so) that yee suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

18 *For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, and was put to death concerning the flesh, but was quickened by the Spirit.

19 By the which hee also went, and preached vnto the spirits that are in prison.

20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once by long suffering of God abode in the dayes of *Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein few, that is, eight soules, were saved in the water.

21 Whereof the baptisme that now is answering that figure, (which is not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demanding which a good conscience maketh to God) sa- ueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus Christ,

22 Which is at the right hand of God, gone into heauen, to whom the Angels, and powers, and might are subiect.

C H A P. III.

1 He bringeth in Christs example, and applieth it, 6 to the mortifying of the flesh, 8 (the iustly commending charitie: 12 And so exhorteth of patience. 17 That it is necessary that correction begin at the Church.

Forasmuch

L. PETER.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde, *which is*, that hee which hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sinne,

2 That he henceforward should liue (as much time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lusts of men, but after the will of God.

*Ephes 4.
22.*

3 * For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time past of the life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnesse, lusts, drunkennesse, in gluttony, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein it seemeth to them strange, that ye run not wth them vnto the same excesse of riot: *therefore* speake they euill of you,

5 Which shall geue accounts to him, that is ready to iudge quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpose was the Gospel preached also vnto the dead, that they might be condemned, according to men in the flesh, but might liue according to God in the spirit.

7 Now the end of all things is at hand. Be yee therefore sober, and watching in prayer.

*1^o. 10.
12.*

8 But aboue all things haue seruent loue among you: * for loue shall cover the multitude of sinnes.

*Rom. 12.
13 helr.*

9 Be ye * haiberous one to another without grudging.

13. 2.

10 * Let euery man as he hath receined the gift, minister [&] same one to another, as good disposers of the manifold grace of God.

Rom. 12. 6

phil. 2. 14

11 If any man speake, *let him speake* as the words of God. If any man minister, *let him doe it* as of the ability which God ministreth that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom is praise and dominion for ever and ever, Amen.

12 Dearly beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery trial, which is among you to proue you, as though some strange thing were come vnto you:

Mal. 5. 10.

13 But reioyce, inasmuch as yee are partakers of Christs sufferings, that when his glory shal appeare ye may be glad and reioice.

14 * If yee be railed vpon for the Name of Christ, blessed are yee: for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth vpon you *which* on their part is euill spoken of: but on your part is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderher, or as a thiefe, or an euill doer, or as a buse body mother mens matters.

16 But *if any man suffer* as a Christian, let him not bee ashamed: but let him glorifie God in this behauior.

17 For the time is come, that iudgement must beginne at the house of God. It is first begun at vs, what shall the end be of them which obey not the Gospel of God?

C H A P. V.

18 * And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the vn-
godly and the sinner appeare? Rom. 2.33

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of
God, commit their soules to him in well doing, as vnto a faithfull
Creator.

C H A P. V.

1 He warneth the Elders not to vsurpe authoritie ouer the Church,
5 warning the yonger sort to be willing to be taught, and to be mo-
dest, 8 to be sober and watchfull to resist the true aduersarie.

THe Elders which are among you, I beseech which are also an
Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also parta-
ker of the glory that shall be reuiled,

2 Feede the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring
for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of
a ready mind:

3 Not as though yee were lords ouer Gods heritage, but that
ye may be ensamples to the flocke.

4 And when that chiefe shepheard shall appeare, yee shall re-
ceiue an incorruptible crowne of glory.

5 Likewise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the Elders, and
submit your selues euery man one to another: * decke your selues
inwardly in lowlinesse of minde: for * God resisteth the proud,
and giueth grace to the humble. Rom. 12.
10.
Jam. 4.6.
Jam. 4.10

6 * Humble your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of
God, that he may exalt you in due time.

7 * Cast all your care on him: for he careth for you.

8 Be sober and watch: for your * aduersary the deuill as a roa-
ring lyon, walketh about, seeking whome he may deuoure: Psal. 55.
23. matth.
6.35.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same
afflictions are accomplished in your bretnen which are in the
world. luk. 12.22
Luk. 22.
31.

10 And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his e-
ternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that yee haue suffered a little,
make you perfect, confirme, strengthen, and stablish you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for euer, and euer, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, as I suppose, haue
I written briefly, exhorting and testifying how that this is the true
grace of God, wherein ye stand. Rom. 16.
16. 1. cor.
16.20.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together with you,
saluteth you, and Marcus my sonne.

14 Greete yee one another with the * kisse of loue. Peace bee
with you all which are in Christ Iesus, AMEN. 2. cor. 13.
12.

THE SECOND EPISTLE

generall of Peter.

CHAP. I.

Having spoken of the bountifullnes of God, 5 and of the vertues of faith, 6 hee exhorteth them to holinesse of life, 12 and that his counsell may be the more effectuell, 14 hee sheweth that his death is at hand, 16 and that himselfe did see the power of Christ which he opened vnto them.

Simon Peter a seruant and an Apostle of IESVS Christ, to you which haue obtained like precious faith with vs by the righteounesse of our God and Saviour Iesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied to you, through the knowledging of God and of IESVS our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath given vnto vs all things that pertaine vnto life and godlines, through the knowledging of him that hath called vs vnto glory and vertue.

4 Whereby most great, and precious promises are given vnto vs, that by them ye should be partakers of the diuine nature, in that ye see the corruption, which is in the world through lust.

5 Therefore giue enen all diligence therunto: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith: and with vertue, knowledge:

6 And with knowledge, temperance: and with temperance, patience: and with patience, godlinesse:

7 And with godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse: and with brotherly kindnesse, loue.

8 For if these things bee among you, and abound, they will make you that ye neither shall bee idle, nor without fruitfull in the acknowledging of our Lord Iesus Christ:

9 For hee that hath not these things, is blinde, and cannot see farre of, and hath forgotten that hee was purged from his olde finnes.

10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence to make your calling & election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall neuer fall.

11 For by this meanes an entring shalbe ministered vnto you abundantly into the everlastling kingdome of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ

12 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these things, inasmuch that ye haue knowledge, and be established in the present truth.

13 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to sticke you v, by putting you in remembrance:

C H A P. II.

14 Seeing I knowe that the time is at hand that I must lay downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lorde Iesus Christ hath * shewed me,

15 I will endeavour therefore alwayes, that ye also may be able to haue remembrance of these things after my departing.

16 * For we followed not deceivable fables when we opened vnto you the power, and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but with our eyes we saw his Maiestie:

17 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voyce to him from the excellent glory, * This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voyce we heard when it came from heauen, being with him in the holy mount.

19 We haue also a most sure worde of the Prophets, to the which ye doe well that ye take heede, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts.

20 * So that ye first know this, that no prophetic of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation.

21 For the prophetic came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

C H A P. II.

2 We fretteth them of false teachers, 3 whose wicked flights and destruction he declareth 12 He compareth them to brute beasts, 17 and to wells without water, 20 because they seeke to withdraw men from God to their old fithnesse.

But there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shall be false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lorde, that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselves swift damnation.

2 And many shall follow their destructions, by whom the way of truth shall be euill spoken of,

3 And through couctousnesse shall they with fained wordes make merchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the * Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkness to be kept vnto damnation:

5 Neither hath spared the olde worlde, but saved * Noe the right person, a preacher of righteousness, and brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly,

Iohn 21.

18,

1 Cor. 12

17. and

2. 1.

Mat. 17 5.

2 Tim. 3.

16.

Ioh. 4. 18.

Mat. 6.

Gen. 7. 1.

II. PETER.

Gen. 19.
13. 24.

6 And * turned the cities of Sodom and Gomorreh into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrew them, and made them an example vnto them that after should liue vngodly,

7 And deliuered iust Loth vexed with the vncleane conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vncleane deedes)

9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of temptation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vnderstande, and despise gouernement, which are bold, and stand in their owne conceits, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not railing iudgement against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as naturall brute beasts, led with sensuality, and made to be taken and destroyed speake euill of those things which they know not, and shall perish through their owne corruption,

**Or, little
rockes.**

13 And shall receive the wages of vnrighteousnes, as they which count it pleasure dayly to liue deliciouly: *Spots they are and blots, deliting themselues in their deceivings, in feasting with you,*

14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease to sinne, beguiling vniust soules: they haue hearts exercised with concupiscence: *they are the children of curse:*

Num. 22.
25.

15 Which forsaking the right way, haue gone astray, following the way of * Balaam, *the sonne of Bosor*, which loved the wages of vnrighteousnesse,

16 But he was rebuked for his iniquitie: *for the dunbe beast speaking with mans voice, forbode the foolishnesse of the Prophet.*

Iude 12.

17 * These are wells without water, and cloudes carried about with a tempest, to whom the blacke darknesse is reserued for euer.

18 For in speaking swelling words of vanity, they beguile with wantonnesse through the lustes of the flesh them that were cleane escaped from them which are wrapped in error,

Joh. 8. 34.
1 Tim. 6. 20.

19 Promising vnto them libertie, and are themselues the * seruants of corruption: for of whomsoever a man is overcome, euen vnto the same is he in bondage.

Mat. 12.
45. **heb. 6.**
9.

20 * For if they, after they haue escaped from the filthinesse of the world, through the acknowledging of the Lord, and of the Saviour Iesus Christ, are yet tangled againe therein, and overcome, *the*

C H A P. III.

the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had bene better for them, not to haue acknowledged the way of righteousness, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandment giuen vnto them.

22 But it is come vnto them according to the true prouerbe,
* The dogge is returned to his owne vomite: and, The sow that was washed, to the wallowing in the myre.

Pro. 26.
11.

C H A P. III.

1 He sheweth that he writeth the same things againe, 2 because they must ofende stirred vp, 3 because dangers hang ouer their heads through certaine mockers: 8 therefore he warneth the goodly that they doe not, after the iudgement of the flesh, 12 appoint the day of the Lord, 13 but that they thinke it alwayes at hand, 15 in which doctrine he sheweth that Paul agreeeth with him.

THis second Epistle I now write vnto yon beloued, wherewith I stirre vp, and warne your pure mindes,

2 To call to remembrance the words, which were told before of the holy Prophets, and also the commandment of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour.

3 * This first vnderstand, That these shall come in the last dayes, mockers, which will walke after their lusts,

2. Tim. 4. 2
2. Tim. 3. 1.
Iude 18.

4 And say, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the fathers died, all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly know not, that the heauens were of olde, and the earth that was of the water, and by the water, by the word of God.

6 Wherefore the world that then was, perished, ouerflowed with the water.

7 But the heauens and earth which are now, are kept by the same word in store, and reserued vnto fire against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodly men.

8 Dearely beloued, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord, * as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day.

2. Pet. 3. 8
32. 2. 33.
11. 1. 1. 1.
2. 4.
Mat. 24.
44. 1. 1. 1.
3. 2. 1. 1.
3. 3. and
16. 1. 5.

9 The Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men count slacknesse) but is patient toward vs. and * would haue no man to perish, but would all men to come to repentance.

10 But the * day of the Lord will come as a thiefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a noyse, and the elements shall melt with heate, and the earth with the workes that are therein, shall be burnt vp.

L. IOHN.

11 Seeing therefore that all these things must be dissolued, what manner persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation & godlinesse,

12 Looking for, and hastning vnto the comming of that day of God, by the which the heauens being on fire, shall be dissolued, and the elements shall melt with heate?

Gal. 6.5.

13 But we looke for * new heauens, and a new earth, according to his promise, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

22. 7. encl.

14 Wherefore, beloued, seeing that ye looke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

21. 1.

Rom. 2. 4.

15 * And suppose that the long suffering of our Lord is saluation euen as our beloued brother Paul according to the wisdom giuen vnto him wrote vnto you,

16 As one, that in all his Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are hard to bee vnderstand, which they that are vnclearned and vnstable, wrest, as they doe also other Scriptures vnto their owne destination,

17 Ye therefore beloued, seeing ye knowe these things before, beware, lest ye be also plucked away with the error of the wicked, and fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauour Iesus Christ; to him be glory both now and for evermore, AMEN.

THE FIRST EPISTLE

generall of Iohn.

CHAP. I.

1 He testifieth that he bringeth the eternall word which is life, & and light. 9 God will be merciful vnto the faithfull, if they consider the burden of their finnes they learne to flee vnto his mercie.



That which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which wee haue seene with these our eyes, which wee haue looked vpon, and these hands of ours haue handled of that Word of life,

2 (For that life was made manifest, and wee haue seene it, and beare witnesse, and shew vnto you that eternall life, which was with the Father, and was made manifest vnto vs)

3 That, *7* (as) which we haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that ye may also haue fellowship with vs, and that our fellowship also may be with the Father, and with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that that your ioy may be full.

3 This

C H A P. II.

5 This then is the message, which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God * is light, and in him is no darkenesse.

Iohn 8

6 If we say that wee haue fellowship with him, and walke in darkenesse, we lie, and doe not truly:

12

7 But if we walke in the light, as hee is in the light, wee haue fellowship one with another, and the * blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

Heb. 9:18

8 * If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceive our selues, and trueth is not in vs.

1. pet. 2:19

9 If we acknowledge our sinnes, he is faithfull and iust to forgive vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from all vnihteousnesse.

1. King. 3

10 If we say we haue not sinned, wee make him a liar, and his word is not in vs.

46. 2. chro.

6. 36. 179.

20. 9.

C H A P. II.

1 He declareth that Christ is our Mediatour and aduocate, 3 and sheweth that the knowledge of God consisteth in holinesse of life.

12 Which apperaineth to all sortes, 14 that depend on Christ eternally: 15 Then hauing exhorted them to conserne the world,

18 hee giveth warning that Antichrist be auoided, 24 and that the known trueth be stood vnto.

MY little children, the e things write I vnto you, that yee sinne not: and if any man sinne, we haue an aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ the iust.

2 And hee is the reconciliation for our sinnes: and not for ours onely, but also for the sinnes of the whole world.

3 And hereby we are sure that we know him, if wee keepe his commandements.

4 He that sayth, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But hee that keepeth his word, in him is the loue of God perfected: hereby we know that we are in him.

6 He that sayth he remaineth in him, ought euen so to walke, as he hath walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto you: but an old commandement, which ye haue had from the beginning: this old commandement is that word, which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandement I write vnto you, that which is true in him, and also in you: for the darkenesse is past, and that true light now shineth.

9 He that sayth that he is in that light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenesse vntill this time.

I. I O H N.

Cor 3.14

10 He that loueth his brother, abideth in that light, and there is none occasion of euill in him.

11 That he that hateth his brother is in darknesse, and walketh in darknesse, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darknesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 Little children, I write vnto you, because your sinnes are forgiven you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, young men, because ye haue overcome that wicked one. I write vnto you, little children, because ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue writtten vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I haue writtten vnto you, young men, because yee are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye haue overcome that wicked one.

15 Loue not the worlde, neither the things that are in this world. If any man loue this world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in this world (as the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world.

17 And this world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but hee that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer.

18 Little children, It is the last time, and as ye haue heard that Antichrist shal come, euen now are there many Antichrists: where-by we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bene of vs, they should haue continued with vs. But *the com-
meth to passe,* that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an oynment from that Holy one, and know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar, but hee that denieth that Iesus is that Christ? the same is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whofoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father.

24 Let therefore abide in you that same which yee haue heard from the beginning. If that which yee haue heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you, yee also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that hee hath promised vs, *even* that eternall life.

C H A P. III.

26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that deceiue you,

27 But that annoynting which yee receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and yee neede not that any man teach you: but as the same annoynting teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, wee may be bolde, and not be aihamed before him at his coming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, know ye that he which doeth righteously, is borne of him.

C H A P. III.

1 Setting downe the inestimable glory of this, that we are Gods sons, 7 he sheweth that newnesse of life must be testified by good works, whereof charitie is a manifest token, 19 Of faith, 22 And praying vnto God.

BEhold, what loue the Father hath given to vs, that wee should be called the sonnes of God: for this cause this world knoweth you not, because it knoweth not him.

2 Dearely beloved, now are we the sonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifest what we shalbe, & we know that when he shall be made manifest, we shalbe like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purgeth himselfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sinne, transgresseth also the Law: for sinne is the transgression of the Law.

5 And yee knowe that he was made manifest, that hee might take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not, whosoever sinneth, hath not seene him, neither hath knowen him.

7 Little children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteously, is righteous, as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the deuill. for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose was made manifest that Sonne of God that he might loose the workes of the deuill.

9 Whosoever is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seede remaineth in him, neither can he sinne, because he is borne of God.

10 In this are the children of God knowen, and the children of the deuill: who beuer doeth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his Brother.

11 For this is the message, that yee heard from the beginning, that we should loue one another,

3/a 53. 6,
9. 11. 1.
ps. 2 22,
24.

John 8. 44.

John 13.
54. 11.
15. 12.

I. I O H N.

Gen 4.8

12 Not as * Cam ~~which~~ was of that wicked one, and slewe his brother: and wherefore slewe he him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good.

8 Chap. 2

10. Ioh. 1.

19. 17.

John 15

13. Ioh. 1.

5. 2

Lut. 5. 11

13 Mamele not my brethren, though this world hate you,

14 Yee know that wee are translated from death vnto life, because we lone the brethren: * he that loneth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a manslayer: and ye know that no manslayer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 * Hereby haue wee perceiued loue, that hee laid downe his life for vs: therefore we ought to lay downe our liues for the brethren.

17 * And whosoever hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his compassion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My little children, let vs not lone in word, neither in tongue onely, but in deed and in truth.

19 For thereby wee knowe that we are of the truth, and shall be fore him assure our hearts.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we boldnesse toward God:

8 Chap. 3. 14

10. Ioh. 2. 1

22

19. 1. 7

and 16. 23

10. Ioh. 6. 23

and 17. 3

10. Ioh. 17. 54

and 15. 10

22 * And whatseuer we aske, we receiue of him, because wee keepe his commandements, and doe those things which are pleasing in his sight.

23 * This is then his commandement, That wee beleene in the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as hee gaue our mandement.

24 * For he that keepeth his commandements dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in vs, thus by that Spirit which he hath given vs.

C H A P. I I I I.

1 Having spoken somewhat touching the trine of spirits: 4 For some speake after the world, 5 and some after Gods: 7 the reuerence to charitie, 11. 19 and by the example of God be exhorted to brotherly loue.

DEarely beloued, beleue not euery spirit, but trie the spirits whether they are of God: for many false prophets are gone out into this world.

2 Hereby that ye know the Spirit of God, Every spirit which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And

CHAPTER III

3 And every spirit that confesseth not Iesus Christ to be come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the spirit of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how that he should come, and now already he is in this world.

4 Litle children, ye are of God, and haue overcome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in this world.

5 They are of this world, therefore speake they of this world, and this world heareth them.

6 We are of God, * he that knoweth God, heareth vs: hee John 8.47
that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and every one that loneth is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loneth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

9 * Herein was that loue of God made manifest amongst vs, John 3.16
because God sent that his onely begotten Sonne into this world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loved God, but that he loved vs, and sent his Sonne to be a reconciliation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loved vs, wee ought also to loue one another.

12 * No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs. John 1.18
1.1.1. 6.

13 Hereby know we, that we dwell in him, and he in vs: because he hath given vs of his Spirit. 16.

14 And we haue seene and doe tellise, that the father sent that Sonne to be the Sauour of the world.

15 Whosoever confesseth that Iesus is the Sonne of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God.

16 And we haue knowen, and beleued the loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we should haue boldnesse in the day of iudgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath painfulnesse: and hee that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, because he loved vs first.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for how can he that loneth not his brother whom he hath seene, loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 * And

II. IOH N.

John 13.
34 and
35 12.

21 * And this commandement haue we of him, that he that loveth God, should loue his brother alſo.

CHAP. V.

1 He ſheweth that brotherly loue and faith are things inſeparable :
10 And that there is no faith toward God, but by beleuing in Chriſt. 14 Hence proceedeth calling vpon God with aſſurance,
19 and alſo, that our prayers be available for our brethren.

WHosoever beleueth that Ieſus is that Chriſt, is borne of God, and every one that loveth him, which begate, loveth him alſo which is begotten of him.

2 In this we knowe that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements.

Mat. 11.
30.

3 For this is the loue of God, that wee keepe his commandements : and his * commandements are not burdenous.

4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this world : and this is that victorie that hath overcome the worlde, *even* our faith.

1 Cor. 15.
57.

5 * Who is it that overcommeth this world, but he which beleueth that Ieſus is that Sonne of God ?

6 This is that Ieſus Chriſt that came by water and blood : not by water onely, but by water and blood : and it is that Spirit that beareth witneſſe, for that Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three, which beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghoſt : and theſe three are one.

8 And there are three, which beare record in the earth, the ſpirit, and the water, and the blood : and theſe three agree in one.

9 If we receiue the witneſſe of men, the witneſſe of God is greater : for this is the witneſſe of God, which he teſtified of his Sonne.

John 3. 36

10 * He that beleueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witneſſe in himſelfe : he that beleueth not God, hath made him a liar, becauſe he beleued not the recorde, that God witneſſed of that his Sonne.

11 And this is that record *to wit*, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in that his Sonne.

12 He that hath that Sonne, hath that life : and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.

13 Theſe things haue I written vnto you that beleue in the Name of the Sonne of God, that yee may knowe that ye haue eternall life, and that ye may beleue in the Name of that Sonne of God.

1 Cor. 13. 22

14 And this is that aſſurance, that we haue in him, * that if we

as he

CHAP. I.

aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs.

15 And if we know that he heareth vs, whatsoener we aske, we know that we haue the petitions that we haue desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne that is not vnto death let him aske, and he shall giue him life for them that siane not vnto death. * There is a sinne vnto death: I say not that thou shouldst pray for it.

Matt. 12.

17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, but there is a sinne not vnto death.

31.

mat. 3.

29.

18 We know that whosoener is borne of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 We know that we are of God, and this whole world lieth in wickednesse.

20 But we know that that Sonne of God is * come, and hath giuen vs a mind to know him which is true: and wee are in him that is true, *that is*, in that his Sonne Iesus Christe this same is that very God, and that eternall life.

Luke 23

45.

21 Little children, keepe your selues from idoles, Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE of Iohn.

1 This Epistle is written to a woman of great renoume, 4 who brought up her children in the feare of God: 6 he exhorteth her to continue in Christian chariti, 7 that she accompany not with Antichrists, 10 but auoid them.



He Elder to the ele^d Lady, and her children, whom I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but alio all that haue knowen the trueth,

2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for ener:

3 Grace be with you, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, with truth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found thy children walking in trueth, as we haue receiued a commandement of the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee Lady, (not as writing a new commandement vnto thee, but the same which we had from the beginning) that we * loue one another.

Iohn 15.

6 And this is the loue, that we should walke after his commandements,

12.

III. I O H N.

mandements. This commandement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it

7 For many deceiuers are entred into this world, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Look to your selues, that we lose not the things which we haue done, but that we may receiue a full reward

9 Whosoener transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. Hee that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

Rom. 16.
17.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, * receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speed:

11 For he that biddeth him God speede, is partaker of his euill deeds. Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I would not write with paper and ynke: but I trust to come vnto you, and speake mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full.

12 The sonnes of thine elect sister greet thee, Amen.

¶ THE THIRD EPISTLE of Iohn.

1 He commendeth Gaius for his hospitalitie: 9 and reprehendeth Diotryphes for vaine glory: 10 He exhorteth Gaius to continue in well doing: 13 and in the end commendeth Demetrius.



THE Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the trueth.

2 Beloued, I wish chiefly that thou prosperedst and faredst well as thy soule prospereth.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and testified of the trueth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioy then these, that is, to heare that my sonnes walke in veritie

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully, whatsoener thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers,

6 Which bare witness of thy loue before the Churches. Whom if thou bringest on their iourney as it becometh, according to God, thou shalt doe well.

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, and tooke nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be helpers to the trueth.

I V D E.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loveth to have the preheminance among them, receiveth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will call to your remembrance his deedes, which he doeth, prating against vs with malicious words, and not therewith content, neither hee him selfe receiveth the brethren, but forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but he that doeth euill hath not seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it selfe: yea, and we our selues beare record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with inke and penne write vnto thee:

14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speake mouth to mouth, Peace be with thee. The friends salute thee. Greete the friends by name.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE of Iude.

5 He warneth the goodly to take heede of such men & that make the grace of God a cloke for their wantonnesse, & and that they shall not scape unpunished, for the contempt of that grace, & 7 he pro-
ueth by three examples: 14 and allegeth the prophecie of E-
noch: 20 Finally he sheweth the godly a means to overthrow all
the sinners of those decturers.



Iude a seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames,
to them which are called and sanctified of God the
Father and referred to Iesus Christ:

2 Mercie vnto you, and peace and loue be mul-
tplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you
of the common salvation, it was needfull for mee to write
vnto you, to exhort you, that yee should earnestly contend for
the maintenance of the faith, which was once giuen vnto the
Saints.

4 For there are certaine men crept in, which were before of
olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly mens they are which
turne the grace of our God into wantonnesse, and * denie God, the
only Lord, and our Lord Iesus Christ,

1. Pet. 3. 1

5 I will

N^{um.} 14.

37.

2. Pet. 2. 4.

Gen. 19.

24.

Gen. 4. 8.

N^{um.} 22.

21. 2. Pet. 2.

15.

N^{um.} 16.

1.

2. Pet. 2.

17.

Reu. 1. 7.

P^{sal.} 17.

10.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, forasmuch as yee once knewe this, how that the Lorde, after that hee had deliuered the people out of Egypt, * destroyed them afterward which beleued not.

6 The * Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, hee hath reserved in encrasting chaines vnder darkenesse vnto the iudgement of the great day.

7 As * Sodome and Gomorhe, and the cities about them, which in like manner as they did committed fornication, and followed strange flesh, are set forth for an ensample, and suffer the vengeance of eternall fire.

8 Likewise notwithstanding these sleepers also defile the flesh, and despise gouernment, and speake euill of them that are in authoritie.

9 Yet Michaell the Archangel, when he stroue against the deuill, and disputed about the body of Moses, durst not blame him with cursed speaking, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speake euill of those things, which they knowe not: and whatsoever things they know naturally, as beausts, which are without reason, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Woe be vnto them: for they haue followed the way of * Cain, and are cast away by the deceit * of Balaams wages, and perishe in the gainelaying * of Core.

12 These are rockes in your feasts of charitie when they feast with you, without all feare, feeding themselves: * cloudes they are without water, caried about of windes, corrupt trees and without fruites, twice dead, and plucked vp by the rootes.

13 They are the raging waues of the sea, soming out their owne shame: they are wandring starres, to whome is reserved the blacknesse of darkenesse for euer.

14 And Enoch also the seuenth from Adam, prophesied of such, saying, * Behold, the Lorde commeth with thousands of his Saints,

15 To giue iudgement against all men, and to rebuke all the vngodly among them of all their wicked deeds, which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their cruell speaking, which wicked sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are mutmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts: * whose mouthes speake proud things, hauing mens persons in admiration because of aduantage.

17 But yee beloued, remember the wordes which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ,

C H A P. I.

18 Howe that they told you that there should bee mockers
* in the last time, which should walke after their owne vngodly
lustes.

2. Tim. 4. 1

3. Tim. 3. 1.

3. Pet. 3. 3.

19 These are they that separate themselves from other, natural,
hauiug not the Spirit,

20 But, ye beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith
praying in the holy Ghost.

21 And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the
mercie of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnto etnall life.

22 And haue compasison of some, in putting difference:

23 And other saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire, and
hate euen that garment which is spotted by the flesh.

24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you, that yee fall not,
and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory
with ioy,

25 That is, to God onely wise, our Sauour, be glory, and ma-
iestie, and dominion, and power, both now and for euer, Amen.

THE REVELATION OF John the Diuine.

C H A P. I.

1 He declareth what kind of doctrine is here handled, & euen his;
That is the beginning and ending: 12 Then the mystery of the
seuen Caud'stiches, and starres 20 is expounded.



THE Renelation of IESVS CHRIST, which
GOD gaue vnto him, to shewe vnto his seruants
things which must shortly bee done: which hee
sent, and shewed by his Angel vnto his seruant
John.

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testi-
monie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he sawe.

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that heare the wordes of
this prophesie, and keepe those things which are written therein:
for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in Asia, Grace be with
you, and peace from him, Which * is, and Which was, & Which is
to come, and from the seuen Spirits, which are before his Throne,

Exo. 3. 14

Psal. 89.

38.

1. Cor.

13. 21.

col. 1. 18.

5 And from Iesus Christ, which is the * faithfull witnesse. and
* that first begotten of the dead, and that prince of the kings of
the earth. vnto him that loued vs, and walked vs from our finnes
in his * blood,

REVELATION.

1. Pet. 2. 5.

6 And make vs * Kings and Prieſtes vnto God euen his Father, to him, *I ſay*, be glory and dominion for euermore, Amen.

Iſa 3. 14.

Mat. 24. 30

Iude 14.

Cap. 21. 6

And 22. 13.

7 Beholde, he cometh with * clouds, and euery eye ſhall ſee him : yea, euen they which pearced him thorow : and all kindreds of the earth ſhall waile before him. Euen ſo, Amen.

8 I * am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, ſaith the Lord, Which is, & Which was, and Which is to come, euen the Almighty,

9 I Iohn, euen your brother, and companion in tribulation and in the kingdome and patience of I E S V S C H R I S T, was in the yle called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the witneſſing of Ieſus Chriſt.

10 And I was raviſhed in ſpirit on the Lords day, and heard behinde me a great voice, as it had been of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, that firſt, and that laſt : and that which thou ſeeſt write in a booke, and ſend it vnto the ſeuē Churches which are in Aſia, vnto Ephreſus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and vnto Philadeiphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 Then I turned backe to ſee the voice, that ſpake with mee : and when I was turned, I ſaw ſeuē golden candleſtickes,

13 And in the mids of the ſeuē candleſtickes, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the ſeete, and girded about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head, & haire were white as white wooll, and as ſnow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire,

15 And his ſeete like vnto fine braſſe, burning as in a furnace : and his voice as the ſound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand ſeuē ſtarres : and out of his mouth went a ſharpe two edged ſword : and his face ſhone as the Sonne ſhineth in his ſtrength.

17 And when I ſawe him, I fell at his ſeete as dead : then he laid his right hand vpon mee, ſaying vnto mee, Feare not : I am that * firſt and that laſt,

Iſa. 41. 4

and 44. 6

18 And am aliuē, but I was dead : and beholde, I am aliuē for euermore, Amen : and I haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou haſt ſeene, and the things which are, and the things which ſhall come hereafter.

20 The myſterie of the ſeuē ſtarres which thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeuē golden candleſtickes, is this, The ſeuē ſtarres are the Angels of the ſeuē Churches : and the ſeuē candleſtickes

C H A P. II.

1 *And the seven candlestickes which thou sawest, are the seven Churches.*

C H A P. II.

1 John is commanded to write those things, which the Lord kurre necessarie to the Churches of Ephesus, 8 of the Smyrnians, 12 of Pergamus, 18 and of Thyatira, 25 that they keepe those things which they received of the Apostles.

Vnto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus write, These things saith hee that holdeth the seven starres in his right hand, and walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlestickes.

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare with them which are euill, and hast examined them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars,

3 And thou wast burdened, and hast patience, & for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless, I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first workes: or else I will come against thee shortly, and will remoue thy candlesticke out of his place, except thou amend.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the workes of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

7 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that overcommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the midst of the Paradise of God.

8 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, These things saith he that is first, and last, which was dead and is aliue.

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation and pouertie (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemie of them, which say they are Iewes and are not, but are the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things, which thou shalt suffer: behold, it shall come to passe, that the deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall haue tribulation ten dayes: bee thou faithfull vnto the death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life.

11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches. He that overcommeth, shall not bee hurt of the second death.

12 ¶ And to the Angel of the Church which is at Pergamus write, Thus saith he which hath the sharpe sword with two edges.

REVELATION.

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest, *even where* Satansthronē is, and thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied my faith, *even in those dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.*

*Num 24.
14. and
25. 1.*

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of * Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, that they should eate of things sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit fornication.

15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent thy selfe, or else I will come vnto thee shortly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth sauing he that receiveth it.

18 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church, which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his seete like fine brasse,

19 I know thy workes, and thy loue, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and that *they are moe at the last, then at the first.*

20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, that thou sufferest the woman Iezabel, which calleth her selfe a Prophetesse, to teach and to deceiue my seruants to make them commit fornication and to eate meate sacrificed vnto idoles.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and shee repented not.

22 Beholde, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes.

23 And I will kill her children with death: and all the Churches shall know that I am he which * search the reins and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according to your workes.

24 And vnto you I say, the rest of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepenesse of Satan (as they speake) I will put vpon you none other burden,

25 But that which yee haue already, hold fast till I come.

26 For hee that ouercommeth and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer nations,

C H A P. III.

27 * And hee shall rule them with a rod of yron: and as the vessel of a potter, shall they be broken. *Psal. 2. 9*

28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, so will I giue him the morning starre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches.

C H A P. III.

1 The fift Epistle sent to the Pastours of the Church of Sardis, 7 of Philadelphia, 14 and of the Laodiceans, 16 that they bee not luke warme, 20 but endenour to further Gods glorie.

AND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, These things saith hee that hath the seuen Spirits of God, and the seuen starres, I know thy workes: for thou hast a name that thou livest, but thou art dead,

2 Be awake and strengthen the things which remaine, that are readie to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfite before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast receiued and heard, and hold fast and repent. * If therefore thou wilt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not knowe what houre I will come vpon thee. *Cap. 16. 5.*

4 Notwithstanding thou hast a fewe names in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they shall walke with mee in white: for they are worthie. *2. thes. 5. 2. 2. pet. 3. 10*

5 He that ouercommeth, shall be clothed in white aray, and I will not put out his name out of the * booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels. *Cap. 20. 12. and*

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. *1. 27. 2. 4 3*

7 * And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Philadelphia, These things saith hee, that is Holy, and True, which hath the key of David, which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth;

8 I know thy workes: behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a litle strength, and hast as yet my word, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themselves Iewes and are not, but doe lie: behold, I say, I will make them, that they shall come and worship before thy seate, and shall know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, therefore I will deliuer thee from the houre of temptation, which will come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth.

R E V E L A T I O N.

11 Behold, I come shortly: bold that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that overcommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is, the new Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God, and *I will write vpon him my new Name.*

13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These things saith Amen, that faithfull and true witnesse, that be-
ginning of the creatures of God.

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote. I would thou werest colde or hote.

16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, & neither cold nor hote, it wil come to passe, that I shall spew thee out of my mouth,

17 For thou saiest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have neede of nothing, and knowest not how thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of me gold tried by the fire, that thou mayest be made rich: and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed. and that thy filthie nakednesse doe not appeare: and anoynt thine eyes with eye salve, that thou mayest see.

*Pro. 3. 12.
Job. 12. 4.*

19 As many as I loue, * I rebuke and chasten: be zealous there-
fore and amend.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heare my voyce and open the doore, I will come in vnto him, and will suppe with him and he with me.

21 To him that overcommeth, wil I grant to sit with me in my throne euen as I overcame, and sit with my Father in his throne.

22 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

C H A P. IIII.

*I An thy wisdom concerning the close of Gods Ministry, & which is magnified of the foure beastes, 10 and the foure an-
gels.*

After this I looked, and behold, a doore was open in heauen, and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with mee. saying, Come vp hither, and I will shew thee things, which must be done hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was *raised* in the spirit, and behold, a throne was set in heauen, and one sat vpon the throne.

3 And

C H A P. V.

3 And he that sat, was to looke vpon, like vnto a lasper stone and a Sardine, and there was a rainbow round about the throne in sight like to an emerauld.

4 And round about the throne were foure and twenty seates, and vpon the seates I sawe foure & twenty Elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and had on their heads crownes of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, & thundrings, and voices and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the seuen spirits of God.

6 And before the throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto cry- stall: and in the mids of the throne, and round about the throne were foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Eagle.

8 And the foure beasts had ech one of them sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they ceased not day nor night saying, Holy, holy, holy Lord God Almightye, Which was, and Which is, and Which is to come.

9 And when those beasts gaue glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, which liueth for ever and ever,

10 The foure and twenty Elders fell downe before him that sat on the throne and worshipped him that liueth for evermore, and cast their crownes before the throne, saying,

11 Thou art * worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour, Chap. 5. 12
and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy wils sake they are and haue bene created.

C H A P. V.

1 The booke sealed with seuen seales, 3 which none coulde open, 6 that Lambe of God 9 is thought worthy to open, 12 euen by the consent of all the company of heauen.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sat vpon the throne, a booke writtē within & on the backside, sealed wth seuen seales.

2 And I saw a strong Angel which preached with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the booke, & to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth was able to open the booke, neither to looke whereon.

4 Then I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to reade the booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders said vnto me. Weep not: behold, that *Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of David, hath Gen. 49. 9.
obtained to open the Booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof.

REVELATION.

6 Then I beheld, and loe in the mids of the throne, and of the some beaſts, and in the mids of the Elders, ſtood a Lambe as though he had been killed, which had ſeven hornes, and ſeven eyes, which are the ſeven ſpirits of God, ſent into all the world

7 And he came and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that ſate vpon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the booke, the ſome beaſts, and the ſoure and twenty Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing e- uery one harpes and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of the Saints,

9 And they ſung a new ſong, ſaying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, and to open the ſeales thereof, becauſe thou waſt killed and haſt redeemed vs to God by thy blood out of euery kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation,

chap. 1. 6.

1 pet. 2. 9.

10 And haſt made vs vnto our God *Kings and Prieſts, and we ſhall: ſigne on the earth.

Mat. 7. 10.

11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voice of many Angels round about the throne, and *about* the beaſts, and the Elders, & there were * ten thouſand times ten thouſand, and thouſand thouſands,

12 Saying with a loude voice, Worthy is the Lambe that was ſlled, to receiue power, and riches, and wiſedom, and ſtrength, and honour, and glory, and praiſe.

13 And all the creatures which are in heaven, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the Sea, and all that are in them, heard I ſaying, Praiſe, and honour, and glory, and power, be vnto him that ſitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore.

14 And the ſoure beaſts ſaid, Amen, & the ſoure & twenty Elders fell downe and worſhipped him that lieth for euermore.

C H A P. VI.

1 The Lambe openeth the firſt ſeale of the Booke. 3 the ſecond, 7 the third, 7 the fourth, 9 the fiſt, 12 and the ſixth, and then arile murders, famine, peſtilence, earthquakes, & ſmits, earthquakes, and diuers ſtrange ſigns in heauen.

After, I beheld, when the Lambe had opened one of the ſeales, and I heard one of the ſoure beaſts ſay, as it were the noiſe of thunder, Come and ſee.

2 Therefore I beheld, and loe, there was a white horſe, and he that ſate on him, had a bowe, and a crowne was given vnto him, and he went forth conquering that he might overcome.

3 And when he had opened the ſecond ſeale, I heard the ſecond beaſt ſay, Come and ſee.

4 And there went out another horſe, *that waſted*, and power was

was

CHAP. VI.

was given to him that fate thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, and there was given vnto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard the third beaſt ſay, Come and ſee: Then I beheld, and loe, a blacke horſe, and he that ſate on him, had balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the mids of the ſoure beaſtes ſay, A meature of wheate for a penie, and three meatures of barley for a penie, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not.

7 And when he had opened the fourth ſeale, I heard the voice of the fourth beaſt ſay, Come and ſee.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horſe, and his name that ſate on him was Death, and hell followed after him, and power was given vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with ſword and with hunger, and with death, and with the beaſts of the earth.

9 And when hee had opened the fifth ſeale, I ſawe vnder the altar the ſoules of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the teſtimony which they maintained.

10 And they cried with a loude voice, ſaying, How long, Lord, which art holy and true! doeſt thou not iudge & auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And long white robes were giuen vnto every one, and it was ſai vnto them, that they ſhould reſt for a little ſeaſon, vntill their ſelow ſeruants, and their brethren that ſhould be killed, euen as they were, were fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when hee had opened the ſixt ſeale, and loe, there was a great earthquake, and the ſunne was as blacke as ſackcloth of haire, and the moone was like blood.

13 And the ſtarres of heauen fell vnto the earth, as a figtree caſteth her greene figs when it is ſhaken of a mighty winde.

14 And heauen departed away, as a ſcrole when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were mooued out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mighty men, and euery bondman, and euery freeman, hid themſelues in denues, and among the rockes of the mountaines,

16 And ſaid to the mountaines and rockes, * Fall on vs, and hide vs from the preſence of him that ſitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe.

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can ſtand?

CHAP.

7/2. 2 19.
2/1. 10 8.
2/6. 23 30.

REVELATION.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Angels commannd to hurt the earth, 3 are stayed untill the Elef of the Lord 5 of all tribes were sealed. 13 Such as suffered persecution for Christ sake, 16 have great felicitie. 17 and 19.

And alter that, I sawe foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure winde of the earth, that the windes should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

2 And I saw another Angel come vp from the East, which had the seale of the living God, and he cried with a loud voice to the foure Angels to whom power was given to hurt the earth, and the sea, saying,

3 Hurt yee not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundred and foure and fourty thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After these things I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and palmes in their hands.

10 And they cryed with a loud voice, saying, Salvation cometh of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the throne, and about the Elders, and the foure beasts, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen, Praise, and glory, and wisdom, and thanks, and honour, and power, and might be vnto our God for evermore. Amen.

13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, What are these which

C H A P. VIII.

which are arrayed in long white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And hee said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes, and haue made their long robes white in the blood of the Lambe

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple, and he that sitteth on the throne, will dwell among them.

16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sunne light on them, neither any heate. Esa 49. 10

17 For the Lambe, which is in the midst of the throne, shall guide them, and shall leade them vnto the liuely fountaines of waters, and * God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes. Chap 12. 4
Ista. 25 B.

C H A P. VIII.

1 After the opening of the seventh scale, 3 the Saints prayers are offered up with clouds, 6 The seven Angels came forth with trumpets, 7 The first blew, and fire fell on the earth, 8 the Sea is turned into blood, 10. 11. the waters waxe bitter, 12 as the flames are darkned.

ANd when I had opened the seventh scale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre.

2 And I saue the seven Angels which stood before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

3 Then another Angel came and stood before the Altar, hauing a golden censer, and much odours was giuen vnto him that he should offer with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the Saints, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth, and there were voyces, and thundings, and lightnings, and earthquake.

6 Then the seven Angels which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to blow the trumpets.

7 So the first Angel blew the trumpet, and there was haile and fire, mingled with blood, and they were cast into the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt, and all greene grass was burnt.

8 And the second Angel blew the trumpet, and as it were a great mountaine, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of Ships were destroyed.

10 Then

R E V E L A T I O N.

10 Then the third Angel blew the trumpet, and there fell a great starr from heauen burning like a torch, and it fell into the third part of the riuers, and into the fountaines of waters.

11 And the name of the starr is called wormewood: therefore the third part of the waters became wormewood, and many men died of the waters because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, and the third part of the sunne was smitten, and the third part of the moone, and the third part of the staries, so that the third part of them was darkened: and the day was *smitten*, that the third part of it could not shine, and likewise the night.

13 And I behelde, and heard one Angel flying through the middes of heauen, saying with a lowde voice, Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the sounds to come of the trumpets of the three Angels, which were yet to blowe the trumpets.

C H A P. IX.

1 The fifth Angel bloweth his trumpet, 3 and soe long locustes come out. 13 The sixth Angel bloweth, 16 and bringeth forth hissemen, 20 to destroy man kind.

AND the fift Angel blew the trumpet, and saw a starr fall from heauen vnto the earth, and to him was given the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And hee opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose the smoke of the pit, as the smoke of a great fornace, and the sunne, and the ayre were darkned by the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locustes vpon the earth, and vnto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them, that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but only those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them was commanded that they should not kill them: but that they should bee vexed five monethes: and that their paine should be as the paine that cometh of a scorpion, when it hath stung a man.

Chap. 6. 14 6 * Therefore in those dayes shall men seeke death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

Chap. 13. 8 7 And the forme of the locustes was like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on their heads were as it were crownes, like vnto gold and their faces were like the faces of men.

8 And

C H A P. IX.

8 And they had haire as the haire of a woman, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lyons.

9 And they had habergions like to habergions of yron: and the sound of their wings was like the sound of charrets when many horses runne vnto battell.

10 And they had tailes like vnto scorpions, & there were stings in their tailes, and there power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they haue a King ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greeke he is named Apollyon, *that is, destroying.*

12 One woe is past, *and* behold, yet two woes come after this.

13 ¶ Then the sixth Angel blew the trumpet, and I heard a voice from the foure horns of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixth Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates,

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a moneth, and at a yeere, to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of horsemen of warre were twentie thousand times ten thousand: for I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sat on them, hauing ferie habergions, and of lacinth, and of brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of Lyons: and out of their mouthes went forth fire and smoke, and brimstone.

18 Of these three was the third part of men killed, *that is,* of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, which came out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouthes, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads, wherewith they hurt.

20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the workes of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, and * idoles of gold and of silver, and of brasse, and of stone and of wood, which neither can see, neither

Psa 115.4

and 135.

15.

21 Also they repented not of their murder, and of their fornicie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft.

C H A P. X.

1 Another Angel appeareth clothed with a cloide, 2 holding a booke open, 3 and crieth out. 8 A voice from heauen commaundeth John to take the booke: 10 He eateth it.

And

R E V E L A T I O N.

AND I saw another mightie Angel come downe from heauen,
Aclothed with a cloud, and the rainbow vpon his head, and his
face was as the sunne, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little booke open, and hee put his
right sonne vpon the sea, and his left on the earth,

3 And cried with a lowde voyce, as when a lyon roareth: and
when he had cried, seven thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seven thunders had vttered their voices, I was
about to write: but I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me,
Seale vp those things which the seven thunders haue spoken, and
write them not,

5 And the Angel which I saw stand vpon the sea, and vpon
the earth, lift vp his hand to heauer,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euermore. which created
heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things
that therein are, and the sea, and the things that therein are, that
time should be no more.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seventh Angel, when he
shall begin to blow the trumpet, euen the myserie of God shall
be finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, spake vnto me
againe, and said, Come, and take the little booke which is open in
the hand of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the
earth.

9 So I went vnto the Angel, and sayde to him, Give mee the
little booke. And he said vnto me, Take it, and eate it vp, and it shall
make thy belly bitter, but it shall bee in thy mouth as sweete as
honey.

10 Then I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, and
ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as sweete as honey: but when I
had eaten it my belly was bitter.

11 And he said vnto mee, Thou must prophesie againe among
the people and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

C H A P. XI.

1 The temple is commanded to be measured. 3 The Lord slayeth vp
two witnesses: 7 whom the beast murdereth, 9 and no man bur-
ieth them. 11 Coarseth them to life, 12 and calleth them vp
to heauen. 13 The wicked are terrified. 15 By the trumpet of the
seventh Angel, the resurrection 18 and iudgment is described.

THEN was given me a reede, like vnto a rodde, and the Angel
stood by, saying, Reede and mete the Temple of God, and the
altar, and them that worship therein.

C H A P. XI.

2 But the court which is without the Temple, cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie shall they tread vnder foote, two and fourtie moneths.

3 But I will giue power vnto my two witneses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two olive treee, and two candlestickes, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoreth their enemies: for if any man would hurt them, thus must he be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophesying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to smite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall euermore overcome them and kill them.

8 And their corpses shall lie in the streetes of the great citie, which spirituallie is called Sodome and Egypt, where our Lord also was crucified.

9 And they of the people and kindes, and tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpses three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall reioice over them and be glad, and shall send gifts one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three dayes and an halfe, the spirit of life comming from God, shall enter into them and they shall stand vp vpon their secte: and great feare shall come vpon them which saw them.

12 And they shall heare a great voice from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they shall ascend vp to heauen in a cloud, and their enemies shall see them.

13 And the same houre shall there bee a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, and in the earthquake shall be slaine in number seuen thousand: and the remnant were sore feared, and gaue glory to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, and beholde, the third woe will come anon.

15 And the seventh Angel blew the trumpet, and there were great voices in heauen, saying, The kinge of this world are our Lords, and his Christ, and he shall reigne for euermore.

16 Then

REVELATION.

16 Then the foure and twenty Elders, which sat before God on their seates, fel vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thanks, Lord God Almighty, which art, and which wast, and which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obtained thy kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and to them that feare thy Name, to small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his couenant: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and earthquakes, and much haile.

C H A P. XII.

1 *A woman appeareth* 2 *trauailing with childe,* 4 *whose childe the dragon would deuoure,* 7 *but Michael ouercommeth him;* 9 *and casteth him out,* 13 *and the more hee is cast downe and vanquished, the more fiercely he exerceeth his subtilties.*

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone was vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres.

2 And she was with childe, and cryed trauailing in birth, and was pained ready to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for behold a great red dragon hauing seven heads, and ten hornes, and seven crownes vpon his heads:

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stood before the woman, which was ready to be deliuered, to deuoure her childe when she had brought it forth.

5 So shee brought forth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of yron: and that her child was taken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should see her there a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes.

7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his Angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon that olde serpent, called the deuill and

CHAP. XIII.

and Satan, was cast out, which deceiveth all the world: he was *even* cast into the earth, and his Angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a loud voice in heauen, saying, Now is saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 But they overcame him by the blood of that lambe, and by that word of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce yee heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the demill is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon sawe that he was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man *child.*

14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great eagle, that she might flie into the wildernesse, into her place, where shee is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of the flood.

16 But the earth helpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.

17 Then the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went and made warre with the remnant of her seede, which keepe the commandments of God, and haue the testimonie of I E S V S Christ.

18 And I stood on the sea sand.

CHAP. XIII.

I The beast with many heads is a foreshew, & which draweth the most part of the world to idolatrie, 13 The other beast rising out of the earth, 15 giueth power vnto that.

AND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seven heads and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes were ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I saw, was like a Leopard, and his feete like a Beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a Lion: and the dragon gaue him his power and his throne, and great authoritie.

3 And I sawe one of his heads, as it were wounded to death,

H h

but

REVELATION.

but his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondred, and followed the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast! who is able to warre with him!

5 And there was given vnto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was given vnto him to doe two and fourtie moneths.

6 And hee opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blasphemie his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was given vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to overcome them, and power was given him ouer euery kind, and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was slaine from the beginning of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

Gen 5.8.

26.26.3

10 If any kinde into captiuitie, hee shall goe into captiuitie: * If any kill with a sword, he must be killed by a sword: here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

11 And I behelde another beast comming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but he spake like the dragon.

12 And he did all that the first beast could doe before him, and hee caused the earth, and them that dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And hee did great wonders, so that hee made fire to come downe from heauen on earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiued them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted him to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did liue.

15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast should speake & should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he made all both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, to receaue a marke in their right hand or in there fore-heads,

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue hee that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

28 Here

C H A P. XIII.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath wit count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundredth, threescore and sixe.

C H A P. XIII.

1 The Lambe standeth on mount Sion, 4 with his chaste worshippers. 6 One Angel preacheth the Gospel: 8 another foretelleth the fall of Babylon: 9 the third warneth that the beast bee avoided. 13 A voice from heauen pronounceth them happye who die in the Lord. 16 The Lords sickle is thrust into the harvest, 18 and into the vintage.

Then I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on mount Sion, and with him, an hundredth, fourtie and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheades.

2 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the sound of many waters, and as the sound of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beastes, and the Elders: and no man could learne that song, but the hundredth fortie and foure thousand, which were bought from the earth.

4 These are they which are not defiled with women, for they are virgins: these follow the Lambe whithersoever he goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruits vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God.

6 ¶ Then I saw another Angel sie in the mids of heauen, hauing an euerlasting Gospel to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

7 * Saying with a loude voice, Feare God, and giue glory to him: for the house of his iudgement is come: and worship him that made * heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters. Psal. 145.
6.
Aps 14.
13.
Cha. 18.
2.
Ier. 51.8.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, * Babylon that great citie is fallen, it is fallen: for shee made all nations to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 ¶ And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loude voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or on his hand,

10 The same sha'l drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine which is powred into the cuppe of his wrath, and he shall bee tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy

REVELATION.

Angels, and before the Lambe.

11 And the smoke of their torment shall ascend euermore: and they shall haue no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and who seuer receiveth the print of his name.

12 Here is the patience of Saints: here are they that keepe the commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 Then I heard a voice from heauen, saying vnto me, Write, The dead which die in the Lord, are fully blessed. Euen so saith the Spirit: for they rest from their labors, & their works follow them.

14 ¶ And I looked, and behold, a white cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

Joel 3. 13.
Matth. 13
39. 15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voice to him that sate on the cloude, ⁴ Thrust in thy sickle and reape: for the time is come to reape: for the ⁴ harvest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sate on the cloude, thrust in his sickle on the earth and the earth was reaped.

17 Then another Angel came out of the Temple, which is in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cryed with a loude crie to him that had the sharpe sickle, and said, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyard of the earth: for her grapes are ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of the vineyard of the earth, and cast them into that great winepresse of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepresse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the winepresse, vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundredeth furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The seven Angels hauing the seven last plagues. 3 They that conquered the beast, praise God. 6 To the seven Angels 7 seals vnto full of Gods wrath are deliuered.*

AND I saw another signe in heauen great and marvellous, seven Angels, hauing the seven last plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a glaisie sea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victory of the beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, stand at the glaisie sea hauing the harpes of God.

3 And they sung the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song,

C H A P. XVI.

Song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marvellous are thy workes, Lord God Almighty: iust and true are thy wayes, King of Saints.

Psal. 145

4 * Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name, for thou onely art holy, and all nations shall come and worship before thee: for thy iudgements are made manifest.

17.

Iere. 10. 7.

5 And after that, I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of testimonie was open in heauen.

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the Temple, which had the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and bright linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of theaine beastes gaue vnto the seuen Angels seuen golden vials full of the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore.

8 And the Temple was full of the smoke of the glory of God and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

C H A P. XVI.

2 *and 17. The Angels powre out the seuen vials of Gods wrath*
earth vnto them, and so diuers plagues arise in the world, 18 to
terrible the wicked, 19 are the initiall paines of the great curse.

AND I heard a great voice out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, and powre out the seuen vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth: and there fell a noisome, and a grievous sore vpon the men, which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every liuing thing died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the rivers and fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Lord, thou art iust, Which art, and Which wast: and holy, because thou hast iudged these things.

6 For they shed the blood of the Saints, and Prophets, and therefore hast thou giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the sanctuary say Even so, Lord God almighty, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall on the sunne,

11. 3

and

REVELATION.

and it was giuen vnto him to torment men with heat of fire.

9 And men boiled in great heate, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer theiſe plagues, and they repented not, to giue him glory.

10 And the ſixt Angel powred out his viall vpon the throne of the beaſt, and his kingdome waxed darke, and they gnawed their tongues for ſorow,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen for their paines, and for theiſe ſores, and repented not of theiſe workes.

12 And the ſixt Angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dried vp, that the way of the Kings of the Eaſt ſhould be prepared.

13 And I ſaw three vncleane ſpirits like frogs come out of the mouth of that dragon, and out of the mouth of that beaſt, and out of the mouth of that falſe prophet.

14 For they are the ſpirits of deuils, working miracles, to goe vnto the kings of the earth, & of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty.

15 (* Behold, I come as a thiefe. * Blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments, leaſt hee walke naked, and men ſee his filthineſſe)

16 And they gathered them together into a place called in Hebrew, Arma-gedon,

17 ¶ And the ſeuenth Angel powred out his viall into the aires: and there came a loud voice out of the Temple of heauen from the throne, ſaying, It is done.

18 And there were voices and thunderings, and lightnings, and there was a great earthquake, ſuch as were not ſince men were vpon the earth, euen ſo mightie an earthquake.

19 And the great citie was diuided into three parts, and the citieſ of the nations fell, and that great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fierceneſſe of his wrath.

20 And euery yle fledde away, and the mountaines were not found.

21 And there fell a great haile, like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, and men blaſphemed God, becauſe of the plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

C H A P. XVII.

1 That great whore is deſcribed, 2 with whom the Kings of the earth committed fornication. 6 Shee is drunken with the blood of Saints: 7 The myſteries of the woman and the beaſt that carrieth

Chap. 3. 3.
mas. 24.
44. luke
12. 39.

7. 25.
15.

C H A P. XVII.

with her, expounded: 11 their destruction. 14 The Lambes victory.

Then there came one of the seven Angels, which had the seven vials, and talked with mee, saying vnto me, Come: I will shewe thee the damnation of the great whore that sitteth vpon many waters,

2 With whom haue committed fornication the Kings of the earth, and the inhabitants of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caried me away into the wildernes in the Spirit, and I saw a woman sit vpon a skarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemie, which had seven heads, and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arraid in purple and skarlet, and gilded with gold and precious stones, and pearles, and had a cup of golde in her hand, full of abominations, and filthinesse of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead was a name written, A myserie, that great Babylon, that mothe of whoredomes, and abominations of the earth.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of Saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great marueile.

7 Then the Angel said vnto me, Wherefore marueilest thou? I wil shew thee the myserie of that woman, and of that beast, that beareth her, which hath seven heads, and ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou hast seene, was, and is not, & shal ascend out of the bottomles pit, and shall goe into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth, shal wonder (whose names are not written in the Booke of life, from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 Here is the mind that hath wisdom, The seven heads are seven mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seven Kings.

10 Five are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come, and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, is even the eight, and is one of the seven, and shall goe into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten Kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shal receiue power, as King at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power, and authoritie vnto the beast.

14 These shall fight with the Lambe, and the Lambe shal ouer-

REVELATION.

Chap. 19. come them: ²for he is Lord of Lords, and King of Kings: and they
16. 1. sm. that are on his side, called and choien, and faithfull.

6. 15. 15 And he said vnto me, The waters which thou sawest, where
the whore sitteth, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and
tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are
they that shall hate the whore. and shall make her desolate and na-
ked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to
doe with one consent, for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast,
vntill the words of God be fulfilled.

18 And that woman which thou sawest, is that great citie,
which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The horrible destruction of *Babylons* set out. 11. 16. 18 The
merchants of the earth, who were enuied with the pompe and
luxurie of it, weepe and wailer: 20 But all the elect reioyce
for that iust vengeance of God.

ANd after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from
heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened
with his glory.

Chap. 14. 2 And he cryed out mightily with a loud voice, saying, * It is
8. 14. 21 fallen it is fallen, *9. 1ere. 51* Babylon that great citie, and is become the habi-
8. tation of deuils and the hold of all soule spirits, and a cage of en-
ry vncleane and hatefull kinde.

3 For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of
her fornication, and the kings of the earth haue committed forni-
cation with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich
of the abundance of her pleasures.

4 And I heard another voice from heauen say, Go out of her,
my people. that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye re-
ceiue not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, and God hath re-
membred her iniquities.

6 Reward her, euen as shee hath rewarded you, and giue her
double according to her workes: and in the cup that she hath fil-
led to you, fill her the double.

7 In as much as she glorified her selfe. and lined in pleasure so
much giue ye to her torment & sorrow: for shee hath in her heart, I
fit being a Queene, and am no widow, and shall see no mourning.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come at one day, death, and so-
row, and famine, and she shall be burnt with fire: for that God
which

CHAP. XVIII.

which condemneth her. is a strong Lord.

9 And the Kings of the earth shall bewaile her, and lament for her, which haue committed fornication, and liued in pleasure with her, when they shall see that smoke of that her burning,

10 And shall stand afarre off for feare of the torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mightie citie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and waile ouer her, for no man buyeth their ware any more.

12 And the ware of gold and siluer, and of precious stone, and of pearles, and of fine linnen, and of purple, and of silke, and of skarlet, and of all manner of Thine wood, and of vessels of yuory, and of all vessels of most precious wood, and of brasle, and of yron, and of marble,

13 And of Synamon and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, & fine flowre, and wheate, and beasts, and sheepe, and horses, and charets, and seruants, and soules of men.

14 (And the apples that thy soule lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were fatte and excellent, are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more)

15 The merchants of these things which were waxed rich, shall stand afarre off from her, for feare of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linnen and purple, and skarlet, and girded with golde and precious stone, and pearles.

17 For in one houre so great riches are come to desolation. And euery shipmaster, and all the people that occupie ships and shippment: and whosoever trafficke on the sea, shall stand afarre off,

18 And cry, when they see the smoke of that her burning, saying, What citie was like vnto this great citie?

19 And they shall cast dust on their heads and cry, weeping, and wailing and saying, Alas alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships on the sea by her costlines: for in one houre she is made desolate.

20 O heaue enioyce of her, & ye holy Apostles and Prophets: for God hath punished her to be reuenged on her for your sakes.

21 Then a mightie Angel tooke vp a stone like a great millstone, & cast it into the sea, saying, With such violence shall that great citie Babylon be cast, and shall be found no more.

22 And the voice of harpers and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpetters shall be heard no more in thee, and no craftsman, of what-

R E V E L A T I O N.

whatsoever craft be *be*, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more in thee: and the voice of the bridegrome and of the Bride shall be heard no more in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth, and with thine enchantments were deceived all nations.

24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophets, and of the Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

C H A P. XIX.

1 The heavenly company praise God, for *awmpping* the blood of his seruants, on the whore. 9 They are written blessed, that are called to the Lambes supper. 10 The Angell will not be worshipped. 11 That mightie King of Kings appeareth from heauen. 19 The battell, 20 wherein the beast is taken, 21 and cast into the burning lake.

ANd after these things I heard a great voice of a great multitude in heauen, saying, Hallelu-iah, saluation, and glory, and honour, and power be to the Lord our God.

2 For true and righteous are his iudgements: for hee hath condemned that great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants shed by her hand.

3 And againe they said, Hallelu-iah: and that her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the foure and twentie Elders, and the foure beastes fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Hallelu-iah.

5 Then a voice came out of the throne, saying Praise our God all ye his seruants, and ye that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard like a voice of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters and as the voice of strong thundings, saying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lord that God that Almightye one hath reigned.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glory to him: for the marriage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe ready.

8 And to her was granted, that shee should be arrayed with pure fine linnen and shining, for the fine linnen is the righteousnesse of Saints.

Mat 22.2 9 Then he said vnto me, Write, * Blessed are they which are called vnto the Lambes supper. And he said vnto me, These words of God are true,

10 And

C H A P. XIX.

10 And I fell before his feete, *to worship him: but he said vnto me. See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow seruant, & one of thy brethren, which haue the testimonie of Iesus, Worship God: for the testimonie of Iesus, is the Spirit of Prophecie.

Chap. 12. 8

11 And I sawe heauen open, and behold a white horse, and hee that sat vpon him, was called Faithfull and true, and hee iudgeth and fighteth righteously.

12 And his eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes: and hee had a name written, that no man knewe but himselfe.

13 And he was cloathed with a garment dipt in blood, and his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.

14 And the hostes which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horses, clothed with fine linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went a sharpe sword, that with it he should smite the heathen: for he * shall rule them with a rodde of yron: for he it is that treadeth the winepresse of the fiercenesse and wrath of Almighty God.

Psal. 2. 9.

16 And hee hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name written, * THE KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Chap. 17.

24. 1. 1111.

6. 15.

17 And I sawe an Angel stand in the sunne, who cryed with a loude voice, saying to all the soules that did flye by the mids of heauen, Come, and gather your selues together vnto the supper of the great God,

18 That yee may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of high Captaines, and the flesh of mightie men and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men and bondmen, and of small and great.

19 And I sawe the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their hostes gathered together to make battell against him, that sat on the horse, and against his armie.

20 But the beast was taken, and with him that false prophet that wrought miracles before him, whereby he deceived them that receiued the beasts marke. and them that worshipped his image. These both were aliuie cast into a lake of fire, burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sworde of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which cometh out of his mouth, and all the soules were filled full with their flesh.

C H A P. XX.

1 The Angel 2 bindeth Satan for a thousand yeeres: 3 bring-
loosen,

REVELATION.

2 ofed, he stirreth up Gog and Magog, that is, pride and open enemies against the Saints, 11 but the vengeance of the Lord cutteth off their insolencie. 12 The bookes are opened, by which the dead are iudged.

AND I saw an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he tooke the dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and he bound him a thousand yeeres :

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and hee shut him vp, and sealed the doore vpon him, that he should deceiue the people no more, till the thousand yeeres were fulfilled : for after that hee must be loosed for a litle season.

4 And I saw seates; and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them, and I saw the soules of them that were be-headed for the witnesse of Iesus. & for the word of God, and which did not worship the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their hands: and they liued, and reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe, vntill the thousand yeeres be finished : this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first resurrection: for on such the second death hath no power: but they shall be the Priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeere.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shall bee loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the people, which are in the foure quarters of the earth, *Gog and Magog*, to gather them together to battell, whose number is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, & they compassed the tents of the Saints about, & the beloued citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was cast into the Lake of fire and brimstone where that beast and that false prophet are, and shall be tormented euery day and night for euermore.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and one that sate on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And I saw the dead both great and small stand before God: and the bookes were opened, and another booke was opened, which is the booke of life, & the dead were iudged of these things, which were written in the bookes, according to their workes.

Chap. 5
and 21
John 43

C H A P. XXI.

13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death and hell deliuered vp the dead, which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their workes.

14 And death, and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoener is not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

C H A P. XXI.

1 He describeth new Hierusalem descending from heauen, 9 the bride the Lambes wife, 12 and the glorious building of the citie, 19 garnished with precious stones: 22 whose temple the Lambes is.

AND I saw * a new heauen and a new earth: for the * first heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea.

*7/a. 65. 17
and 66 22*

2 And I Iohn saw the holy citie new Hierusalem come down from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trimmed for her husband.

*2. Pet. 3.
13*

3 And I heard a great voice out of heauen, saying, Beholde, the tabernacle of God - with men, and he will dwell with them: and they shall be his people, and God himselfe shall be their God with them.

4 * And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither for we, neither crying, neither shall there be any more paine, for the first things are passed.

*Chap. 7. 7.
7/a. 23. 8.*

5 And he that sat vpon the throne, sayd, * Behold, I make all things new: and he sayd vnto me, Write, for these wordes are faithfull and true.

*7/a. 43. 19.
2. cor. 5. 17*

6 And he said vnto me, * It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ende. I will giue to him that is athirst, of the well of the water of life freely.

*Chap. 1. 8.
and 22. 13*

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my ionne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleewing, and the abominable and murderers, and whoremongers, and forcerers, and idoliters, and all liars shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seven Angels which had the seuen vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come: I will shew thee the bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he caried me away in the spirit to a great and an hie mountaine, and hee shewed mee that great citie, that holy Hierusalem,

falem,

REVELATION.

Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her shining was like unto a stone most precious, as a Jasper stone cleare as crytall.

12 And had a great wall and hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East part ~~there were~~ three gates, and on the North side three gates, on the South side three gates, and on the West side three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the Names of the Lambes twelue Apostles.

15 And he that talked with mee, had a golden reede, to measure the citie withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lay foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth of it, and he measured the citie with the reede, twelue thousand furlongs: and the length and the breadth, and the height o: it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and foure cubits, by the measure of man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper, and the citie was pure gold, like unto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all manner of precious stones: the first foundation was Iasper: the second of Saphir: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emerauld:

20 The fifth of a Sardonix: the sixth of a Sardius: the seventh of a Chrysolites: the eighth of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topaze: the tenth of a Chrysoprasus: the eleuenth of a Iacynth: the twelfth an Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, and euery gate was of one pearle, and the streete of the citie is pure gold, as shining glasse.

22 And I saw no Temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lambe are the Temple of it.

Isa. 60. 19. 23 * And this citie hath no neede of the Sunne, neither of the Moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did light it: and the Lambe is the light of it.

Isa. 60. 3. 24 * And the people which are saved, shall walke in the light of it: and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory and honour vnto it.

Isa. 60. 11. 25 * And the gates of it shall not bee shut by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And

C H A P. XXII.

26 And the glorie, and honour of the Gentiles shalbe brought vnto it.

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in the * Lambes booke of life.

Chap. 3. 5.
md. 20. 13.
phil 4. 3.

C H A P. XXII.

1 The river of water of life is shewed, 2 and the tree of life: 3. 7 Then followeth the conclusion of this prophecie, 8 where Iohn doth leaue, that the things herein contained are most true: 13 And now the third time repeateth these words, All things come from him who is the beginning and the end.

ANd he shewed me a pure river of water of life, cleare as cry- stall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe,

2 In the middes of the streete of it, and of either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bare twelue maner of fruites and gaue fruit every moneth: and the leaues of the tree serued to heale the nations with.

3 And there shalbe no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe shall be in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name shall bee in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euermore.

7/2. No. 13

6 And he said vnto me, These words are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angel to shewe vnto his seruants the things, which must shortly be fulfilled.

7 Behold, I come shortly, Blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophecie of this booke.

8 And I am Iohn, which sawe and heard these things: and when I had heard and seene, * I fell downe to worship before the secte of the Angel, which shewed me these things.

Chap. 19.
10.

9 But he said vnto me, See thou doe it not: for I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the words of this Booke: worship God.

10 And he said vnto me, Seale not the words of the prophecie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vnjust, let him be vnjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come shortly, and my reward is with me, * to giue euery man according as his worke shall be.

Rom. 2. 6

REVELATION.

Chap. 1. 8.
and 21. 6.
Ist. 41. 2.
and 44. 6.

13 I am * Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ende, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that doe his commandements: that their right might bee in the tree of life, and may enter in thorow the gates into the citie.

15 For without *shalbe* dogges, and enchanter, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whoſoever loueth or maketh lies,

16 I Ieſus haue ſent mine Angel, to teſtifie vnto you theſe things in the Churches: I am the roote and the generation of Dauid, and the bright morning ſtarre.

17 And the Spirit & the bride ſay. Come. And let him that heareth, ſay, Come: and let him that is athirſt, come: and * let whoſoever will take of the water of life freely.

18 For I proteſt vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of the prophesie of this booke, If any man ſhall adde vnto theſe things, God ſhall adde vnto him the plagues that are written in this booke:

19 And if any man ſhall diminiſh of the wordes of the booke of this prophesie, God ſhall take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy citie, and from thoſe things which are written in this booke.

20 He which teſtifieth theſe things, ſayth ſurely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen ſo, come Lord Ieſus.

22 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt be with yon all. Amen.

T H E E N D .

